SQVARE-CAPS

TURNED INTO

ROVND-HEADS

OR THE

BISHOPS VINDICATION,

AND THE

BROWNISTS CONVICTION.

MVSEVM
ARDIS
NICVM

Being a Dialogue between *Time*, and *Opinion*: Shewing the folly of the one, and the worthinesse of the other.

By H. P.

Time. *Opinion.*



Time doth Opinion dull unto mockage,
who weares the Bishops devine and Round-Heads mooue;
Vpon Her lofty wheele their Noddels are;
But Her Cauelian foreheth on His eare.

LONDON, Printed for *I. Eglet*, and *G. Lindsey*, 1642.

MVTANT QVADRATA ROTVNDIS.
Square Caps *are turned into* Round Heads

Time.

NOw tell me *Opinion*, how long is it ſince you were at *Amſterdam*, and how long have you beene in *England*?

Opinion. Ick hebbe niet tot Amſterdam ghew weſen three yaren.

Time. But you can ſpeak *Engliſh* if you liſt.,

Op. Ya yader ick habbeghewont int huys van een Engliſh predikant een yhet ſpetter But-ruſh.

Ti. Come leave your *Dutch* and ſpeak plain *Egnzliſh*, that *Time* may well underſtand you, you were borne at *Amſterdam* were you not?

Op. No verily and indeed I was born at *Swine drecht* a *Dorpa* neere to *Dordrecht* in *Holland* bordering upon *Zealand*, but my Father was an *Engliſhman* borne in *London*, about Gateten-ſtreete, but my Mother was a *Dutchwoman*, borne in *Amſterdam:* of the family of the Fukers.

Ti. But what occaſion had you to come over into *England*, and what imployment have you had ſince your coming?

Op. I came (to tell you true) to ſee what entertainment I could finde among my friends, when walking up and down I was taken for a Vagrant and clap't into Brid-well; for ſome outlandiſh Doctrine I taught and maintained.

Ti. There I beleive you firſt learned to turn the *Wheele*.

Op. I did indeed, for among other worke I was forced to ſpin Pack-thred.

Ti. I heard as much, for that reaſon (it may be) you are content to follow Your old imployment, by turning about this *Wheele*, an *Emblem* of the Revolution and Change of theſe Preſent times to ſee, if they may be brought to a better paſſe

And

and State then they are: I am He, who is every where complaind off, as if it were long of me, they are in so bad a case as they are: Alas! I am old, and bending with the world, and desire no *Innovation* either in *Church* or *Common-wealth*.

Op. It may be (Father) one of your years may dote, you may want your sight to see how the world goes round, I am sure you are either blind or willingly winke at a number of abuses.

Ti. I want my sight to see how the world goes? had not I my being with the first *Mover*? am not I *Primi Mobilis per successionem numerus*. Neither do I winke at any thing, for I would amend all were it in my power.

Op. Truly Father it is generally imagined, that it is long of you, that the world is at this stay as it is at, but if it please you to be ruled by me, all abuses shall be reformd and amended.

Ti. Opinion, I am compelled so to do against my will, since *all the world is led and rul'd by Opinion*.

Op. Indeed since my coming over from beyond the Seas into *England*, I have goten so strong a *Partie* on my side, that I shall not nay I will not be crushed or kept downe by the *contrarie Partie*.

Ti. So it seems: because you uphold your *Round-Heads*, and keepe them aloft: but the *Square Caps* of the Reverend *Bishops* You cast under to the bottome.

Op. Reverend Bishops? marry come up, *Bishops Sir Reverence*; you should say.

Ti. Fie *Opinion* now you speak like your self, distractedly and out of an ignorant malice, as the rest of your Faction do: who knowing themselves guilty of neither wit or learning, fieing so High and Sacred a Calling, Barke at them as Dogs doe at the Moon, who envie her luster and because she being so far above them they cannot come at her.

Op. I have heard that every five hundred years, there is a manifest change and alteration as well in Church, as Common-wealth: so that this change of these present Times is not long

of

of me, but foreseene and determined by the *Divine Providence.*

Opinion you are (as you were ever) out of the way and beside your Byas, because *God* hath foreseen the wickednes and Factions of these Times, hath he therfore determined them, is this your *Amsterdam* Teaching?

Op. Yes indeed is it, and true Doctrine.

Ti. God foresees the most horrible Sins that are or shall be committed to the end of the world, does *He* therefore determine and make *Himselfe* the Authour of them.

Op Why not?

T. Come about with your *Wheel* cast your Round-heads below, and give the square-caps leave to take place aloft your Wheele; else as sure as my name is *Time*, I will shortly have them above do what *Opinion* and her partners can.

Op. Yes when I am weary of my task you may and I beleeve you will in the meane while I must say, as *K. James* wrote upon his sumpture Clothes comming after he was proclaimed King out of Scotland into England *Je a pris mon temps* I have taken my Time; I was not thought on but despis'd both in Citie and Countrie till of late, now who but I both in the Citie and Countrie, there is hardly a shop in the Citie but I can there take upon trust, whatsoever I or my freinds want and they take upon trust, whatsoever they are taught by us in the Pulpit be it true or false.

Ti Why *Opinion* do you make no conscience amongst you of what you teach (as you call it?)

Op. Yes, as much as they do in the sale of their commodities to the unfaithfull. So I beleeve, hence it is that so many the better to cullour or cover their cheating, follow you to your Coventickles, to woods, Barns, Moore-feild allies and the like places, and having once gott on the name of Separatists they can command beleife, Reverence, Money, Meate Drinke, new suits of apparell, the solace of a Sister and what

Come

Come I pray you leave this vaine and Idle diſcourſe which is ordinarily laid to our charge among the prophane ſorte your followers (I meane) whome the world calls *Time-ſervers*, Windmilles and weather-cocks who with everie puffe of a great mans Breath, or finger of alteration, will incline themſelves to what quarter you will; but I pray you Father Time why are Roundheads become more odious now in the world then Square caps, all heads are round by nature, Square Caps with their Cockſcombes on the top, came from Beaſtly Baſe and Roguiſh Rome; and become the head as well as Hornes doe ſome of my followers: I was once taught theſe verſes, when I lived with a Zealous Teacher.

Cur Caput humanum fecit natura rotundum
Cur quadrata iuben: pilea pontifices.

Since Nature hath made mans head round to ſtand,
Why then do Biſhops theſe ſquare caps command?

Ti. Square caps upon my knowledge were long before Opinion was borne, and tell your round-headed ſectaries their corners are an Emleme of the foure parts or quarters of the world, into which Chriſtian Biſhops and miniſters are commanded to breach the Goſpell, *Ite prædicate ad omnes gentes &c.* you know who ſaid, then good Opinion, have a good Opinion of ſquare Caps; I beleeve they never did you hurt except in the high Commiſſion, or in the ſpirituall Court, you know about what.

Op. I am not ſo much offended with the Caps as with them that weare them, your Lordly Biſhops who never did good in Church or common-wealth.

Ti. Never did good, Opinion? it is trve if you meane ſome of your own Clergie, who have caſt of their leather doublets and aprons and put themſelves into long Caſſocks with grave Silke girdles hanging to the knees. Opinion you are but a novice, and are new come from your ſliding upon the Ice among

Martinets

Marriners boyes, and upon Soldiers your frozen Crafts, and Rivers about *Amsterdam* and *Harlem*, but since the Parliament began: but let that passe, our Bishops have done more good then you, and your abettors will ever do so long as the world standeth.

Op. It may be some of them long ago have been good and done good but very few in England.

Ti. No? Who have built more Colledges in our Famous *Vniversities* more Churches, Hospitalls &c. in any part of Europe, then our *Bishops* have done in England?

Op. I have heard some of your *Bishops* have pulled down Colledges, and Religious Houses, as you call them: but I never heard of any that built them.

Ti. I pray you what *Bishop* pulled down any? yet I think I know more *Opinion* then you doe, neither is *Time* ignorant of any thing that hath bine done, I doe but only try you to see what you can say.

O. Did not your great *Gor-bellied Cardinall Wolsey* pull down forty houses of Religion, to found His Colledge in Oxford? which He left unfinished.

Ti. He had finished it, if he had liv'd, and made it one of the faireſt Colledges of the world.

But since you speak of Oxford and him, let me tell you what *Bishops* have done in *Oxford* and *Cambridge*.

William Durham was a *Bish p* who endowed Vniversitie Colledge with large Possessions, having none before. Anno. *Dom.* 1217:

Walter de *Merton* was *B.* of Rochester, Lord Chancelour of England, and Counseller to *K. Hen.* 3. and *Ed.* 1. when He founded *Merton* Colledge.

Exeter Coll. was founded by 2 succeeding *B.* of the same See (*viz*) *Walter Stapleton*, and *Edmond Stafford*, brother to *Ralph* Earle *Stafford* in the yeare 1035.

W. Wikham B. of Winchester, Principall Secretary to *Ed.* 3. Lord

L. high Treasurer and Chancellour of England, builded that compleat House *New Coll.*

Rich. Fleming, who died *B.* of *Lincolne*, also founded Lincolne Coll. in Oxford.

Henry Chichley B. of Cant. and Cardinall of St. *Eusebius* fonuded *All-Soles* Coll. *Anno* Heny *6.* 15.

And it is worthy to be noted how this *Henry Chichleys* Father being a very poore man dwelling at *Higham Ferrers* in NORTHAMTON Shire (where this *Chichley* was borne) had two sonnes whome being not able to keep at home, sent them into the wide world to seek their fortune; one of which proved *Arch-Bishop* of Canterburie, and the other Lord *Maior* of London both at one time. *William Patten, alias de Wainflet in Lincolnshire*, B. of *Winchester* and *Lord Chancelour*, and England, founded that absolute *Coll:* dedicated to Saint *Marie Magdalen* which like *Euxine Sea* never ebbes nor flows with more fellows or Schollers then the founder gave and left at the first.

Brasen-Nose Col. was also founded by a *Bishop* one *W. Smith* B: *of Ely.*

Corpus Christi by *R: Foxe* B: of *Exeter Bath, and Wells, Durham*, and *Winchester* (who was Godfather to King *Henrie* the eight Anno 1516.

And *Cardinall Wolsey*, whom you so vilifie and disdaine, had he liv'd, he had perfected one of the most magnificent Colleges in the World, which he called Cardinalles College but *King Henrie* taking the foundation upon himselfe, called it *Christs Church.*

Princes I must confesse had a greater hand in the foundation of Colledges in *Cambridge*, then Bishops yet these were not wanting there.

Peter House was Grounded by *Hugh Balsham* Bishop of *Elie* *Trinity-Hall* by *William Bateman* Bishop of Norwich.

Iesus Colledge by *Alcock* B: of Elie, and all these, Opinion wore square Caps, what say you have they beene so bad members

bers of the common wealth as you and your fellowes would make them?

Nay I can nor must not smother in silence many pious and charitable acts of Bishops of ourowne times; did not that good B. [illegible] B. of *Canturburie* found a famous School and hospitall in Croydon

Did not B. Abbot the like at Gilford in Surrey, where he was born, and was not Saint Iohns in *Oxford* so repaired and beautified by this now Lord Bishop of Canturburie, that it seemeth to have beene new built by him, and beyond all the rest what magnificent things hath the now Archbishop of *York* done late Bishop of Lincolne.

Op. I never heard of any thing he did.

Ti. No you were beyond Sea, or Opinion unborn, if you have not heard what a bountifull benefactor he hath beene to the Church. Let me tell you he much repaired and beautified the Church of *Westminster* where he is Deane, he repaired with a great charge the Bishop, Pallace of Lincolns where he intended a goodly Library, haveing laid out a great summe of money to buy books, besides provided timber, which but for his troubles hee had finished, as also a school and hospital in Wales where he was borne he builded and gave a goodly librarie to Saint Iohns in *Cambridge*, and another in VVestminster; he beautified Lincolne Coll. Chappell in *Oxford*, paveing it with Marble, making the Deskes and Seates of Cedar wheresoever he was Parson in the Countrie, hee gave annuities to the poore, he gave Schollerships to *Westminster*, and I beleeve Schollerships and Fellowships to Saint Iohns in Cambridge, but the Master-peece of his bountie I must conceale, let it suffize that you are utterly deceived in the name of a Bishop, and Ignorant of the good deedes they have done.

Opin. If it be as you say, I shall have a better conceit of them then I had, but in the mean time I am carried, with violence in the throng I can doe no other then I doe.

Time. Well *Opinion*, *Omnia tempus habent*, and my comfort is this, *Nullum violentum diuturnum*: Nothing violent lasts long. So fare you well, but be sure to keep a good tongue in your head.

Op. I warrant you Father.

FINIS



IRELANDS ADVOCATE:

OR,

A SERMON PREACHED VPON *Novem.* 14, 1641. to promote the contributions by way of lending, for the present reliefe of the PROTESTANTS party in IRELAND.

In the Parish CHURCH of St. STEPHENS *Coleman ſtreet* LONDON, by the PASTOR there.

JUDGES 5. 23.

Curſe yee Meroz (ſaid the Angell of the LORD) *curſe yee bitterly the Inhabitants thereof; becauſe they came not out to the helpe of the LORD, to the helpe of the LORD againſt the mighty.*

But who ſo hath this worlds goods and ſeeth his Brother hath need, and ſhutteth up his bowells of compaſſion from him, how dwelleth the love of GOD in him?

LONDON,
Printed for WILLIAM LARNAR, and are to be ſold at his Shop, at the ſigne of the *Golden Anchor*, neere *Paules-Chaine.* 1641.

IRELANDS ADVOCATE:

OR,

A SERMON preached upon *Novem.* 14. 1641. to promote the contributions by way of lending, for the present reliefe of the *Protestant* party in IRELAND.

1 JOHN 3.16.

Therefore we ought to lay downe our lives for the Brethren.

THE sad and most deplorable condition of our Brethren, professors of the same *Faith* and *Religion* with us, in the Kingdome of *Ireland*, as it hath very lately bin represented by Letters from thence unto us, is the occasion of turning me aside (for the present) from that Scripture that I had intended to have proceeded with

with, and of calling me upon this; that ſo, as wee have a great opportunity from Hel, we may have another from Heaven alſo, to excite and ſtirre you up, to quit your ſelves like the Children of GOD, and the redeemed of JESUS CHRIST, by drawing out the bowels of your compaſſions readily and freely unto thoſe, that are, or ought to be as deare to you, as your ſelves, and your owne Soules. The Author of this *Epiſtle*, was that Diſciple and Apoſtle whom *Chriſt* loved, that is, loved in ſpeciall manner above his fellowes: who (it ſeemes) as he received abundantly of the ſweet fruites and expreſſions of this affection in GOD, and in his Lord and Maſter JESUS CHRIST towards him, ſo did he abound proportionably in his reciprocall affection towards GOD and JESUS CHRIST againe: the fire burned in vehemencie and ſtrength of heate according to the pile of wood that was layd upon it. And thus knowing by a double experience, the infinite ſweetneſſe and preciouſneſſe of this affection: he labours more then all the reſt of the Apoſtles, to propagate and multiplie it in the hearts of the Children of GOD, both towards GOD, and towards one another. To paſſe by all other paſſages in his writings, wherein hee labours to promote the cauſe and Kingdome of this heavenly affection, in and neere about the Scripture read unto you, hee makes out with a high hand, and with many important arguments, to kindle this fire in the hearts of men, yea and to make it burne out into a vehement flame. *Greater love hath no man* (ſaith our Saviour John 15. 13.) *then this, that a man ſhould lay down his life for his friend: and leſſer love then this ought no man to have* (ſaith *John* in effect in this place:) Therefore we ought alſo to lay down our lives for the *Brethren*. Not

ſo

ſo much as to mention any other of his arguments, adjoyning neere unto the text both before and after it, whereby hee pleades like an Angell of GOD, for ſinceritie and truth and ſoundneſſe of this affection we ſpeake of; in this 16 verſe, being come to an argument or ground that hee ſaw could beare it, he raiſeth his demands in this kinde very high; and tells them (in effect) not onely that it ſtands them in hand, or that it is their duty ſimply to love one another, no nor yet to love one another in deed and in truth; but to love one another to the height, or to the higheſt pitch and ſtreyne of this affection: *we ought alſo to lay downe our lives for the Brethren*; which is nothing elſe (being interpreted,) but (as was ſayd) to love one another with the ferventeſt, and largeſt, and deepeſt affections that our hearts will hold. True it is, ſuch a demand as this, *to lay down our lives for the Brethren* riſeth very high (as was ſayd) but behold an argument at hand, that will juſtify it, and reduce it to a point of the greateſt reaſon, equitie and faireneſſe that can be. *Herein* (ſaith hee in the former part of the verſe) *have we perceived or knowne love, that hee*, that is, JESUS CHRIST *layd down his life for us*: as if he ſhould ſay: this was love indeed, this was love in the glory and exaltation of it, that our Saviour CHRIST ſo holy a perſon, ſo wonderfull in Glory and all manner of excellencie as he was, who had no bond or ingagement either of duty or example upon him, ſhould freely and willingly part with his life for our ſakes, to accommodate and pleaſure us withall who were his enemies: but now for us, having ſuch a patterne and example before us to conceive by, and ſuch an infinite ingagement

gagement upon us, as that love of CHRIST, is, and such an advantage likewise as the benefit redounding to us by that love of CHRIST is to facilitate and make easy any expression of love whatsoever towards those on whose behalfe *Christ* shall require it: it is no great matter in us, it is but matter of equitie and duty in us, to be so farre raised and carried out in our affections of love towards those that are our Brethren in *Christ*, and partakers of like precious Faith with us, as to lay down, and part with our lives for them. We shall adde no more either for the dependance or meaning of the words.

Doct. We shall from the passage recommend onely this one generall point of Doctrine unto you: *That the highest and deepest expressions of love to those that are Christs, are but matter of duty from Christians when they stand in need of them.* For we are to take the Apostles expression or inference here, with such a limitation as this: *therefore we ought to lay down our lives for the Brethren, viz.* if they stand in need of them, or if we may accomodate and pleasure them in any proportion or considerable good or benefit thereby, not that we ought actually so do it at all times (for then we shall be all bound to die immediatly) nor yet that we ought to doe it, when we may accommodate them in their necessities otherwise, no nor yet to accommodate them in matters of lighter consequence, though (haply) they cannot otherwise be gratified or provided for, however I conceive this to be a case rarely incident, if incident at all, I meane that the common and ordinary affaires or necessities of Christians should not possibly be provided for, but by the lives of other of their *Brethren* for them, but in this sense and upon these termes, we

we are all bound to lay down even our lives themſelves for the *Brethren* in the Faith, when their neceſſities are great and ſore upon them, and the laying downe of our lives may in likelyhood relieve them, or ſtand them in ſome ſpeciall ſervice, and there is no other meães in appearance likely to do it. Therſore I includę al theſe proviſo's and caſes of exception, in that clauſe in the Doctrine, *when they ſtand in need of them*, laying it down thus, the higheſt and deepeſt expreſſions of love to thoſe that are *Chriſts*, are but matter of duty from their fellow Chriſtians, *when they ſtand in need of them.* The point lies large and full in the Scripture read unto you: ſo that we ſhall not need to adde much for the further proofe of it. Take we only a Scripture or two. *So then being affectionately deſirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the Goſpell of God only, but alſo our own ſoules* (i. our lives) *becauſe you were deare unto us.* 1 *Theſ.* 2.8. We ſee the Apoſtle here very glorious and high in expreſſing the tenor of his affection towards this people: *he was willing to have imparted even his own ſoule unto them, viz.* if their condition had required it, if he had conceived that hee might have inriched them with peace or comfort by it. Whatſoever the intenſneſſe or pitch of his affection towards them was, he could not aſcend higher then this, in a way of expreſſion to them. *Greater love then this*, i. a greater expreſſion or teſtimony of love then this, *hath no man* (ſaith our Saviour, as we heard) *that a man lay down his life for his friend.* Now then I demand, whether in caſe *Paul* had actually performed, on their behalfe, what hee here profeſſeth himſelfe willing and ready to doe, that is, had indeed imparted his owne ſoule unto them, whether (I ſay) he had ſupererogated or no, or gone beyond the line of that which was his duty

to doe? Doubtleſſe that commandement Luk. 10. 27. *Thou ſhalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy Soule, and with all thy ſtrength, and with all thy mind*, reacheth the utmoſt extent and point of the utmoſt abilitie that is in man: neither is it poſſible for any man to riſe in any expreſſion whatſoever of love either to *God* or man, above it. So then, if *Paul* in laying down his life for the *Theſſalonians*, ſhould have done no more then what *God* required of him, in caſe their condition had required it, certainly he requires no leſſe of any man, when the neceſſitie of his Saints doe require it. Take another Scripture from the ſame pen of ſomewhat alike importance. *Who now rejoyce in my ſufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Chriſt in my fleſh, for his bodies ſake, which is the Church*, Col. 1. 24. Theſe *ſufferings* of the Apoſtle for theſe *Coloſſians*, that is, to accommodate them in the miniſtery of the *Goſpell*, though (as he ſaith) *he rejoyced in them*, yet (doubtleſſe) they tooke deepe of his outward man, and were grievous to the fleſh, and conſequently were great and weighty expreſſions of his love to them: and yet upon the ground lately mention'd, they were no more, then the demand of a good conſcience of him. Now *Paul* (and ſo any other faithfull miniſter of the *Goſpel*) may be ſaid *to fulfill*, or fill up, τὰ ὑστερήματα τῶν θλίψεων τοῦ χριστοῦ, *the remainders or wantings, or afterlings* (as it were) *of the ſufferings of Chriſt* (to open this by the way) *for the Churches ſake*, when he deſiſted not from his worke and imployment of preaching the Goſpell for any perſecution, or outward loſſe or trouble he ſuſteyned thereby. There are two things (amongſt many others) of abſolute neceſſity (according to the counſaile and courſe of *Gods* ordinary diſpenſation) to accompliſh the ſal-

vation

vation of his elect, of whom his body, that is, his Church consists. First, the making of a Gospell. Secondly, the preaching or making knowne of this Gospell. The Gospell is no meanes of salvation unto any man, except it be revealed and made known unto him. Now *the Sufferings of Christ*, were of absolute necessitie to constitute and make the Gospell, and they are also of absolute and intire sufficiencie this way: *Christ* wants no sufferings to be added to his, or to come up in the reere to second his, for any such purpose as this, to perfect the Gospell intrinsecally in any kinde. But because the making of a Gospell, though never so complcate, rich, and absolute, was not enough to effect and actuate the salvation of his Church, but the publishing and preaching of this Gospell up and down the world, was further necessarie: hence it cometh to passe, that the afflictions and sufferings of *Paul* (and so of other Ministers of the Gospell) are necessarie too, over and above the sufferings of *Christ*, to bring the Church into an actuall possession of her glorie. For Satan, the *God* of this world, will be sure to take a course where he hath to doe, and as farre as the length of his arme will extend, that the Gospell of *Iesus Christ* shall not be effectually, and with power preached in the world without the trouble, and persecution and sufferings of those, that shall put forth their hand to that Plough, and breake up the fallow ground of the world with it. So that except *Iesus Christ* should make the Ministers of the *Gospell* willing to *suffer* from the hands of the world, as well as himselfe did, his sufferings, according to the platforme of the counsell of *God* touching the meanes of the *Churches* salvation, would not accomplish it. This interpretation might be further argued, and strengthened, from that word in the originall, ἀνταναπληρῶ,

which our translation renders, I fulfill, or fill up: but this English doth not fil up the Greeke, the word hath a more emphaticall signification then so. The word properly signifieth, *ex adversa*, or *ex opposito adimplere*, that is, to fill upon the one side, as it were over & against another, who likewise filleth up on the other side, or in another way. This force or importance of the preposition ἀντὶ is cleerely seene, in that expression or phrase of speech used by our Saviour himselfe *Luk* 14. 17. where λόγους ἀντιβάλλειν signifieth to conferre together, or to speake by way of answere or opposition one to another. So that the Apostles meaning in this place seemes to be this: that as CHRIST tooke up the one end, the fore-end (as it were) of those sufferings whereby the *Church* was to be saved, and caried and bare that; so he help'd to take up the other end, the hinder end (as it were) of the same sufferings; this end being as necessary to be taken up and borne by the Ministers of the *Gospell*, as the other was by the Author of the *Gospel* himselfe, But this by the way. For further confirmation of the Doctrine, I only touch one Scripture more, 1. Pet. 4 8. *And above all things have fervent charitie* (or, love) *among your selves.* If it be the duty of Christians to *have fervent love among themselves*, doubtlesse it is their duty also to manifest this *love*, in the full proportion, and in all the dimensions of it, with expressions sutable to it, and every waie commensurable with it, when opportunity requireth. *A candle is not lighted to be put under a Bed or a Bushell* (as our Saviour speaketh) no more is an excellencie or fervencie of love injoyned the servants of *God*, to be dissembled, or to be kept prisoner in the hearts or soules of men, but chiefly for this end and purpose, that the heat, light and beauty of it, may be the comfort, riches, strength and glory of the whole

societie

ſociety or body. The Greeke word ἐκτενῶς, tranſlated *fervent*, properly ſignifieth, that which is extended, or ſtretched out at large, or at length: and doubtleſſe the ſpirit and ſoule (as it were) of this injunction or exhortation is, that there ought to be ſuch a love vigent in the hearts of all beleevers, that ſhould be able and ready upon all occaſions of their Brethrens neceſſities, to doe execution (if need be) a great way off, and to ſtretch out it ſelfe in the fruites and expreſſions thereof, beyond the line of the ordinary affections of men; as a fire that is very hot and hath much wood burning upon it, will warme men at a great diſtance from it. I forbeare the drawing together any more Scriptures, for this ſervice: the minde of them (I conceive) this way is better known unto us generally, then to require any anxious or long examination. Let us make forward to the grounds, and Reaſons of the point.

Firſt, we ought to riſe to the higheſt in our expreſſions of *love* to the Brethren in *Chriſt*, when their conditions doe require it, becauſe *God* requireth this at our hands (as ye have heard.) It is one of the impoſitions of heaven upon us. It is a tribute of *thankfulneſſe* which *God* hath laid upon the Great and rich commodity of *ſalvation* by *Jeſus Chriſt*, to be paid *toties quoties*, as oft as the neceſſities of our fellow-Beleevers call for it: *We ought* (ſaith the Holy-Ghoſt, in the words of the Text) *to lay down our lives for the Brethren.* Now the laying down of our *lives* (we know) is an expreſſion of *love* that goeth very farre, and reacheth very high. So then, if we acknowledge a lawfull Authority and Soveraignty of Heaven over us in other things, and all things meet and fit to be done; every thing to be juſt matter of *duty* that *God* requireth us: there is no withſtanding the truth of the Doctrine, which *Reaſon* 1.

requireth the deepeſt and weightieſt expreſſions of our *love* to our Brethren in *Chriſt*, when they ſtand in need of them.

Reaſ. 2. Secondly, Becauſe *God* doth not only require this at our hands, but he hath himſelfe begun unto us, in the higheſt and deepeſt expreſſions of his *love* unto us; he hath provoked and ingaged us hereunto, not ſo much by his own example, as by the choice of his Subject, upon whom he was pleaſed to exemplifie this exceeding *love* of his, in the higheſt demonſtrations of it, *viz.* our ſelves: *So God loved the world* (*i.* the inhabitants of the world, men) *that he gave his only begotten Sonne*, as *John* 3. 16. If *God* had ſhewed the ſame *love* unto the lapſed Angels, which he hath done unto Men; if he had lifted up the like *horne of ſalvation* for them, there had bin the like Example; but there had not bin the like engagement, or provocation unto us, to riſe to thoſe heights of ſhewing *love* likewiſe, where he ſhould appoint, as now there is: As the example of *love*, which he hath now ſhewn to men, is not any ſuch obligement upon the reprobate Angels, to ſhew *love* any where, as it would have bin, had themſelves bin the object of this *love* of his.

Reaſ. 3. Thirdly, Like Father, like Sonne, *Jeſus Chriſt* himſelfe hath walked in the *ſteps of his Fathers love*, and hath gone as high in the declaration and expreſſions of his *love*, as the Father hath done in his. He hath given himſelfe, and offered up himſelfe in *ſacrifice* upon the ſervice of the peace and happineſſe of a moſt miſerable, wofull, and ſinfull world. For we muſt not look upon the *death* and *ſufferings* of *Chriſt* ſimply as the ranſome and attonement of the world; nor as the *gift* of the Father only unto the world for the ranſome of it, for then we ſhall fall ſhort in our reckonings: but further, as the free and

and glorious teſtimony and pledge of the unſpeakable, and unconceivable *love* of *Chriſt* himſelfe unto the world. The Holy-Ghoſt is very carefull to vindicate the honour and glory of the *love* of *Ieſus Chriſt* himſelfe in his *death*, and ſo to recommend and ſet forth the *love* of *God* the Father, in giving his Sonne unto the world, that he may not drowne, or quench, or prejudice in the leaſt meaſure the glory of the *love* of *Chriſt* himſelfe herein. *Here in perceive we love,* (thoſe words of *God*, were not in the former tranſlation, neither are they found in the beſt Greek copies) *that he* i. e. *Chriſt hath layd down his life for us* (in the word immediately before the Text) beſides many like expreſſions, wherby it appeares, that the *death* and *ſufferings* of *Chriſt*, were not of *conſtraint* or *neceſſity*, as the typicall ſacrifices of Beaſts under the Law were, who had no inward principle to incline or make them willing to offer themſelves: they were faine to be drawn and dragged to the Altar by a ſtrong hand, and to be bound with cords to the horns thereof; otherwiſe there was no ſacrificatorie death to be had of them: but the *ſufferings* of *Chriſt* were abſolutely and intirely *free*, and conſequently *excellent* and high expreſſions of his *love* unto us. And the truth is, were the frame of our *hearts* eminently ſpirituall, and our apprehenſions truly Noble, and keene in touch and taſt of things of higheſt worth, and excellencie, the *death* of CHRIST would be more taking and tranſporting with us, in reſpect of the Parent that brought it forth, I meane his *love* to the World, then in reſpect of al the Children that are brought forth by it, I meane all the great benefits, and bleſſings, and priviledges, that are procured and purchaſed by it for the world. But generally, we are (even the beſt of us) no better then a generation of ſpirituall pot-

Joh. 6. 51. 10. 18,

hunters

hunters, all for the prey, but little or nothing for the game.

So then, this is another ground or reaſon of the Point: we are bound to rite high in the expreſſions of our *love*, when CHRIST ſhall require it, becauſe we have received like meaſure from his hand; and where much is given, much may very lawfully and equally be required.

Reaſo 4. Fourthly, by ſuch excellent expreſſions of your *love* to your *Brethren* in the Faith, as are required of you, you ſhall glorifie the Name of CHRIST on earth, and convince the judgements and Conſciences of ignorant and wicked men, that he is what he is, *viz.* the Sonne of *God*, and ſent into the world by him to be the Saviour thereof. Thus CHRIST prayes unto his Father for thoſe *that ſhall beleeve in him, that they may all be one, as the Father and he are one; ſo that they alſo may be one in them*, & that for this end, *that the world may beleeve that thou* (meaning *God* his Father) *haſt ſent me:* and ſomwhat more plainly (verſe the 23.) *I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfect in one, that the world may know* (*viz.* by this their perfection, or being made perfect in one) *that thou haſt ſent me, &c.* But what is there in this, in Beleevers being *made perfect in one?* (as our Saviours expreſſion is) that ſhould produce ſuch an effect in the world, as is here attributed to it, *viz.* the making them to know, or the giving of them to underſtand, that *God* hath ſent JESUS CHRIST into the world: what proportion is there, betweene ſuch an effect as this, and ſuch a cauſe as that? I muſt not ſtand to open my ſelfe at large in this; take a taſt of what I would ſay further in two words. By being *made perfect in one*, our Saviour (doubtleſſe) meaneth, that entireneſſe and deareneſſe of affection that ſhould be between them,

Ioh. 17. 20. 21, 23.

them, their being made all one heart (as it were) and one ſoule. *Love* (we uſe to ſay) is an affection of union: and when it is reciprocally and mutually fervent and ſtrong, and raiſ'd to an excellent degree, though amongſt never ſo many, it makes a ſtrong conſolidation of all into one, ſo that every one hath (in effect) the ſame ſtrength, and the ſame wiſdome, and ſo every other perfection, which any other hath, yea or which they all have amongſt them: In ſuch a caſe, one man ſo perfected in one with others, though never ſo many, hath as much of every thing that is deſirable or good, as they all have together. Now then when thoſe that beleeve in JESUS CHRIST, are thus *made perfect in one*, thus intimatly and mightily affecting one another, that entercourſe of Love, and thoſe glorious expreſſions of this affection, paſſing to, and fro, from time to time betweene them, cannot but be taken notice of by the world: and the interpretation of what they ſee and take notice of in this kinde, can lightly be no other (when their judgments and conſciences are but in any meaſure themſelves) then this, that that CHRIST, whoſe Diſciples and followers theſe men profeſſe themſelves to be, was (doubtleſſe) the Sonne of GOD, and hath appeared unto them, otherwiſe ſuch an excellent Spirit of *Love* which we ſee and behold, could not worke in them As *Nebuchadnezar* and his Nobles ſaw *a fourth* man in the Furnace, walking with thoſe three which he had caſt in, *whoſe appearance was like the Sonne of God:* So in thoſe flames of love wherein the Saints and ſervants of JESUS CHRIST live and walke together on Earth, there is a Spirituall viſage or appearance of one greater then they, even the appearance of their Great Lord and Maſter JESUS CHRIST himſelfe. Dan. 3. 25.

We ſhould anſwere that objection here (but that we have no time.) But are there not many other factions, or ſocieties of men in the world, that hold faſt together, & expreſſe themſelves many times with much affection and cordialneſſe one towards another? therfore how ſhould any expreſſion of Love whatſoever betweene thoſe that truly beleeve, be any argument or conviction unto men, that *Ieſus Chriſt* is he, that he is the Sonne of GOD, and ſent by him into the world? we muſt reſpite the full anſwere to this objection to ſome other time: Only you may pleaſe to take a taſt (in two words) of what would have bin farther enlarged upon this occaſion. It is true, there are many factions and parties and combinations of men in the world, that ſeeme very deere, and deeply ingaged amongſt themſelves, that are ready to ſtand up to plead the cauſe one of another (perhaps) even unto blood. But here is the difference betweene the affection of love, which ſeemes to rule in other Societies of men, and that which ruleth amongſt true beleevers, when they are perfected in one: the reaſon, ground, or roote of that affection or deereneſſe which reigneth amongſt Chriſtians, is not any thing viſible, any thing ſavoring of the fleſh, nor can their enemies, the men of the world, ſatisfie their judgements or conſciences in conceiving ſo of it (though many times they ſatisfie one another in ſo ſpeaking) whereas the band wherewith other ſocieties of men are chain'd and link'd together, is alwaies ſomewhat that is naturall, and which falls within the reach and comprehenſion of a naturall underſtanding. So that the greateſt affection that is found amongſt naturall men, leadeth the apprehenſion but to that naturall thing which is the ground and cauſe of it, and there it ſtayeth: but that affection which is, or ſhould be found amongſt Chriſtians, carrieth

carrieth the minde and thoughts of him that diligently inquireth into the originall and pedegree of it, unto a supernaturall principle, which can be no other but *Jesus Christ*, as might be shewed more particularly, but time hasteneth.

By such deepe and deere expressions of our *love* to the *Brethren*, we may be a meanes to open the eyes of the ignorant and blinde, and cause them to see and looke upon him, whom they have pierced with their sinnes hitherto, especially with the sinne of their unbeliefe. This reason runs pararell with the former, and depends (in part) upon it. Strange tongues (and so other miracles) are for a signe unto those that beleeve not (saith *Paul* 1 *Cor.* 14. 22.) *viz.* for the conviction of their unbeliefe, and (as it were) the opening of an effectuall dore unto them, to beleeve. Now such expressions of *Love* as we speake of betweene the Saints, are of the same kinde of importance and working, that tongues and miracles were. *By this* (saith *Christ* John 13, 35.) *shall all men know that yee are my Disciples* (that is, may know it hereby, that there is an aptnesse in it to convince them hereof) *if yee have love one to another.* Now that which is a meanes to discover and prove men to be the Disciples of *Jesus Christ*, is a meanes likewise of great efficiencie and power, to prevaile with men that are yet strangers and enemies to him, to become his Disciples also. For such a Master, were he known (and those that know his Disciples, cannot lightly be ignorant of him) would draw Disciples apace after him. *Reas.* 5.

The command lies with the same weight and charge upon others also in respect of us, and our necessities: Indeed if *Christ* had singled out us, out of *Reas.* 6.

all the world, or any other parcell of beleevers, and had impoſed that by way of duty, which the Text or Doctrine ſpeakes of, *to lay down our lives, or to riſe ſo high in our expreſſion of love unto the reſt of the Saints*, and had not layd the ſame charge and commandement indifferently upon them, in reſpect of us, and our neceſſities, the commandement might have ſeemed ſomewhat hard, and the practiſe of it might have bin ſtuck at; but now ſince he who hath ingaged us to ingage our ſelves ſo deeply in the behalfe of others, when they ſtand in need, hath ingaged them likewiſe to ingage themſelves proportionably for us, when we ſtand in need; obedience unto the commandement, cannot but ſeeme very equall and reaſonable, as well on our part in reſpect of others, as upon others in reſpect of us.

The Apoſtle taketh off the ſeeming hardneſſe or offenſiveneſſe of that demand which he made to the Church of *Corinth*, for ſomewhat a larger contribution then ordinary, the neceſſities of the Saints in other places requiring it for the preſent, by this very conſideration or reaſon. 2 *Cor* 8. 13. *For I meane not* (ſaith he) *that other men be eaſed, and you burdened: But by an equalitie: that now at this time your abundance may be a ſupply for their want, that their abundance alſo may be a ſupply for your want, that there may be equality.*

Reaſ. 7. GOD hath endued thoſe that are his with power from on high to doe it, he hath furniſhed them with a new principle, out of which, by a due and conſcionable improvement of it in themſelves, they are able to afford all that is required of them in this kinde. So that if any man or woman (I meane that is borne againe, and is a childe of GOD) ſhall finde their hearts low and baſe and unworthy in this kinde, below the line and

and levell of that duty now preſented unto you, it is becauſe they doe not effectually *ſtirre up the grace of God within them*, as the Apoſtle ſomewhere ſpeakes, they bow downe their backs to the ſuggeſtions of the fleſh, whereas their ſtrength were it put forth accordingly, would ſerve them to goe upright. Conſider that one Scripture to this purpoſe. 1 Pet. 1. 22. *Seeing you have purified your Soules in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the Brethren; ſee that yee love one another with a pure heart fervently.* Here two things (amongſt many others) are plainely implied. Firſt, that no man is able out of any naturall principle to love the *Brethren*, that is, the Saints; *the heart muſt be purified through the word and Spirit of GOD together*, that is, that baſe and droſſie affection of inordinate ſelfe-love muſt be purged away, before a man be able to lift up his heart to ſuch a ſpirituall and heavenly ſervice as this. Secondly that a man or woman having obtained ſuch an excellent principle as this, a power of loving the Saints unfeignedly through the purifying of their hearts, are bound in a ſpeciall manner to give out themſelves fully and freely according to the nature, ſtrength, and importance of this principle, to expreſſe themſelves in excellent termes of love and reſpects unto them, as their neceſſities ſhall require it. This for the 7 and laſt reaſon. We addreſſe immediatly to the Vſe and application of the Doctrine, we ſhall be very briefe in particulars here.

Vſe. 1. Inſtruction.

By way of Inſtruction (in the firſt place) we may from the Doctrine obſerve ſundry particulars. As

Firſt that the minde and good pleaſure of JESUS CHRIST, concerning his Saints and people on Earth, is, that you ſheuld be a ſocietie or body of men and women in the world, animated and quick-

ened (as it were) mooved and acted by a ſpirit of love, as the life or ſoule of it, that you ſhould abound in this affection, above all other ſocieties of men whatſoever. Doubtleſſe he that commands us to lay down our lives one for another, commands us alſo by a commandement involv'd and wrap'd up in this commandement, to maintaine a Spirit of moſt ardent and burning affection towards one another. A man can never be inſtructed or taught to die willingly by any other teacher or teaching whatſoever, but by *Love*, yea and that ſuch a *Love*, of ſuch a conquering and commanding power, that it muſt tread downe the ſtrength of a thouſand loves and deſires beſides, yea and many of theſe of ſoveraigne ſtrength and power alſo. To require a man *to lay downe his life for the Brethren* out of any other ground or principle whatſoever, then out of an affection of love to them, and that tranſcendently glorious, is (in effect) to bid him gather grapes of thornes, or figges of thiſtles.

Secondly, This likewiſe is by way of inſtruction obſervable from the Doctrine, That men doe but that which is their duty in this kinde, when they are enlarged in the greateſt meaſure, in the expreſſions of their love towards their Brethren: if they ſhould give all their goods, and part with their whole ſubſtance to them, yea, if they ſhould lay downe their necks, and jeopardie their lives for their ſakes, yet there is nothing to boaſt of in all this: they are never-the-leſſe to remaine vile and little in their own eyes. If their right hand doth never ſo much in this kinde, yet ſhould not their left hand know any thing at all of it. Heights of duty ſhould no waies prejudice or hinder the depths of humilitie. *So likewiſe yee* (ſaith our Saviour to his Diſciples)

ples) *when you ſhall have done all things that are commanded you, ſay, we are unprofitable ſervants: we have done that which was our duty to doe.*

Obſerve Thirdly (by way of Inſtruction) what gratious and bleſſed proviſion the Lord JESUS CHRIST hath made, for the poore and weake, and diſtreſſed ones in any kinde in his Church. Hee hath ingaged the rich and ſtrong, and thoſe that are at libertie and that have meanes of reliefe or ſupport in any kinde, in their hand, to be ready at all times to miniſter unto them. The neceſſities of any, as farre as they are made knowne, are a ſummons from Heaven to call the reſt to looke after them and relieve them. If this royall Law were duly obſerved in the Church of CHRIST, one ſufferer ſhould create and raiſe up many relievers; neither ſhould there be heard the complaint or crie of any man ſinking, whilſt there remaines any one ſwimming. It is a ſigne, that the minde of CHRIST is not fulfilled by his body, if there be one member hungry, whilſt another is drunken, if there be want in any place, before there be want in all. 1 *Cor.* 11. 21.

Fourthly, (we are yet in the way of inſtruction) If the higheſt and deepeſt expreſſions of our love to the Saints, be but matter of duty in us, as their neceſſities may determine it; then is it not any diſcharge of a mans duty, nor to be counted obedience unto GOD, or unto the Lord JESUS CHRIST, when the neceſſities of your Brethren being great and ſore upon them, men ſhall miniſter unto them in a ſparing, pinching, and contemptible manner: when the condition of the Saints requires (it may be) the one halfe of our ſubſtance, and we caſt in two mites into their treaſury: when their exigences call

call us to lay downe our lives for them, and we are willing onely to bestow the parings of our nailes upon them. Doubtlesse to minister unto the necessities of the Saints upon such termes as these, is no better obedience, nor any whit a more acceptable service unto GOD, then that of *Saul* was, when being commanded to smite *Amalek*, and to destroy utterly all that appertained to them, &c. he only destroyed that which was vile and nought worth amongst them, but spared *Agag* the King, and all the best of the sheepe and oxen, and all that was good 1. *Sam.* 15. 3. 9. As *Saul* was rejected by GOD, and that with much indignation, and arrested from Heaven with a writ *of rebellion* served upon him by the hand of the Prophet *Samuel*, for such an abusing of the commandement of GOD, which yet to himselfe seem'd a sufficient and plausible obedience: So is it more then to be feared that many men please themselves, and are lifted up in a selfe admiration, for doing that in a way of charitie and relieefe unto the saints, which being interpreted by GOD, is rather a reproach and mockerie to his pleasure and command that way, then any obedience or subjection to it.

Lastly (for Instruction:) if the highest, and deepest expressions of love to the Saints, be but matter of duty, when their necessities require them: then is not that which any man possesseth in the things of this world, whether estate, liberty, life, &c. so much to be look'd upon, as a mans owne (to speake properly) as the Churches and houshold's of Faith. GOD we see both in the Text and Doctrine delivered, who hath an absolute Soveraigntie of right and power to dispose both of our persons and of all we have, hath interessed *the Brethren*, that is, the whole communion

nion and Brotherhood of the Saints, both in our perſons, and in our poſſeſſions. The neceſſities of the Saints are ſealed and confirmed from Heaven, as a lawfull right and title to ſuch proportions and ſhares in our eſtates, and in any other meanes of help and ſupport that we are able to afford, as are proportionable to them, and of a conſiderable importance to relieve them. That civill right or propriety we have in our poſſeſſions, is not by Chriſtians to be looked upon, or pleaded in Barre to that Spirituall right which all the Saints have in them alſo.

Vſe 2 for Reproofe.

Secondly, The Doctrine affords matter of Reproofe alſo, and that of foure ſorts of men. The firſt are thoſe that will needs be numbred amongſt the righteous, yea are ready to thinke themſelves evilly entreated, and hardly dealt with, if they have not their place aſſigned them at the upper end of the Table amongſt the Houſhold of Faith, if they be not looked upon as the true ſervants of *Jeſus Chriſt* (at leaſt) and yet are as a dry, and barren wilderneſſe to the Saints, and looke upon this family of Heaven as ſtrangers unto them, eſpecially when they ſtand in need of an helping hand from them in any kinde. A little affliction falling upon a ſervant of GOD wherein their helpe is required, puts him quite out of their knowledge; as *Davids* neceſſitie made *Nabal* that he did not know him. 1 *Sam.* 25. 10. *Who is David? and who is the ſonne of Iſhai?* If *David* had bin a great Courtier, or the Sonne of *Iſhai* a favourite of King *Saul*, it is no otherwiſe like, but *Nabal* could have knowne him well enough. But perceiving that his knowledge of him in ſuch a condition, and ſtreight as he was now in, would be chargeable to him, and coſt him ſome of his bread, and of his fleſh, he would by no meanes owne his knowledge of him.

Such a condition, wherein a man ſhall ſtand in neede of the helpe of another is, in the interpretation of a baſe cloſe-fiſted generation amongſt us, an evidence againſt him, that he doth not belong to CHRIST Alaſſe, how farre are theſe from laying downe their lives for their Brethren, and conſequently from being Chriſtians, who can acknowledge none for Chriſtians, but thoſe that have no need of them at all? when *Lazarus* ſhall be caſt out of *Abrahams* boſom, theſe ſhall goe thither in his ſtead.

Secondly, There is another ſort of Profeſſors too, which though they ſeeme not altogether ſo bad as the former, yet their prerogative above them were a deere bargaine of the Widowes two mites, if it were to be bought with them. Theſe are ſuch, who though they will not be ſeene to ſit out in the neceſſities of the Saints, when others are in, yet they will play but at very ſmall game (as we ſay) to relieve them: they neither conſult with the greatneſſe, or depth of the Saints neceſſities, nor with the fulneſſe or ſuperfluities of their owne eſtates, but with the narrowneſſe, and ſcantneſſe of their owne baſe diſpoſitions: This is the only Oracle they inquire at, and by which they are regulated in all they doe for the Saints, upon any occaſion whatſoever. They have a forme of giving (as the Apoſtle ſpeakes of ſome that have *a forme of knowledge*) which neither mends, nor paires, neither riſeth nor falls, nor any waies alters by any difference or occaſions, or opportunities whatſoever. If the fit of charitie be upon them, they will give aſmuch to a vagrant beggar by the way ſide, as they will to ſave the lives of ten thouſand Saints: and no great matter neither to the one, or towards the other. If men be *rich in the things of this world*, and not *rich in good workes*

too,

too, they are not like *to lay hold of eternall life.* 1 Tim. 6. 19. We know the rich young-man in the Gospell, though he was neere unto the Kingdome of heven, yet becauſe he would not ſell all that he had, and give liberally to the poore, being required to do it, never entred thereinto. For rich men under the *Law* that had great heards of Cattell and flocks of ſheepe, and Goates, to have brought Turtles, or young-Pigeons for their offering, had been a prophanation of the Temple, and deſpiſing of God. And ſo for men of great eſtates to have caſt in 2 mites into the Treaſury, as the poore Widdow did, had rather bin a cõtumelie or affront put upon that ſervice or cuſtom of offering, then any expreſſion of charitie or devotion. *Curſed be the deceiver* (ſaith the Lord himſelfe by his Prophet) *which hath in his flock a male, and voweth and ſacrificeth unto the Lord a corrupt thing.* Mal. 1. 14. And is it not a ſin of very neere affinitie with this, and ſo obnoxious to the ſame Curſe, when men that are able to relieve by thouſands, and the extremities of the Saints call for reliefe by thouſands, ſhall yet miniſter reliefe but by tens, yea and ſcarſely by this proportion?

Thirdly, another ſort worſe then both the former are ſuch, who are ſo farre from managing an affection of love to the Saints with thoſe high, and excellent expreſſions we ſpeake of, even when the greateſt need requires, that to keepe their bread and water, and credit too, are ſtill ready to blaſpheme the pouertie or hard condition of the Saints in any kind, as if they were of a baſe originall and deſcent; as if they alwaies proceeded either from negligence, ſloathfulneſſe, raſhneſſe, want of diſcretion and foreſight, or the like. Becauſe men have no minde or will in this caſe to part with their money, nor are yet

willing to make any part of ſatisfaction for that baſeneſſe with their names and reputations; they have no waies to bring both theſe ends together, but by inſimulations, aſperſions and ſundry imputations to render thoſe unworthy, whoſe neceſſitous condition calls upon them for reliefe. Thus *Nabal* ſought to make a covering for his owne ſhame in refuſing to ſupplie *David* in his extremitie, of that wicked inſimulation or reproach caſt upon *David*, as that he ſhould be ſome ſervant run away from his Maſter. 1 *Sam.* 25. 10. *There be many ſervants now adaies that breake away every man from his Maſter*: Out of theſe impertinent premiſſes, this baſe minded wretch thought he might lawfully and commendably inferre this concluſion: therefore there was neither reaſon nor conſcience why he ſhould part with any thing to *David*. The like ſpirit of baſe inſinuations againſt the Saints in diſtreſſe is taken in by that other uncleane ſpirit of covetouſneſſe which reignes in the hearts of many amongſt us, to defend him againſt the juſt ſmitings both of conſcience, and of the tongues of men.

Fourthly (and laſtly for reproofe) thoſe are yet worſe then the former (if worſe may be) who inſtead of loving the Saints fervently, and with a pure heart, and with all demonſtrations and rich expreſſions of this love as occaſion requires, are ſtill ſnarling and biting, and vexing them, with injuries, reproaches, backbitings, and all manner of evill entreatings. And yet there are of this generation alſo, that muſt be honoured before the Elders of their people too, with the Names, and reputations of good Chriſtians. Any thing (it ſeemes) will ſerve for the preſent to make Chriſtians and Saints of: Hey, and Stubble, and wood will ſerve to beare the name, and outſide

ſide of Chriſtianity, aſwell as ſilver, gold, and precious ſtones: but when they ſhall be made to paſſe through the fire of *Gods* judgement, then that Hey, and Stubble, and wood we ſpeake of, will make no more Chriſtians, but baſe hypocrites, and accurſed unbeleevers only. How farre are theſe men from that ſtreyne of Chriſtianity, which is required of all men in the Doctrine, from miniſtring richly, & with a large heart, and with an open hand to the neceſſities of the Saints, when their daily practiſe is to give them gall, and vinegar to drinke, & to bring preſſures, and to heap ſorrowes upon their head? inſtead of making their beds for them in their ſickneſſe, they caſt them into beds of ſickneſſe and ſorrow. If the miniſters of Satan be Angells of light, ſuch men as theſe are good Chriſtians: and when *God* ſhall bring againe the Captivity of *Belzebub* and his Angells, and reſtore them to their firſt eſtate in Heaven, theſe ſhall have part and fellowſhip in Heaven with them. *Ezr.* 16. 53.

A third and laſt Vſe of the Doctrine, ſhall be for exhortation, and that to all thoſe that meane to doe any good, upon the profeſſion and trade of Chriſtianity, that deſire to raiſe themſelves for ever by it: The duty I ſhall recommend unto you, is only this, that you would make it matter of conſcience (as well as you doe any other duty in the world, as to abſtaine from Murder, Drunkenneſſe, Adultery, or the like,) yea that you would make a ſolemne worke and labour of it, to abound in that ſweete and heavenly affection of love towards the Saints, and to give full and free teſtimony and account thereof both unto *God* and men, as their occaſions ſhall from time to time require. Quit your ſelves in this kinde, (I beſeech you) as the Diſciples and followers of him, who when the neceſſitie of the world (and of your *Vſe* 3 *for Exhortation.*

ſoules particularly) required it, and could not be ſaved without it, freely emptied himſelfe of all his greatneſſe and glory, and poured out his deereſt ſoule an offering for it; and was content to take reſt and peace and glory in reverſion, when as otherwiſe he might have had them in preſent poſſeſſion. In a word, that you will count nothing of all you poſſeſſe in this world deere unto your ſelves, that your love to the Saints may reigne and triumph in all the rich and glorious and high expreſſions thereof, as the condition of any of theſe ſhall require. Particularly (to turne in a little to that ſpeciall occaſion, which hath drawn out my heart and ſoule unto you this day, in this ſubject) that you will vindicate your ſelves for Chriſtians indeed, and your love to the Saints and ſervants of JESUS CHRIST, like it ſelfe, by your ready and free, and liberall contributions by way of lending (for your love for the preſent is not put to any greater triall then this) to redeeme the lives and liberties and eſtates of your poore *Brethren* the *Proteſtants* in *Ireland* (if GOD will yet vouchſafe to honour your zeale and forwardneſſe in this kinde, with ſuch an honourable vouchſafement as this) out of the mercileſſe hand of thoſe cruell, blood thirſtie and implacable enemies both theirs and your's, that Butcherly, and bloody faction of *Rome*, who are now gathered together like an Army of chafed Beares, and fierce Lyons againſt them, in an heate and ecſtacie of revenge, and being led on by that Prince of darkneſſe, that great roaring Lyon the Devill, have their hands lifted up on high, to ſlay and kill, and to deſtroy, to commit all manner of inſolencies, and barbarous outrages, as they ſhall be inſpired, and taught by that God of this world whom they ſerve in this ſpirit of revenge, which now poſſeſſeth them. The conſiderations, and motives

that

that may ſtrengthen your hand to this ſervice that is recommended to you, are both more in number and greater in weight and conſequence by farre, then I am able to expreſſe. Give me leave to touch you with ſome few of them.

Firſt, that faction of Hell, the Romiſh party, are of a very formidable ſtrength and power amongſt them: they were ſome while ſince reported to have bin an Army of about 30000 fighting men, and to be daily increaſing, and gathering greater numbers unto them. They have already taken many ſtrong Townes and Caſtles, and have made themſelves Lords and Maſters of them; and many Captaines, and other Officers that have bin trained up, and exerciſed in Warres, are ſaid to have come over from beyond the Seas unto them, to aſſiſt them in their enterprize: In ſo much that the feare and dread of them is fallen and ready ſtill to fall upon many, that they have and are likely every day more and more to revolt and fall in unto them. So they are not like to be reſiſted, or withſtood but with an high hand. The ſtrength and power of the enemy, which is ſo formidable to your Brethren, and in it ſelfe alſo, let it not (I beſeech you) be contemptible in your eyes, but gaine proportionably upon your hearts and ſoules to conſider them.

Secondly, the *Proteſtant party* of your Brethren, are but very weake in compariſon of their enemies, they are but few in number, in reſpect of the ſwarms of thoſe Anti-Chriſtian hornets that neſtle amongſt them: and that which is yet of ſadder conſideration, they are but naked, and unarm'd, and no waies appointed or provided to defend themſelves; having not long ſince had their Armes, and meanes of de-

defence, moſt cruelly taken from them, by him, who hath made ſome part of attonement for that and other his outrages, with his head. In which reſpect they are but as a flock of Kids, before an Hoſt, or Army of Lyons. Let this conſideration alſo of the weakneſſe of your Brethren, ſtrengthen the hand of your love and make tender your reſpects unto them.

Thirdly, their enemies are of a bloody, barbarous, and revengefull ſpirit: all mercie, pittie, and compaſſion, yea humanitie it ſelfe is hid from their eyes: there is neither age, nor ſex, neither young-men, nor Maids, neither old-men, nor Babes, but all are one before the rage of their cruelty. They have ſhut up all the bowells of their compaſſions as it were with barres of yron, that neither cries nor teares, nor miſries, nor extremities, nor the Law of GOD, nor the Lawes of men, nor the Lawes of nature or humanitie it ſelfe, can doe any thing to open them. I beſeech you let the ſhutting up of the compaſſions of the enemies of your Brethren againſt them, be the opening of your compaſſions ſo much the more freely, ſo much the more abundantly unto them.

Fourthly, they are deeply, indeed moſt deſperatly ingaged to goe through with their enterprize, and are under a vow, to make as cleere riddance of *Proteſtants* and *Proteſtant Religion* out of the Kingdome, as their lying Legend reports that their Saint *Patrick* made of Serpents & Toades, & al venimous creatures. They have made a covering of their breaden God, wherewith to hide all repentance from their eyes: ſo that all relentings, all doubtings, all faintings or feebleneſſe of ſpirit, all hanging down of hands from the worke in hand, are no leſſe then deadly ſins with them: if they looke backe from the Plough whereunto

whereunto they have now put forth their hand, they are afraide they ſhall fall into Hell immediatly. That God and creature of theirs which they make of bread is amongſt them of as great authority and power, as the Poets made the Rivers Styx in Hell, to be among their Heathen God's, when they ſware by it: *Timor et Deus ille Deorum eſt.* It is the inſpiration of their Religion and teachers, that it is no leſſe then damnable ſinne, and to be puniſhed with Hell fire, once to doubt or queſtion whether it be meritorious or no, to murder *Kings* and *Princes*, when the advancement of the Catholique cauſe requireth it. I beſeech you let the height of their reſolutions, and the depths of their ingagements to doe evill, be both heights and depths of ingagements and reſolutions unto you, to doe good, to the countermanding (if it be poſſible) of their evill.

Fiftly, they have already conſecrated themſelves unto the Devill and his ſervice upon the lives and blood of many of the ſervants of GOD, your Brethren in the *Faith*, hewing, and hacking ſome in pieces (as it were on purpoſe to quench, and ſmother all ſparkes of humanity that might yet be alive in their breſts) after they had murdered them, and by other moſt barbarous villanies, and outrages committed upon them; ſetting themſelves a coppie (as it were) for their future proceedings, and giving thoſe that yet remaine to underſtand, what meaſure they muſt expect, and looke for, if they make reſiſtance, and meane to keepe their Religion. I beſeech you let the lives, and cruell and curſed uſages of thoſe that have already periſhed by their hand, intercede & mediate with the bowells of your compaſſions on the behalfe of the remnant which is yet left.

Sixtly, It is the holineſſe, purity, and truth of

defence, moſt cruelly taken from them, by him, who hath made ſome part of attonement for that and other his outrages, with his head. In which reſpect they are but as a flock of Kids, before an Hoſt, or Army of Lyons. Let this conſideration alſo of the weakneſſe of your Brethren, ſtrengthen the hand of your love and make tender your reſpects unto them.

Thirdly, their enemies are of a bloody, barbarous, and revengefull ſpirit: all mercie, pittie, and compaſſion, yea humanitie it ſelfe is hid from their eyes: there is neither age, nor ſex, neither young-men, nor Maids, neither old-men, nor Babes, but all are one before the rage of their cruelty. They have ſhut up all the bowells of their compaſſions as it were with barres of yron, that neither cries nor teares, nor miſries, nor extremities, nor the Law of GOD, nor the Lawes of men, nor the Lawes of nature or humanitie it ſelfe, can doe any thing to open them. I beſeech you let the ſhutting up of the compaſſions of the enemies of your Brethren againſt them, be the opening of your compaſſions ſo much the more freely, ſo much the more abundantly unto them.

Fourthly, they are deeply, indeed moſt deſperatly ingaged to goe through with their enterprize, and are under a vow, to make as cleere riddance of *Proteſtants* and *Proteſtant Religion* out of the Kingdome, as their lying Legend reports that their Saint *Patrick* made of Serpents & Toades, & al venimous creatures. They have made a covering of their breaden God, wherewith to hide all repentance from their eyes: ſo that all relentings, all doubtings, all faintings or feebleneſſe of ſpirit, all hanging down of hands from the worke in hand, are no leſſe then deadly ſins with them: if they looke backe from the Plough whereunto

whereunto they have now put forth their hand, they are afraide they ſhall fall into Hell immediatly. That God and creature of theirs which they make of bread is amongſt them of as great authority and power, as the Poets made the Rivers Styx in Hell, to be among their Heathen God's, when they ſware by it: *Timor et Deus ille Deorum eſt.* It is the inſpiration of their Religion and teachers, that it is no leſſe then damnable ſinne, and to be puniſhed with Hell fire, once to doubt or queſtion whether it be meritorious or no, to murder *Kings* and *Princes*, when the advancement of the Catholique cauſe requireth it. I beſeech you let the height of their reſolutions, and the depths of their ingagements to doe evill, be both heights and depths of ingagements and reſolutions unto you, to doe good, to the countermanding (if it be poſſible) of their evill.

Fiftly, they have already conſecrated themſelves unto the Devill and his ſervice upon the lives and blood of many of the ſervants of GOD, your Brethren in the *Faith*, hewing, and hacking ſome in pieces (as it were on purpoſe to quench, and ſmother all ſparkes of humanity that might yet be alive in their breſts) after they had murdered them, and by other moſt barbarous villanies, and outrages committed upon them; ſetting themſelves a coppie (as it were) for their future proceedings, and giving thoſe that yet remaine to underſtand, what meaſure they muſt expect, and looke for, if they make reſiſtance, and meane to keepe their Religion. I beſeech you let the lives, and cruell and curſed uſages of thoſe that have already periſhed by their hand, intercede & mediate with the bowells of your compaſſions on the behalfe of the remnant which is yet left.

Sixtly, It is the holineſſe, purity, and truth of

that Faith and Religion which your ſelves profeſſe, and wherein you hope to be ſaved, that hath kindled that fire of hatred and revenge in thoſe *Romiſh* ſpirits, which is now broken out, rageing and devouring, as you have heard. Theſe ſervants of *God* whoſe cauſe we now pleade before you, are for no other cauſe, nor in any other reſpect made the miſerable objects of the wrath and furie of their enemies, expoſed to that fiery ſtorme and tempeſt of blood that hangs over their heads, but becauſe they are your Brethren, and Profeſſors of the ſame Precious *Faith* with you: They ſuffer not as evill doers, but only becauſe they have given the right hand of fellowſhip unto you in the things of GOD, and of the Lord JESUS CHRIST. I hope the power of that Religion which you profeſſe, will ſet you on fire to make up the breaches, which the Profeſſion of it hath made, or further ſhall make upon others.

Seventhly, Conſider, that the cauſe, for the maintenance whereof you are now ſollicited, being ſo cleerely and intirely as it is, the cauſe of your Religion, and you of this Citie looked upon as the greateſt Friends, as the ſolemneſt and moſt ſerious Profeſſors which it hath not only in this, but in all other Kingdomes alſo under Heaven, and withall many of you being of knowne eſtates and ſufficient abilities to doe much for it in that way, which is now expected from you; if then you ſhall now diſcover any backwardneſſe in miniſtring to the neceſſities of it, if you ſhall give the leaſt ſuſpition to the world, that your eſtates are competitors for your hearts with your Religion, if your contributions towards the maintenance of it ſhall either fall low, or come off heavily from you, you ſhall much quench the glory and eſteeme of it in the hearts of men

men, and represent it unto the world as a Religion weake and contemptible and of a doubtfull assurеanc, upon the service whereof silver and gold were too great to be sacrificed. The truth is, that the opportunity that is before you, enableth you to set the prize and estimate of your Religion, at what rate, or height you please: you have the world at such an advantage to compell them to thinke highly and honourable of that truth which you professe, the losse and neglect whereof would be an inexpiable streyne of unworthinesse in you, and which you can hardly ever redeeme, no though you should sacrifice your selves and your whole estates in the flames of the greatest zeale for it afterwards. Nay if you shall sinne against the Crowne and dignitie of the Religion you professe, by being remisse, and low and cold in the service recommended unto you, all the Professors it hath in the world besides, though they should rise up in their might and cloath themselves with double zeale to doe their uttermost for it, will not be able to build up what you will throw down, nor exalt the glory of it according to the measure of your abasements. Therefore if your Religion be of that inestimable worth and value whereof you have given information unto the world hitherto by your profession of it, seale to these informations of yours this day, and rejoyce in free and liberall contributions over it: cause your silver and gold to doe hommage to it, and to acknowledge the Divinity of it.

Eightly, Your zeale and open-handednesse for the reliefe of the distressed, may strike a dampe of feare and terror into the hearts of their enemies, when they shall either by hearing or seeing, come to know it, and so weaken their hand to their work. When they shall perceive what deep and deere interest in your hearts and affections those have,

whose confusion and ruine they hope to reape as the recompence and reward of their present rebellions, this may, cut the sinewes, and strength of their expectation this way, and take off the fiery edg of their presuming confidence. The interpretation of what you shall doe in this kinde like your selves, may be of much more consequence to your friends, then the text it selfe. I beseech you give not those bloodthirstie wretches any scope or libertie of hope or thought, but that those whose lives and fortunes they seeke to ruine and trample under foot, are a generation very precious in your eyes, and that your hearts are fully set and bent upon their preservation and deliverance. Little (perhaps) doe you thinke or imagine, of how rich a concernment such a conceipt as this begotten in the spirits of their enemies, may be for the peace and safety of your friends.

Ninthly, By casting on sufficient quantities of water to quench the fire that is kindled in that Kingdome, you may prevent the kindling of the like, or a worse in your own. *Ireland* is not unfitly termed, a back-doore into *England*: and of what dismall portendance it must needs be to you and your Nation, to have the Pope keeper of the keyes of your back dore, I shall not need to represent unto you. If *Ireland* ever be brought under the power of the *Romish* faction, the Sun of *Englands* prosperitie will suddainly be darkened in the midst of the Heavens thereof: that Land and Kingdome will receive immediate consecration from the triple Crowne, for a Sanctuary unto those that shall undertake or attempt the ruine or molestation of this: it will soone be a receptacle for *Ijm* and *Otjm*, I meane for the furies and firebrands of *Rome*, to lodge in. Besides, the neighbourhood of such a confederate Kingdome as *Ireland* will be, if ever that generation of vipers we speake of,

of, ſhould Lord it there, will foment and cheriſh thoſe ſeeds of ſeditions, Treaſons, conſpiracies, and Rebellions, which are ſowne in the natures and diſpoſitions of that Popiſh gang amongſt our ſelves. If you let *Ireland* goe, the peace and ſafety of your own Land and Nation (it is much to be feared) will ſoone follow after it. I beſeech you be not backward to do the beſt you are able for thoſe who are now recommended unto you: that which you ſhall part with, may be the price of the redemptiō of your own land.

Tenthly, There is no better foundation can be treaſured up for your ſelves againſt an evill day, then by a compaſſionate and tender conſideration of thoſe that are in diſtreſſe, in the meane ſeaſon. Bowells of compaſſion towards the afflicted, make the beſt ſhelter and covert from a ſtorme and tempeſt, of any other materiall whatſoever. By the ſame ſhield which you ſhall hold forth to defend others from evill, you ſhall protect your ſelves alſo. The Scripture is abundant in the teſtimonie of this truth. *Bleſſed is he that conſidereth the poore: the Lord will deliver him in the time of trouble. The Lord will preſerve him and keepe him alive, &c.* Pſal. 41. ver. 1. 2. you know not what evill times, what daies of darkneſſe GOD may yet pleaſe to bring upon your Land and Nation: take heed I beſeech you, leaſt by leaving your Brethren naked to that ſtorme and tempeſt which now threatens them, and in part lyeth ſore and heavy upon them, you do not conſult nakednesſe to your ſelves, againſt the day wherein the like ſtorme or tempeſt ſhall fall upon you. *He ſhall have judgment without mercie, that ſheweth no mercie.* Jam. 2. 13. Take heed, he that hath ſaid it, will do it accordingly.

Laſtly, to make my motion unto you greater then deniall (if it may be) be pleaſed to conſider this one thing further, that if you ſhall deale unworthily in

that worke of *Christ* whereunto you are now called, and shall love the wages of unfaithfullnesse, and resolve to keep your money by you, notwithstanding the importunate and loud cries of your Brethrens blood and lives for it, you may justly feare that it will soone alter the property of it; and that, that which was life and strength unto you hitherto, will from henceforth be but labour and sorrow, in comparison. Whatsoever *God* calleth for at any time at the hands of any man for his glory, if it be denyed unto him; whether it be a mans credit, friends, liberty, estate, life, or whatsoever, it seldome or never prospers; nor is it selfe afterwards any more unto him. There may well be an insinuation or breathing of this truth, in that of our Saviour, *He that will save his life* (and so his credit, estate, liberty, &c. when the Gospell and my affaires require it) *shall loose it*: meaning (haply) that after such a saving it, a mans life will be no more it selfe, no more a *life*, but rather a *death* to him, and shall never have the like contentment or sweetnesse in it, which it had before. I beseech you put this consideration also to bout with all the former. Whatsoever it be that *God* now requireth of you for the support of his cause and servants, it is to little purpose, I meane in respect of the flesh it selfe, or any outward accommodation, for you to withhold it, or to deny it unto him: This call of *God* for it, hath made it good for nothing, but for consecration: it is no more for any civill or naturall use or service unto you, till *God* hath bin serv'd by it, and shall returne it againe into your bosomes. That bread which *God* commands to be cast upon the waters, will certainly mold and putrifie, if it be not cast upon them: but if his voyce be obeyed concerning it, so that it be *cast upon the waters* accordingly, when it shall be found and taken up

againe

againe from the waters (as his promiſe is it ſhall be) it ſhall be unto the owners, or him that caſt it, as the bread of Angels: there will be more nouriſhment and ſweetneſſe in one morſell of it, then in full tables of other proviſion.

All theſe things duly weighed, I beſeech you conſider what you have to doe in the ſervice propounded and recommended to you. It will be of ſad conſequence unto you to ſeek out pretences and excuſes, why you ſhould not willingly take this yoake upon you: the exigencie of the occaſion is ſuch, that no pretences or reaſons whatſoever are to be knowne or once regarded againſt the motion that hath bin made unto you. It ſeldome or never falls out, but if *God* hath one requeſt to make to us, the fleſh and the world have another to make in oppoſition and barre to it; and that (for the moſt part) very plauſible and ſatisfactory to the Conſciences of him that deſires to decline the worke and ſervice of *God*. Nay rather if pretences and excuſes ſhall offer themſelves unto you, hide them from your eyes, and bury them like your dead, out of your ſight: tread them downe under your foot as oft as they offer to riſe up againſt you to trouble you in your way. Wife and Children, and charge, and poverty, and want of moneys, and occaſions of diſburſments otherwiſe, with a thouſand other ſuch inſinuations as theſe, muſt with Sathan himſelfe be commanded to get them behind us: theſe are not to be admitted into this conſultation. *Ireland* muſt be look'd after, and provided for, as if we had neither Wives, nor Children, nor charge, nor were poore, nor wanted Moneys, nor knew what to doe with our Money otherwiſe. Vniform and ſtanding occaſions, are but nences, in the preſence of great exigencies, and precipitate exigences, and precipitate occaſions. And

know

that you are not your ſelves, except you be more then your ſelves, and above your ſelves in this worke: you do not that which you are able to doe, and conſequently not that which is your duty to do, except you do more then you are able to do, upon ſuch an occaſion as this. *To their power, I beare them record* (ſaith *Paul* concerning the Churches of *Macedonia*) *yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themſelves.* 2 Cor. 8. 3. The meaning is not (as perhaps the face of the leter ſeemes to import) that they were deſirous & willing to have done more then they did, in caſe they had bin better provided: but that out of an abundant willingneſſe that was in them to promote ſuch a ſervice as was now propoſed to them, they ſtretch'd themſelves in their contributions, beyond what the line of their outward eſtates would well beare. We know that exigencies and extremities, and eccſtacies of feares in other kinds, will intend and raiſe the naturall ſtrength and abilities of men far above themſelves. In a plunge of danger, and by the help & advantage of ſome great feare, many have bin able to leap ditches, and to take up weights, and to run with that ſwiftneſſe, which by their ſtanding ſtrength & abilities they were never able to do. And doubtleſſe ſuch a ſpiritual exigencie as is now preſented to us, if we tooke the impreſſions of it kindly & fully, would raiſe the powers of grace alſo within us above themſelves, and enable us to worke miracles, in compariſon of our ordinary expreſſions of our ſelv's, it would make *even our moſt extreme poverty* (in caſe our poverty were ſuch) *to abound to the riches of our liberalitie*; as the Apoſtle records concerning the Churches of *Macedonia* which we ſpeake of. *The Lord grant that the efficacie and power of what hath bin ſaid unto you, may be found in your deportments and behaviour in that great worke that is before you.*

FINIS.





3

AN ABSTRACT OF Certain Depoſitions,

By vertue of His MAJESTIES Commiſſion, taken upon Oath,

Concerning the Traiterous intention of the Rebels in *Ireland*, in rejecting the Government of His Majeſtie, in having a King of their own: And who that King ſhould be.

With an Extract of a Letter from *Rome*, 4. Jan. 1641.

Publiſhed by His Majeſties Command.

LONDON:
Printed by ROBERT BARKER, Printer to the Kings moſt Excellent Majeſtie: And by the Aſſignes of JOHN BILL.
1642.



An Abſtract of the Depoſitions by vertue of His Majeſties Commiſsion, taken upon Oath, concerning the traiterous intention of the Rebels, in rejecting the Government of His Majeſtie, in having a King of their own: And who this King ſhould be.

GEorge Cook of Liſſignie, inter cœtera, depoſeth, that one Tirlagh O Gowne, *alias* Smith, a Popiſh Prieſt, ſaid, That the Papiſts would have their Churches, Lands, and Kingdom to themſelves from the Engliſh, and be no more ſlaves to the Engliſh, as they had been, or elſe they would loſe their lives. Cavan 71. Jan. 22. 1641.

Richard Colley, of the Parish of Kinnallie, inter cœt. depoſeth, that Bryan O Cormacke of Driſternan, and other Rebels ſaid, They would never ſubmit to any Engliſh man. Fermagh 90. Febr. 2. 1641.

Thomas Magill, Clerk, inter cœt. depoſeth, that Collogh, Mac Brian, Mac Mahowne, and ſeverall other Rebells, ſaid, That they would not be ſubject to any Parliaments in England, and that they would have none to Govern over them, but a born Iriſh man. Lowth 4. Febr. 21. 1641.

Monaghan 36. March 24 1641. Matthew Browne of Cloniſſe, Gent. inter cœt. depoſeth, that he heard Peter Bath ſay, That they looked to have the King to put out the words Defender of the faith; for none was ſupream of the Church, and Defender of the Faith, but the Pope.

Wickloe 8 Jan. 11. 1641. Richard Whitton of Kilvane, inter cœt. depoſeth, that Luke Birne of Kilvane ſaid, He would have their Religion flouriſh, no thanks to the King.

Wickloe 39. Feb. 5. 1641. Edward Deaſelye, inter cœt. depoſeth, That Luke Toole and Luke Birne offered a Paſſe to this Examinant, which they ſaid, would be better then the Kings Paſſe.

Cavan. 47 Jan. 12. 1641. Thomas Taylor of Kilmore, inter cœt. depoſeth, that he heard Mulmore O Kely ſay, That if the ſaid Deponent would deny the King, he ſhould ſpeed as they did.

Queenes 31. April 12. 1642. William Wright of Culmonyn, inter cœt. depoſeth, that John Good of Clonayſawne, and Dermot Mac Phelmi ſaid, That they hoped to have all Proteſtants hanged within one fortnight, and he that did protect them too.

Fermanagh 60. 10 Ian. 1641. Richard Knowles of Newtowne, inter cœt. depoſeth, that Rory Magwire, Richard Nugent, Donogh Magwire, by whoſe means he was robbed, ſome of the ſaid Robbers ſaid, That they had a King of their own in Ireland.

Cavan, 57. Ian 15. Nicholas Michaell of Farnam, inter cœt. depoſeth, that he heard the parties that robbed him ſay, They had an Iriſh King amongſt them, and they regarded not King Charles, the King of England.

Robert

Robert Barton of Newtowne, inter cœt. depoſeth, that ſome of the Rebels ſaid, They had a new King, and had Commiſſion from him for what they did. Fermanagh 41. Jan. 5.

Thomas Middlebrooke, inter cœt. depoſeth, that about the 26. of October laſt paſt, he heard one Cahell Boy Mac Demot of Killrout ſay, That within one fortnight they ſhould have a new King of Ireland crowned, one of the O Neales, or words to that effect. Fermanagh 18. 4. Jan.

Avis Braſhaw, inter cœt. depoſeth, That ſhe heard the abovelaid Cahall Boy ſay the ſame, or words to that effect. Fermanagh 19. 4 Jan.

Alice Tibbs, inter cœt. depoſeth, That ſhe heard the abovelaid Cahall Boy ſay the ſame, or words to that effect. Fermanagh 20. 4. Jan.

Alice Champin, the relict of Arthur Champin, inter cœt. depoſeth, that ſhe heard the Rebellious Iriſh ſay, That Sir Phellomy Roe of Neale ſhould be King of Ireland, and that they would give a great ſumm of Money, on condition they had our gracious King Charles his head. Fermanagh 27. 14. April

Elizabeth Gough, inter cœt. depoſeth, That Cahir O Kelay, and Thomas Mac-Encorr ſaid, They purpoſed to have a King of their own, and that Sir Phelmi O Neale ſhould be he. Cavan. 85. 8. Febr.

John Gregg of Clovenedan, inter cœt. depoſeth, that Captain Shane O Neale, ſtiled, Sir Phelmi O Neale His Majeſtie. Ardmagh 3. 7. Jan. 1641.

Martha Culme, inter cœt. depoſeth, that one Art. Mac Patrick, Mac Toole Boy, Mac Mahowne, ſpeaking to her in Iriſh, ſhe deſired him to deliver Monaghan 21. 14. Febr.

liver himself in English, for she understood not Irish: who answered her in English, That such as spoke in English, should pay ten shillings to the King: And the Deponent demanding of him, What King. He answered, What King but the Earl of Tyrone.

Monaghan. 16. 25. Jan. Hugh Culme, inter cœt. deposeth, that he was credibly told that Art. Mac Mahowne said, That they that spoke English should pay ten shillings to the King: The party to whom it was spoken, desiring to know what King. His answer was, What King but the Earl of Tyrone.

Fermanagh. 69. 29. Jan. Anne Gill, inter cœt. deposeth, that Rory Magwire in the presence of this Deponent, and a great many of her Neighbours, gave forth, That it was to no purpose for them to flee to Dublin for succour, for Dublin was taken by the Lord Magwire, who was to be King of Ireland.

Roger Puttock, John Sterne, Jo. Watson, Wil. Aldrich, Henry Brereton, William Hitchcock, Randall Adams.

An

An Extract of a Letter written 4. January. 1641.

From *Iſidores* Colledge in *Rome*, by *Bonaventure O Connye*, to *Feylmi Roe O Neill* in *Ireland*.

THe holy Father and his two Nephewes, Cardinall *Anthony Barbarinus* Protector of *Ireland*, and Cardinall *Francis Barbarinus*, who hath all the power here in ſuch matters as concern the Pope, have heard of the War and Confederation which you make for your Religion and Libertie: And truly I cannot expreſſe the greatneſſe of the Joy (no wonder) which they conceive thence, in ſuch manner, that if they had received Letters, or if you had ſent an Agent unto them to expreſſe your Will or Deſignes, you ſhould want no help for your better proceedings. Wherefore I would have you

you to ſend ſome able man, with a Declaration of your Grievances in form of Law.

Be ſure to have a great heart, and make ſome chief head among you, but reſerve the Crown for *Con* his ſide the *Neills*. Remember the old ſlaverie wherein you have lived of long time, and the deſtruction which will generally come upon you, except you get the upper hand: You will prevail, if you joyn together as you ought, God ſend it. I would advize every chiefe Officer among you to have a Secretarie along with him to write a Diurnall of your paſſages, and overthrows, which your Enemies receive; which will redound much to your Glory. Spoil not the countrey for fear of Famine. I will not fail to write according as I ſhall hear from you. We would ſend unto you a Bull, after the form of the Bull which *Hugh Mac-Baron* got, if we had received your Letters. If the Church do well they will turn over the Election of Prelates there to the Nobilitie, and will give them Authoritie in that point.

FINIS.



ne va-
land on
ill od
er im-
d ill
he no
Ve
the
ct-
ney

EDWARD LITLETON,

Lord Keeper of the Great Seale of

ENGLAND,

And Lord Speaker in the Houſe of Peeres

Eſcape from the PARLIAMENT.

And his flight to the

KING

Now Reſident at YORK.

ALSO,

Sir THOMAS GARDINER the Recorder of London's Letter to his MAJESTIE.

WITH,

The *Parliament's* Meſſage to the Lord *Savill*, the Lord *Seymor*, and the Lord *Rich*, *&c.* who attend his Majeſty at York, and their deniall to come to the Houſe of PEERES.

And Laſtly,

The Votes of the Houſe of *Commons*, paſſing upon the ſaid LORDS.

I. B. Clar. P.

London, Printed for *T. H.* 1642.

EDWARD LITTLETON,
Lord Keeper of the Great Seale of
ENGLAND.
And Lord Speaker in the House of Peers
Elect from the PARLIAMENT
And his Right to the
KING
Now Residens at YORK.

ALSO,
Sir THOMAS GARDINER the
Recorder of London's Letter to his
MAJESTIE.

WITH
The Parliament's Message to the Lord Savill,
the Lord Eyres, and the Lord Rich, &c. who
attend his Majesty at York, and their de-
nial to come to the House of
PEERES.

And Lastly,
The Votes of the House of Commons, passing upon
the said LORDS.

1. E. Cler. P.

London, Printed for T. N. 1642.

Edward Littleton, *Lord Keeper of the great Seale of England, his eſcape from the Parliament, and his flight to the King, now reſident at* York.

AMongſt all men, thoſe in Authority ought to be moſt cautious, and ought to carry themſelves circumſpective in the Function of their Offices, that no occaſion of ſuſpition may be at any time reflected on, for according to that oraculous ſentence,

Omne animi vitium, tanto conſpectius in ſe,
Crimen habet, quanto major, qui peccat, habetur.

Every vice of the mind maketh the crime more hainous and conſpicuous, by how much the more that perſon is eſteemed greater who offendeth. For he that is placed in Dignity, ought to be a Cynoſura, a Guide, and as it were a propitious Starre to direct others in the unqueſtionable path of the truth: but if theſe directions be contrary, and oppoſite to truth, it is a moſt deſpicable error, *Non tam quod ipſe peccat, ſed quod peccatum in alios diffundit*: not ſo much that he doth offend himſelfe, but that he diffuſeth the offence committed to many other, who are taught by his example to offend. I accuſe no man, but deſire, and do heartily wiſh, that all Men, who are exalted to ſuch ſuper-eminece, may be ſo indubitable in their lives, and the reall execution of their offices. *John*,

Lord *Finch*, Lord Keeper of the great Seale before, being found very culpable in many things, and being guilty of many impoſitions and grievous taxes on the Subjects, was voted a Delinquent, but he eſcaped in a diſguiſed habit, and fled beyond Sea. Then the Parliament giving great approbation to the Lord *Littleton* of his ſufficiency, immediately choſe him Lord Keeper, and ſpeaker of the Houſe of Peeres, who ſucceeded *Finch*, and continued (as appeared by publike ſilence) unqueſtionable in that place. Till of late his Majeſty ſent ſome expreſſe orders to him, That he ſhould give out Writs for the removing the Terme to Yorke, and to ſubſcribe the great Seale of England to ſome other ſtrange things: which the Parliament conceiving to be diſadvantagious, and prejudiciall to the generall good of the Kingdome; contrarily ordered, That he ſhould neither give out any Writs, or ſubſcribe any Seale, not knowing the dangerous conſequence that might enſue thereby. Then his Majeſty being highly incenſed, threatned to turne him out of his place, if he did not obey his commands, which if he had performed, he had not poſſibly eſcaped the Parliaments cenſure. And being thus variouſly diſtracted, his fancy guided ſometime with the ſmiling Winde of Hope, another time toſſed with the impetuous Tempeſt of Feare; he at length intended to eſtabliſh ſome reſolution in his minde, and taking the broad Seale along with him, he eſcaped from the Parliament the 25 day of this Moneth, and fled for protection to his Majeſty now reſiding at Yorke. But Poſts, and the Purſevants of the Houſe being ſent after him, he went above

twenty

twenty miles wide, that so he might not be traced and overtaken. Notwithstanding, some conceive the cause of his flight was of more impendent consequence, That there were some Articles, wherein he was highly impeached to have been delivered against him: other report, That it was for certaine words spoken in the Kings behalfe against the Parliament; but the truth and certainety hereof is somewhat dubious; and without question the sure ground of his departure will be shortly published by the Parliament.

Sr *Thomas Gardiner* Recorder of the City of London, being greatly attached of Articles of high Consequence, and being conscious of the same, knew not how to purge himselfe, either from the imputation of that high Impeachment, or avoid the imminent censure, which he supposed would be suddenly granted by the Parliament. Wherefore to secure himselfe from Imprisonment, or the suspition of any future danger, he without detraction of time, or procrastination of intention, sent a Letter the same day, that the Lord Keeper fled to York, for the protection of his Majesty.

The Lord *Savill*, the Lord *Seymer*, the Lord *Rich*, &c. by the command of the King, went to Yorke, without either the assent or consent of the House of Peeres. Wherefore they were incontinently sent for by speciall order from the Parliament, to attend the House, whereof they were members, and ought not to absent themselves upon no occasion whatsoever,

without

without the Houſes leave, eſpecially at this time, they having ſuch weighty and ſerious matters of State in hand, and the great affaires of the Kingdome, being ſo dangerous withall. But the Houſes received intelligence, and certaine Information from Yorke, from the Committee ſitting there, that theſe Noblemen were refractory to their Meſſage, & denied abſolutely to come, ſaying confidently, That they were bound by the Oath of Allegiance to attend and obey his Majeſty: and having received his ſpeciall command therefore, dare not preſume to returne without his Majeſties leave. But although they refuſe, rather to attend the King, then the Parliament, whoſe members they are, and ought not therefore either to abſent themſelves without the Houſes conſent, or ſtay from them when as they ſend ſpeciall Order for their appearance; yet without doubt, the Parliament have authority to command them.

Wherefore the 23 day of this preſent Moneth, the Houſe of Commons being compleated, took into deliberate and mature conſideration, the abſolute denial of thoſe ſeverall Lords (aforenamed) ſent for to attend the Houſe. And after ſome ſerious debate thereon, they Voted them delinquents, and therefore worthy to be ſuſpended the Houſe: which Vote they ſent and acquainted the Lords with, by Meſſage, and deſired their aſcents, and concurrance therein: but they being greatly imployed, tooke longer time to conſider thereof.

May all Offendors and Delinquents whatſoever, who do meritoriouſly deſerve cenſure, ſuffer exemplary and condigne punishment according to their demerits,

ties, without partiality or connivance. May the King and his Parliament concurre and agree, that no occasion of danger or difference, that no suspition of Feare or jealousie may be fomented between either of them: May the manifold distractions of this Kingdome be suddenly composed: May the bleeding wounds of Ireland be forthwith healed: May the *Militia* of this Kingdome be put into a sudden posture of defence, that so we may be armed either to withstand any unexpected Insurrection of Intestine or Domesticke Foes, or the Opposition of any forraigne Enemy whatsoever. And lastly, May the disserted Church be settled in a true Reformation, correspondent to the Word of God; and that Faction and Schisme may be rooted out amongst us, to the glory of God, and the secure prosperity of all Brittaine.

FINIS.

FINIS

5

A WONDERFULL DISCOVERIE OF A TERRIBLE PLOT AGAINST HUTL:

By the Deſignes of the Lord *DIGBY*, many Papiſts, and others, of the malignant Party.

Declaring the manner how the two Ships loaden with great ſtore of Ammunition of Armes, came under a pretended colour of Merchants Ships from the Indies, and how they would have executed their PLOT that Night againſt HULL.

Alſo how by the providence of God, they were Diſcovered and Apprehended.

Laſtly, the true Relation, how five Men in diſguiſe would have entred into Hull, as being a Committee appointed by the *Parliament* to ſit at YORK.

Having 100 Horſe, and 500 Foot lying in Ambuſh, to have ſeized upon the Towne as ſoon as the Gates had beene Opened.

With Iriſh Depoſitions by His Majeſties Commiſſion. And an Extract of a Letter ſent from *Iſidores Coll.* in *Rome*, 4. January 1641.

London, Printed for *Thomas Powell*, 1642.

THE Diſcovery of a Terrible PLOT Againſt HULL, BY The Aſſignes of the Lord DIGBY, many Papiſts, and others of the malignant Party.

EVer ſince Sir *John Hotham*, excluded the King from His Majeſties intended entrance into Hull, there hath beene an inteſtine grudge againſt the ſaid Act: the King affirming it to be no leſſe

leſſe then Treaſon againſt His Royall Perſon, to repell Him from His owne poſſeſſions, and an high and unheard of affront to His Majeſty. But the Parliament unanimouſly voted to the contrary, and confirmed that Act, but as a faithfull ſervice performed by the commands of Both Houſes of Parliament; and it would perſpicuouſly appeare in the face of the World, ſo farre diſtant from the ſuppoſitory Impeachment of Treaſon, that it would rather be commonly aſſerted an Act of Loyalty to His Majeſty, and accommodation to the whole Kingdome. Theſe words it ſeems could not be digeſted by the ſwelling and angry Stomackes of the Papiſts and others of the malignant party. And the Lord *Digby* underſtanding the truth hereof was much incenſed, and being with a ſeeming indignity exaſperated, confirmed his reſolution to vindicate the ſame (if by any politique ſtratagem it could be circumvented.) The Plot

Was

was as nefarious, as prodigious, as dangerous, as ſuſpitious, that they had clancularly intended againſt Hull; Two Ships laden with ſtrong proviſion of Armes, and other Ammunition, came by the Sea, under a pretended colour of Merchants Ships from the Indies, and the like: and they had alſo Spices and other things in the Ship, that their Plot might be concealed, and detected the better and with more oppertunity: and being ſearched, they had not ſuſpected any thing, but that by great chance they perceived a Barrell or two of Powder, and making farther ſearch in the ſaid Ships, they found great ſtore of Ammunition of Armes, which they intended to have had executed at Night againſt Hull, if they had not been prevented: but they were apprehended immediately, and carried before the Mayor of Hull, who committed them to ſafe cuſtody. Then beſides, theſe 5 Papiſts went under a diſguiſed color of a Comittee at York, appointed

pointed by the Parliament to ſit there; and under pretence alſo, that being threatned Impriſonment by his Majeſty, they were conſtrained to fly thither for ſecurity, and therefore deſired them to open the Gates for them. But a Parliament man that was in Hull, viewing them, denied them to be Parliament men; whereupon they fled immediately, otherwiſe they had been apprehended. There was 100 Horſe, and 300 Foot lying in Ambuſh thereabouts: and if the Gates had been but once opened, they would immediately have aſſaulted the Towne. But God of his infinite mercy be prayſed and glorified, who hath diſcovered all the Plots of thoſe that intend evill, and my prayers ſhall for ever continue, that he may alwaies diſcover the ſame.

FINIS

An Abſtract of the Depoſitions by vertue of His Majeſties Commiſſion, taken upon Oath, concerning the Traiterous intention of the Rebels.

Irlagh O Gowne a Papiſt Prieſt reſuſeth the Government of the Engliſh. *Brian O Cormacke* ſaith, That he will never ſubmit to any Engliſh Man. *Colegh Mac Brian Mac Mahowne*, and other Rebels ſaid, That they would not be ſubject to any Parliaments in England. *Peter Bath* ſaid, That they looked to have the King put out the words, *Defender of the Faith*, whereof the Pope was ſupreme. *Lake Birne* ſaid, Their Religion ſhould flouriſh no thanks to the King. *John Good* and *Dermot Mac Phelmi* ſaid, That they hoped to have all Proteſtants hanged within one fortnight. *Rory Magwire, Richard Nugent, Donogh Magwire* ſaid That they had a King of their own in Ireland, and regarded not King *Charles*, &c. And that *Phellomy Roe* of *Neale*, ſhould be their King: Others, That the Earle of *Tyrone*, and ſome, that the Lord *Magwire* ſhould be King of Ireland.

Roger Puttocke, John Sterne, John Watſon Will. Aldrich, Henry Brereton, Will. Hitchcock, Randall Adams.

An Extract of a Letter written 4 *January*, 1641.
From *Iſidores* Colledge in *Rome*, by *Bonaventure O Connye*, to *Feylmi Roe O Neill* in *Ireland*.

THe Holy Father, Cardinall Anthony Barbarinus *and Cardinall* Francis Barbarinus, *the Popes Agents in Ireland, are glad of the War which you make for your Religion and Liberty, and if they knew your deſignes, by Declaration of your grievances, you ſhould want no help for your better proceedings. Make ſome chiefe Head among you, but reſerve the Crowne for* Con *his ſide the* Neills. *Get the upper hand, elſe much deſtruction will follow. Write Diurnals of your paſſages, and overthrowes, which your enemies receive. Spoile not the Country for feare of Famine. We will ſend you a Bull after the forme of the Bull, which* Hugh Mac-Baron *got, If the Church doe well, they will turn over the Election of Prelats there to the Nobility, and will give them Authority in that point.*

FINIS.

pointed by the Parliament to sit there; and under pretence also, that being threatned Imprisonment by his Majesty, they were constrained to fly thither for security, and therefore desired them to open the Gates for them. But a Parliament man that was in Hull, viewing them, denied them to be Parliament men; whereupon they fled immediately, otherwise they had been apprehended. There was 100 Horse, and 300 Foot lying in Ambush thereabouts: and if the Gates had been but once opened, they would immediately have assaulted the Towne. But God of his infinite mercy be prayed and glorified, who hath dis- that in- for ever discover

ORIGINAL

DEFECTIVE

An Abſtract of the Depoſitions by vertue of His Majeſties Commiſſion, taken upon Oath, concerning the Traiterous intention of the Rebels.

TIrlagh O Gowne a Papiſt Prieſt refuſeth the Government of the Engliſh. *Brian O Cornacke* ſaith, That he will never ſubmit to any Engliſh Man. *Colagh Mac Brian, Mac Mahowne*, and other Rebels ſaid, That they would not be ſubject to any Parliaments in England. *Peter Bath* ſaid, That they looked to have the King put out the words, *Defender of the Faith*, whereof the Pope was ſupreme. *Lake Birne* ſaid, Their Religion ſhould flouriſh no thanks to the King. *John Good* and *Dermot Mac Phelmi* ſaid, That they hoped to have all Proteſtants hanged within one fortnight. *Rory Magwire, Richard Nugent. Donogh Magwire* ſaid That they had a King of their own in Ireland, and regarded not King *Charles*, &c. And that *Phellomy Roe* of *Neale*, ſhould be their King: Others, That the Earle of *Tyrone*, and ſome, that the Lord *Magwire* ſhould be King of Ireland.

Roger Puttocke, John Sterne, John Watſon Will. Aldrich, Henry Brereton, Will. Hitchcock, Randall Adams.

An Extract of a Letter written 4 *January* 1641.
From *Iſidores* Colledge in *Rome*, by *Bonaventure O Connye*, to *Feylmi Roe O Neill* in *Ireland*.

THe Holy Father, Cardinall Anthony Barbarinus *and Cardinall* Francis Barbarinus, *the Popes Agents in Ireland, are glad of the War which you make for your Religion and Liberty, and if they knew your deſignes, by Declaration of your grievances, you ſhould want no help for your better proceedings. Make ſome chiefe Head among you, but reſerve the Crowne for* Con *his ſide the* Neills. *Get the upper hand, elſe much deſtruction will follow. Write Diurnals of your paſſages, and overthrowes, which your enemies receive. Spoile not the Country for feare of Famine. We will ſend you a Bull, after the forme of the Bull, which* Hugh Mac-Baron *got, If the Church doe well, they will turn over the Election of Prelats there to the Nobility, and will give them Authority in that point.*

FINIS.



7

His Majesties
ANSWER
TO THE
PETITION
AND
Three Votes of *Parliament*,

Presented to Him at *York*, *May* 23. 1642.
Concerning the disbanding of His
Majesties Guard.

Published together by His Majesties Command.

LONDON:
Printed by Robert Barker, Printer to
the Kings most Excellent Majestie: And by
the Assignes of John Bill.
MDCXLII.

To the Kings most Excellent Majestie

The humble Petition of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament.

YOur Majesties loyall Subjects, the Lords and Commons in this Parliament, do humbly represent unto Your Majestie, that notwithstanding Your frequent professions to Your Parliament, and the Kingdom, and the late expression in Your Answer of the 13. of *May*, to the Petition of the County of *York*, that Your desire and intention is onely the preserving of the true Protestant Profession, the Lawes of the Land, the Liberties of Your people, & the peace of the Kingdom; Nevertheless, with great grief, we perceive by Your Speech of the 12 of *May*, and the Paper printed in Your Majesties Name in the form of a Proclamation, bearing date the 14 of *May*, and other evidences, that under colour of raising a Guard to secure Your Person, of which Guard (considering the fidelity and care of Your Parliament) there can be no use, Your Majestie doth command Troops both of Horse and Foot to assemble at *York*, the very beginnings whereof were apprehended by the inhabitants of that County to be an affrightment and disturbance of Your Majesties liege people, as appeares by their Petition presented to Your Majestie; the continuing and increase of which Forces is to Your Parliament, and must needs be a just cause of great Jealousie and danger to your whole Kingdom.

Therefore we do humbly beseech Your Majestie to disband all such forces as by Your command are assem-

bled, and relying for Your ſecurity (as your Predeceſſours have done) upon the Lawes and the affections of Your people, You will be pleaſed to deſiſt from any further deſignes of this nature, contenting Your Self with Your uſual and ordinary Guards; otherwiſe we ſhall hold our ſelves bound in duty towards God, & the truſt repoſed in us by the people, and the fundamentall Lawes and Conſtitutions of this Kingdom, to imploy our care and utmoſt power to ſecure the Parliament, and to preſerve the peace and quiet of the Kingdome.

Die Veneris 20. Maii. 1642.

Reſolved upon the Queſtion.

I. THat it appears, That the King (ſeduced by wicked Counſell) intends to make War againſt the Parliament, who (in all their conſultations and actions) have propoſed no other end unto themſelves, but the care of His Kingdoms, and the performance of all duty and loyaltie to His Perſon.

II. *Reſolved, &c.* That whenſoever the King maketh War upon the Parliament, it is a breach of the truſt repoſed in Him by His people, contrary to His Oath, and tending to the diſſolution of this Government.

III. *Reſolved, &c.* That whoſoever ſhall ſerve or aſſiſt Him in ſuch Wars, are Traitours by the Fundamentall Lawes of this Kingdom, and have been ſo adjudged by
11. R 2. two Acts of Parliament, and ought to ſuffer as Traitors.
1. H. 4.

Ioh. Browne Cler. Parliament.

His

His Maieſties ANSWER.

WE cannot but extreamly wonder that the cauſleſſe Jealouſies concerning Us, raiſed and fomented by a Malignant Partie in this Kingdom, which deſires nothing more then to ſnatch to themſelves particular advantages out of a generall combuſtion (which means of advantage ſhall never be miniſtred to them by Our fault or ſeeking) ſhould not onely be able to ſeduce a weak Partie in this Our Kingdom, but ſeem to finde ſo much countenance even from both Houſes, as that Our raiſing of a Guard (without further Deſigne then for the ſafety of Our Perſon, an Action ſo Legall, in Manner ſo Peaceable, upon Cauſes ſo evident and neceſſary) ſhould not onely be looked upon and petitioned againſt by them, as a cauſe of Jealouſie, but declared to be the raiſing of a War againſt them, contrary to Our former profeſſions of Our care of Religion and Law. And We no leſſe wonder, that this Action of Ours ſhould be ſaid (in a very large expreſſion) to be apprehended by the Inhabitants of this Countrey as an affrightment and diſturbance to Our People, having been as well received here, as it is every where to be juſtified, and (we ſpeak now of the generall, not of a few

few ſeduced particulars) aſſiſted and ſped by this Countrey with that loyall Affection and Alacrity, as is a moſt excellent Example ſet to the reſt of the Kingdom, of the care of Our ſafetie upon all occaſions, and ſhall never be forgotten by Us, nor We hope by Our Poſterity; but ſhall be ever paid to them, in that which is the proper expreſſion of a Princes gratitude, a perpetuall vigilant care to govern them juſtly, and to preſerve the onely Rule by which they can be ſo governed, The Law of the Land. And We are confident, that if you were your ſelves eye-witneſſes, ye would ſo ſee the contrary, as to give little preſent thanks, and hereafter little credit to your Informers, and if you have no better intelligence of the inclinations and affections of the reſt of the Kingdom, certainly the mindes of Our People (which to ſome ends and purpoſes you repreſent) are but ill repreſented unto you.

Have you ſo many Moneths together not contented your ſelves to relie for Security (as your Predeceſſours have done) upon the Affection of the People, but by your own ſingle authority raiſed to your ſelves a Guard (and that ſometimes of no ordinary numbers, and in no ordinary way) and could not all thoſe Pikes and Proteſtations, that Army on one ſide, and that Navie on the other, perſwade Us to command you to disband your Forces, & to content your ſelves with your ordinary (that is, no) Guard, or work Us in an opinion that you appeared to leavie War againſt Us, or had any further Deſigne? And is it poſſible that the ſame perſons ſhould be ſo apt to ſuſpect and condemn Us, who have been ſo unapt in the ſame matter (upon much more ground) to tax or ſuſpect them? This is Our Caſe; Notwithſtanding the care and fidelity of Our Parliament, Our Fort is kept by armed men againſt Us, Our proper goods firſt detained from Us, and then contrary to Our Command, by ſtrong hand, offered to be carried away (in which at once all Our property as a private Perſon, all Our Authority as a King, are wreſted from Us) And yet for Us to ſecure Our Self in a Legall way (that Sir *Io. Hotham* may not by the ſame Forces, or by more raiſed by pretence of the ſame Authority (for they ſay he raiſeth daily ſome, & We know it no new thing ſo. him to pretend Orders that he cannot

ſhew)

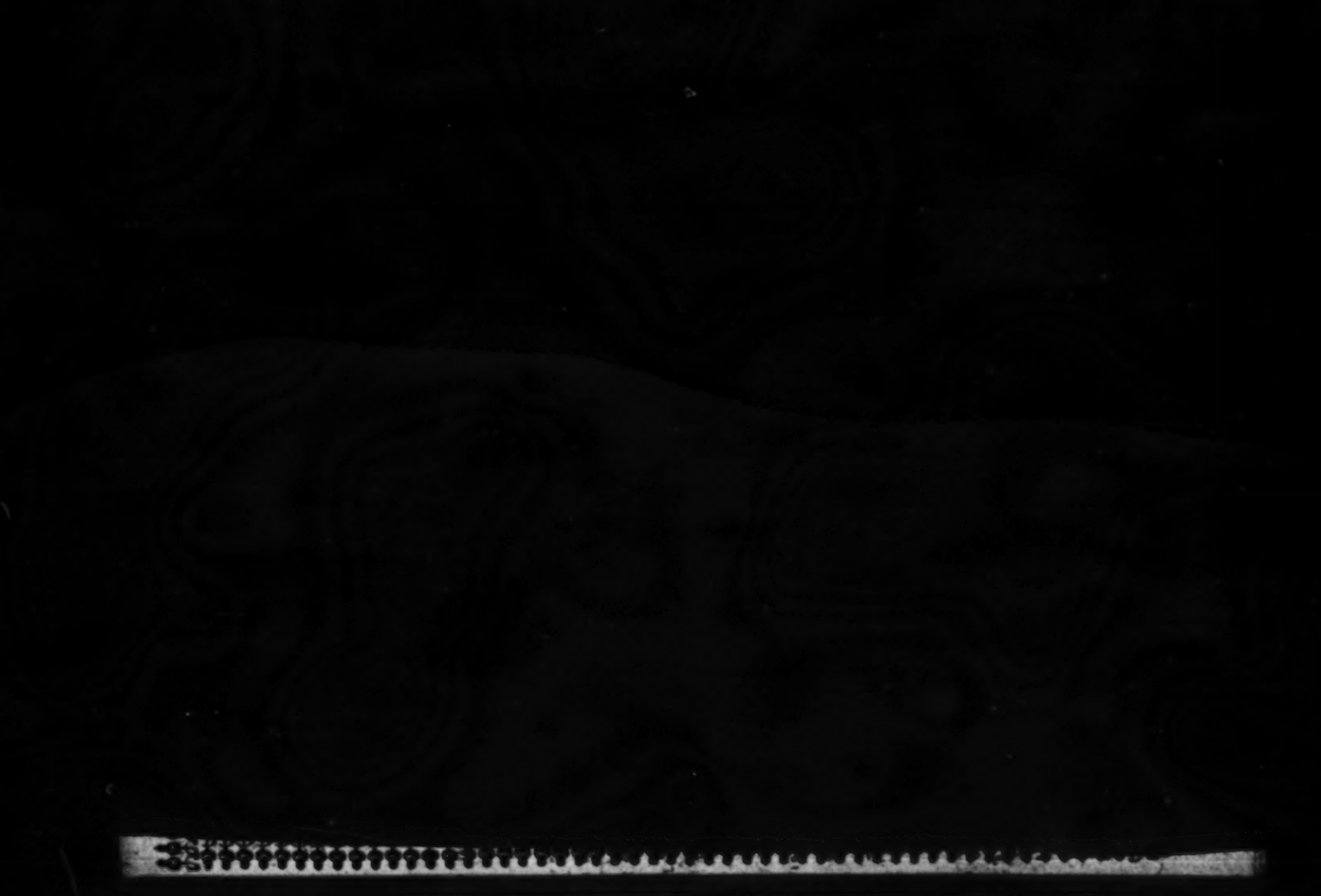
ſhew) continue the War that he hath leavied againſt Us, and as well imprison Our Perſon, as detain Our goods, and as well ſhut Us up in *York*, as ſhut Us out of *Hull*) is ſaid to be eſteemed a cauſe of great Jealouſie to the Parliament, a raiſing War againſt them, and of danger to the whole Kingdom: while theſe Injuſtices and Indignities offered to Us, are countenanced by them who ought to be moſt forward in Our Vindication and their puniſhment, in obſervation of their Oaths and of the truſt repoſed in them by the People, and to avoid the Diſſolution of the preſent Government: Upon which Caſe the whole world is to judge, whether We had not reaſon, not wholly to rely upon the Care and Fidelity of Our Parliament, being ſo ſtrangely blinded by Malignant Spirits, as not to perceive Our Injuries, but to take ſome care of Our Own Perſon, and in Order to that, to make uſe of that Authority which the Laws declare to be in Us: And whether this Petition, with ſuch a threatning concluſion, accompanied with more threatning Votes, gives Us not cauſe rather to increaſe then diminiſh Our Guards, eſpecially ſince We ſaw before the Petition a Printed Paper dated the 17. of *May*, underwritten *Hen. Elſing, Cler. Domus Com.* commanding (in the name of both Lords and Commons) the Sheriffs of all Our Counties, to raiſe the Power of all thoſe Our Counties to ſuppreſſe ſuch of Our Subjects, as by any of Our Commands ſhall be drawn together, and put (as that Paper calls it) in a Poſture of War, charging Our Officers and Subjects to aſſiſt them in the performance thereof at their Perils: For though We cannot ſuſpect that this Paper (or any bare Votes not grounded upon Law or Reaſon, or quotations of repealed Statutes) ſhould have any ill influence upon Our good People, who know their duties too well, not to know that to take up Arms againſt thoſe, who upon a Legall Command (that is, Ours) come together to a moſt Legall end, (that is, Our ſecuritie and preſervation) were to leavie war againſt Us, and who appear in this County) and We are confident they are ſo thorowout the Kingdom) no leſſe ſatisfied with the Legality, Conveniency, and Neceſſity of theſe Our Guards, and no leſſe ſenſible of the indignities and dangers (which makes it

neceſ-

neceſſary.) then We are Our Self; yet if that Paper be really the Act of both Houſes, We cannot look upon it but as the higheſt of ſcorns & indignities; Firſt to iſſue Commands of Force againſt Us, and after thoſe have appeared uſeleſſe, to offer by Petition to perſwade Us to that which that Force ſhould have effected.

We conclude this Anſwer to your Petition with Our counſell to you, That you joyn with Us in exacting ſatisfaction for that unparaleld, and yet unpuniſhed Action of Sir *John Hotham*; And that you command Our Fort and Goods to be returned to Our own hands, That you lay down all pretences (under pretence of neceſſity, or declaring what is Law) to make Laws without Us, and, by conſequence, but a Cypher of Us, That you declare effectually againſt Tumults, and call in ſuch Pamphlets (puniſhing the Authors and Publiſhers of them) as ſeditiouſly endeavour to diſable Us from protecting Our People, by weakning, by falſe aſperſions, and new falſe Doctrines, Our Authority with them, and their Confidence in Us: The particulars of which Tumults and Pamphlets We would (long ſince) have taken care that Our learned Councell ſhould have been enabled to give in evidence, if, upon Our former Offer We had received any return of incouragement from you in it. And if you do this, you then (and hardly till then) will perſwade the world, that you have diſcharged your duty to God, the truſt repoſed in you by the people, and the Fundamentall Laws and Conſtitutions of the Kingdom, and imployed your care and utmoſt power to ſecure the Parliament, (for We are ſtill a part of the Parliament, and ſhall be till this well founded Monarchy be turned to a Democracy) and to preſerve the Peace and Quiet of the Kingdom, which together with the defence of the Proteſtant Profeſſion, The Laws of the Land, and Our own juſt Prerogative, (as a part of, and a defence to thoſe Laws) have been the main end, which in Our Conſultations and Actions We propoſed to Our Self.

FINIS.



K. England: L. & C. 8

VOTES

OF BOTH

Houses of Parliament:

With sundry *Articles*, or *Acts* of Parliament to confirme the same.

Taken out of the Records of the Tower.

Also, Two Orders of both Houses of PARLIAMENT:

The one, To all High Sheriffes, Justices of the peace, and other Officers, within 150. Miles of the City of YORKE:

The other, In particular to the high Sheriffs, Justices of the peace, and other Officers within the County of *Lancaster*. In generall, to all the Counties of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*.

Die Sabbathi 28. *Maii* 1642.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that these Votes with the Articles be forthwith printed and published.

Io. Browne Clerk. Parliamentorum.

LONDON,

Printed by *E. Griffin*, for *Cristopher Latham*. 1642

Die Veneris 20. Maii, 1642.

Reſolved upon the Queſtion, by the Lords and Commons, &c.

THat it appeares that the King (ſeduced by wicked Counſell) intends to make warre againſt the Parliament, who (in all their conſultations and actions) have propoſed no other end unto themſelves but the care of his Kingdoms, and the performance of all duty and loyalty to his perſon.

Reſolved, &c.

That whenſoever the King maketh warre upon the Parliament, it is a breach of the truſt repoſed in him by his people, contrary to his oath, and tending to the diſſolution of this government.

Reſolved, &c.

That whoſoever ſhall ſerve or aſſiſt him in ſuch warres, are Traitours, by the fundamentall Laws of this Kingdom; and have been ſo adjudged by two Acts of Parliament.

Out

Out of the *Roll* of the *Parliament* held at Weſtminſter, 11 R. 2.

ITem, by the ſaid encroachment, the aforeſaid *Alexander* Arch-biſhop of Yorke, *Robert de Vere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la Poole* Earle of Suffolke, *Robert Treſſilian* falſe Juſtice, and *Nichol. Brembre* falſe Knight of London, have done that, whereas at the laſt Parliament, all the Lords and other Wiſe men and Commons there aſſembled, ſeeing the loſſe of the King and his kingdome eminent, as well for the perils and miſchiefs aforeſaid, as that the King was departed from the Counſell of the Kingdome, and hearkened wholly to the Counſell of the aforeſaid malefactors and traytors, as alſo becauſe the French King with his Royall power was ſhipt upon the Sea, ready to have come into England to deſtroy the Kingdome, and the Engliſh tongue, and that no ordinance nor government was then eſtabliſhed for the ſafety of the King nor of the kingdome, they knew not other remedy thereupon, but remonſtrated unto the King at full, how that he was ill governed, counſelled, and carried away, by the aforeſaid traytors and malefactors, declaring unto him their wicked conditions, and required him moſt humbly as his loyall ſubjects for the ſafety of him, and of his whole kingdome, and for the avoiding of the perils aforeſaid, to let go and put from him the aforeſaid malefactours and traytours out of his preſence and company, and that he would not do hereafter according to their wicked counſels, but that he would follow the wiſe, loyall, and diſcreet men of the kingdom, and thereupon the ſaid traytors and malefactors, ſeeing this good and honourable opinion of the Parliament, and to diſturbe their good purpoſe therein, by their falſe counſell cauſed our Lord the King to command the Major of London to cauſe a great power of the people of London to be ſuddenly levied, for to kill and put to death all the ſaid Lords and Commons, excepting only ſuch as were of their party, at the doing of which wicked act, the ſaid great malefactors and traitors ſhould have been parties, & preſent to the deſtruction of the King and all his Realme.

Article 29. *Item*, For to accompliſh this high treaſon aforeſaid by their councell, the aforeſaid *Alexander* Archbiſhop of Yorke, *Robert Vere* Duke of Ireland, and *Michael de la pole* Earle of Suffolke, cauſed

the King to ſend his Letters of Credence to his adverſary the *French King*: ſome by one *Nicholas Southwell*, Groome of his Chamber, and ſome by other perſons of meane fortune, as well Aliens as Denizens, requiring and praying the ſaid French King, that with his power and Counſell he would be aiding and aſſiſting to our Lord the King to deſtroy and put to death the ſaid Lords, and other Engliſh, which the King then held his enemies and traytors, as before, to the great diſquiet and trouble of his whole kingdome.

Article 30. *Item*, The aforeſaid *Alexander* Archbiſhop of Yorke, *Robert de Veere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la Poole* Earle of Suffolke, encroaching unto themſelves Royall Power, cauſed the King to promiſe unto the French King, by his ſaid Letters and Meſſages, for to obtaine aide and aſſiſtance from the French King, and his power, for to accompliſh that high treaſon, prodition, and murder, to give and ſurrender unto the ſaid French King the Towne and Caſtle of Calis, and all other Caſtles and Forts in the March of Picardy and Artoys, the Caſtles and Townes of Chirlurge, and of Brerte, to the great diſhonour, trouble and dammage of the King and of his Kingdome.

Article 37. *Item*, the aforeſaide *Alexander* Archbiſhop of Yorke, *Robert de Vere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la poole* Earle of Suffolke, *Robert Treſilian* falſe Juſtice, and *Nicholas Brembre* falſe Knight of London, malefactors and Traytors, during the time of the ſaid protection, to the overthrowing of the ſaid appeale, falſely Counſelled, and cauſed the King to command by his letters, divers Knights, Eſquires, his Sheriffes, and others his officers of divers Counties, to raiſe and aſſemble all the power that they could to come with the ſaid Duke of Ireland, againſt the aforeſaid other Lords Appellants, ſuddainely to make warre againſt them and deſtroy them.

Article 38. *Item*, During the time of the ſaid protection, the aforeſaid *Robert de veere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la poole* Earel of Suffolke, *Alexander* Archbiſhop of Yorke, *Nicholas Brembre* falſe Knight of London, cauſed the King by his Letters, to ſignifie to the ſaid Duke of Ireland, how that he and others were appealed of treaſon by the ſaid *Thomas* Duke of Gloceſter Conſtable of England, *Richard* Earle of *Arundell* and *Surry*, and *Thomas* Earle of *Warwick*, and how that the King had thereupon given day to the ſaid parties, untill the next Parliament, and how hee had taken both parties, with their men, goods and Chattells, into his ſpeciall protection, and beſides it was contained in the ſaid letters of the King, that if the ſaid Duke had ſufficient power, he ſhould not faile to come on with all his aforeſaid power, and to come to the King;

and

and soone after they procured the King, to write unto the said Duke of Ireland, that he should take the field, with all his power, which he could gather together, and that the King would meet him withall his power, and that the King would with him put in hazard his Royall person; and that the King was in great danger himselfe and his whole kingdome if he were not helped and succoured by the said Duke of Ireland, And that the Duke of Ireland should make knowne this unto all the men that were assembled unto him; and that the King would pay all the wages, and charges of the said Duke of Ireland, and of all the men assembled by him, by vertue of which letters, and the malicious and Traytorous exitations as well of the said Duke, as of his Adherents and all the other malefactors and Traytors, the said Duke of Ireland assembled a great number of men at Armes and Archers, as well the Counties of Lancaster, Chester, and Wales, as of other places of the Kingdome, to destroy, and to put to death the aforesaid Lords, and all others which were assenting to the making of the said Ordinance, Statute and Commission, unto the destruction of the King, and his Kingdome.

Article 39. *Item*, the said *Robert de vere* Duke of Ireland, false traytore to the King and Kingdome, assembled a great power of men at Armes, and Archers of the Counties of Lancaster, Chester, and Wales, and of divers other places, to the intent to have trayterously destroyed so farre as in him lay, the Lords *Thomas* Duke of Glocester Constable of England, *Henry* Earle of Derby, *Richard* Earle of Arundell and Surrey, *Thomas* Earle of Warwick, and *Thomas* Earle Marshall, and other Loyall Subjects of our Lord the King, as well to the destruction and annihilation of our Lord the King and of his whole kingdome; and so he rid with great power and force of men at Armes, and Archers, from the County of Chester through the Kingdome, till he came neere to a certaine place, which place is called Rotcotbridge, neere to Cotswold, inchroaching to himselfe Royall power, caused the banner of the King to be displayed in his company, contrary to the dignity of the King and of his Crowne, at which time the said Duke of Ireland and his company, were by the grace of God, disappointed of their wicked purpose.

Memorand. That the same Roll containing the Petition of the aforesaid appeale distinguished by Articles as above by quotation is marked, was delivered in the present Parliament, by the aforesaid Duke, and Earles appellants; & *Memorand*, that afterwards in the same Parliament, the 1. 2. 11. 15. 17. Articles aforesaid are declared, and adjudged treason, and every one of them is declared and adjudged treason, And that that which is contained in the 22. Article of the aforesaid Articles concerning the levying of men, to make warre and destroy the

the King to send his Letters of Credence to his adversary the *French King*: some by one *Nicholas Southwell*, Groome of his Chamber, and some by other persons of meane fortune, as well Aliens as Denizens, requiring and praying the said French King, that with his power and Counsell he would be aiding and assisting to our Lord the King to destroy and put to death the said Lords, and other English, which the King then held his enemies and traytors, as before, to the great disquiet and trouble of his whole kingdome.

Article 30. *Item*, The aforesaid *Alexander* Archbishop of Yorke, *Robert de Veere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la poole* Earle of Suffolke, encroaching unto themselves Royall Power, caused the King to promise unto the French King, by his said Letters and Messages, for to obtaine aide and assistance from the French King, and his power, for to accomplish that high treason, prodition, and murder, to give and surrender unto the said French King the Towne and Castle of Calis, and all other Castles and Forts in the March of Picardy and Artoys, the Castles and Townes of Chirlurge, and of Brerte, to the great dishonour, trouble, and dammage of the King and of his Kingdome.

Article 37. *Item*, the aforesaide *Alexander* Archbishop of Yorke, *Robert de Vere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la poole* Earle of Suffolke, *Robert Trelfillian* false Justice, and *Nicholas Brembre* false Knight of London, malefactors and Traytors, during the time of the said protection, to the overthrowing of the said appeale, falsely Counselled, and caused the King to command by his letters, divers Knights, Esquires, his Sheriffes, and others his officers of divers Counties, to raise and assemble all the power that they could to come with the said Duke of Ireland, against the aforesaid other Lords Appellants, suddainely to make warre against them and destroy them.

Article 38. *Item*, During the time of the said protection, the aforesaid *Robert de veere* Duke of Ireland, *Michael de la poole* Earel of Suffolke, *Alexander* Archbishop of Yorke, *Nicholas Brembre* false Knight of London, caused the King by his Letters, to signifie to the said Duke of Ireland, how that he and others were appealed of treason by the said *Thomas* Duke of Glocester Constable of England, *Richard* Earle of *Arundell* and *Surry*, and *Thomas* Earle of *Warwick*, and how that the King had thereupon given day to the said parties, untill the next Parliament, and how hee had taken both parties, with their men, goods and Chattells, into his speciall protection, and besides it was contained in the said letters of the *King*, that if the said Duke had sufficient power, he should not faile to come on with all his aforesaid power, and to come to the King;

and

and soone after they procured the King, to write unto the said Duke of Ireland, that he should take the field, with all his power, which he could gather together, and that the King would meet him withall his power, and that the King would with him put in hazard his Royall person; and that the King was in great danger himselfe and his whole kingdome if he were not helped and succoured by the said Duke of Ireland, And that the Duke of Ireland should make knowne this unto all the men that were assembled unto him; and that the King would pay all the wages, and charges of the said Duke of Ireland, and of all the men assembled by him, by vertue of which letters, and the malicious and Trayterous exitations as well of the said Duke, as of his Adherents and all the other malefactors and Traytors, the said Duke of Ireland assembled a great number of men at Armes and Archers, as well the Counties of Lancaster, Chester, and Wales, as of other places of the Kingdome, to destroy, and to put to death the aforesaid Lords, and all others which were assenting to the making of the said Ordinance, Statute and Commission, unto the destruction of the King, and his Kingdome.

Article 39. *Item*, the said *Robert de vere* Duke of Ireland, false traytore to the King and kingdome, assembled a great power of men at Armes, and Archers of the Counties of Lancaster, Chester, and Wales, and of divers other places, to the intent to have trayterously destroyed so farre as in him lay, the Lords *Thomas* Duke of Gloucester Constable of England, *Henry* Earle of Derby, *Richard* Earle of Arundell and Surrey, *Thomas* Earle of Warwick, and *Thomas* Earle Marshall, and other Loyall Subjects of our Lord the King, as well to the destruction and annihilation of our Lord the King and of his whole kingdome; and so he rid with great power and force of men at Armes, and Archers, from the County of Chester through the Kingdome, till he came neere to a certaine place, which place is called Rotcotbridge, neere to Cotswold, inchroaching to himselfe Royall power, caused the banner of the King to be displayed in his company, contrary to the dignity of the King and of his Crowne, at which time the said Duke of Ireland and his company, were by the grace of God, disappointed of their wicked purpose.

Memorand. That the same Roll containing the Petition of the aforesaid appeale distinguished by Articles as above by quotation is marked, was delivered in the present Parliament, by the aforesaid Duke, and Earles appellants; & *Memorand*, that afterwards in the same Parliament, the 1. 2. 11. 15. 17. Articles aforesaid are declared, and adjudged treason, and every one of them is declared and adjudged treason, And that that which is contained in the 22. Article of the aforesaid Articles concerning the levying of men, to make warre and destroy the

Lords and Lieges of the King is likewiſed declared and adjudged treaſon. And that the 28 29 30. 31. 32. 37. 38. 39. Articles aforeſaid are alſo declared and adjudged treaſon, and every one of them is declared and adjudged treaſon, as is ſet downe in the Record and the proceſſe annexed and affixed to this Roll on the back ſide of the ſaid Roll by theſe words *quelle petition levee in preſence du Roy ore dit Sr. &c.*

This judgement was confirmed by act of Parliament. 11. R. 2. Cap. 3. 1 *H.* 4. cap. 3. and 4. of the old printed ſtatutes, and the ſaid ſtatutes. *H.* 4. repeales and makes void the Parliament of 21. *R.* 2. and all the proceedings thereof, in which forc'd and tumultuary Parliament, the Acts of the Parliament of 11. *R.* 2. had beene reverſed.

Rot. Parl. 11. R. 2.

MEmorandum quod iſte idem Rotulus continens petitionem appelli ſupradicti per articulos diſtinctè prout ſuperius per quotationem annotatur liberatus fuit in præſenti Parliamento per prædict. Ducem & Comites appellantes; Et mem. quod poſtea in eodē Parliamento primus, ſecundus, undecimus, quintus decimus, & decimus ſeptimus articuli prædicti declarantur & adjudicantur Proditio; & eorum quilibet declaratur & adjudicatur proditio; & quod illud quod continetur in viceſſimo ſecundo articulo prædictarum articulorum tangens levationem gentium ad guerrand. & deſtruend. dominos & legeos legis ſimiliter declaratur & adjudicatur proditio: Et quod viceſſimus octavus, viceſſimus nonus, triceſſimus, triceſſimus primus, triceſſimus ſecundus, triceſſimus ſeptimus, triceſſimus octavus, & triceſſimus nonus articuli prædicti declarantur etiam & adjudicantur Proditio, & eorum quilibet declaratur & adjudicatur Proditio; prout annotatur in Recordo & proceſſu huic Rotul. conſutis & annexis. In dorſo Ejuſdem Rotuli per hæc verba. Quel le petition lui in preſence du roy noſtre dit Hanneres &c.

Cromat. per ſtatut. 1. H. 4. cap. 3. & 4. in the old printed ſtatutes.

Die

Die Veneris 27 Maii. 1642.

WHereas it appears to the Lords and Commons, that the King ſeduced by wicked Counſell, intends to make warre upon his Parliament. It is therefore Ordered by the Lords and Commons, that the High Sheriffes, and Juſtices of the Peace, and other Officers, within the ſame Counties, Cities, and Townes Corporate, ſituate within 150 Miles of the City of *Yorke*, ſhall forthwith take ſpeciall care for to make ſtay of all Armes, and Ammunition carrying towards *Yorke*, untill they have given notice thereof unto the Lords and Commons, and ſhall have received their further direction. And for the better affecting hereof, the ſaid High Sheriffes, Juſtices of the peace, and other officers, are further to take ſpeciall Care, that ſtrict watches be kept within their ſeverall limits, and juriſdictions, for the ſearching for, and ſeizing of, all ſuch Armes and Ammunition, as likewiſe for the apprehending all perſons going with the ſame.

Die

Die Sabbathi 28. *May*, 1642.

WHereas it appeares, that the King seduced by wicked Counsell, intends to make war against the Parliament, and under the color of a guard to secure his royall Person, doth command troops both of Horse and Foote to assemble at Yorke; All which is against the Lawes of the Kingdome, tending to the dissolution of the Parliament, and destruction of his people. It is therefore ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that the Sheriffes of the County of Lancaster, and all other Sheriffe of the Kingdome of England, & Dominion of Wales, shall by the power of that County, and of their severall Counties, respectively, suppresse the raising, and gromming together of any Souldiers, Horse or Foote, by any warrant, commission, or order from his Majesty, without the advise and consent of the Lords, and Commons in Parliament; And that all persons whatsoever doe forbeare to execute any such commission, or warrant for levying Souldiers, or gathering them together without consent of Parliament; And those who shall execute, or obey any such Commission, or warrant, are hereby declared to be disturbers of the peace of the Kingdome. And the Lord Lieutenant of the County of Lancaster, and all Lords Lieutenants of all other Counties in the Kingdome of England, or Dominion of Wales respectively, as likewise all deputy Lieutenants, Captaines and officers of the Trained Bands, and all Majors, Justices of peace, and other his Majesties loving Subiects, are hereby commanded, and required to be ayding, and assisting to the said Sheriffe of the County of Lancaster, and to the other Sheriffes of the other Counties of this Kingdome, and of the Dominion of Wales; And that his Majesties loving Subiects may the better understand what the Law, and their owne duty is in this behalfe, the said Sheriffe of Lancashire, and other Sheriffes of the other Counties of this Kingdome respectively, shall cause this present Order forthwith to be published in the severall Market Townes within their said Counties.

Sabbathi 28. *Maii*. 1642.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that these shall be forthwith Printed and published.

IO. BROWNE, *Cler. Parliamentorum*

FINIS.

TO THE MEMORY OF THOMAS HENEAGE ESQUIRE.

An Expostulation with DEATH.

Is there no remedy, must wise men dy
As well as fooles? hath perfect Piety
No priviledge beyond Impiety?
Impartiall Death, when will thy poysoned dart
Learne to distinguish 'twixt the Nobler part
Of living men, and those whose vulgar breath
Were farre a fitter sacrifice for death?
Why are the Stars immortall more than they?
They shine by night, these glister night and day.
Stars borrow all their light, but wisemen lend:
In each of them the world enjoyes a friend.
How is it then that senslesse creatures be
Exempted from this generall tyranny,
And fixt within their Orbs, survive to light
So many Worthies to eternall night?
Is it because Stars are above the Spheere,
Wherein thou art allow'd to domineere?
Or is thy arme too short, or wilt thou say
That night revives them that depart by day;
That every Even beholds a dying Sun,
And every Morn a Resurrection?
Oh happy world, if wise and vertuous men,
Since they must dy, might dy to live agen
After some houres like Sol, or with the Moon
After some dayes; if that be thought too soon,
That like the fragrant flowers they might appear
To beautifie the Earth but once a yeare;
Then happily we might our selves inure
His death with some more patience to endure,
Whose grace and wisedome did trascend by farre
The light and influence of the Morning Star.
But this vaine wish the Great and only Wise
Controller of the Universe denies,
And 'twill become us better, reverently
To mourne in silence, rather than reply.

The Epitaph.

HEre lies interr'd under this fatall Stone
A world of men epitomis'd in one.

London, printed for *Edward Blackmore*, 1642.

TO THE MEMORY OF THOMAS HENEAGE ESQUIRE.

An Expostulation with DEATH.

11

A Geographicall DESCRIPTION Of the Kingdom of IRELAND.

According to the 5 Provinces, and 32 Counties; together with the Stations, Creeks, and Harbours belonging thereto: fit for Gentlemen, Souldiers, and Sea-men to acquaint themselves withall.

As also
Declaring the Right and Titles of the Kings of *England* unto that Kingdom.

Likewise
Setting down a brief Relation of the former Rebellions, and of their suppression; especially that in Q. *Elizabeths* time by *Tyrone*: whence many matters worth observing may be collected, usefull for this present Service.

By a Well-willer to the peace of both Kingdoms.

London, Printed by *I. R.* for *Godfrey Emerson*, and are to be sold at his Shop, at the sign of the Swan in *Little-Britain*. 1642.

A Geographicall

DESCRIPTION

Of the Kingdom of

IRELAND.

According to the Provinces, and
Counties; together with the Seations,
Creeks, and Harbours belonging there-
to: As for Gentlemen, Souldiers,
and Sea-men to navigate them-
selves withall.

As also
Declaring the Rights and Titles of the Kings
of England unto that Kingdom.

Likewise
Setting down a brief Relation of
the former Rebellions, and of their Sup-
pression; especially that in Q. Elizabeths
time by Tyrone: whence many matters
worth observing may be collected &c.
full for this present Service.

By a Well-willer to the peace of both Kingdoms.

London, Printed by I. R. for Godfrey Emerson, and are to be sold
at his Shop, at the Sign of the Swan in Little-Britain. 1642.

To the Reader.

Courteous Reader,

MAny have lately caſt their Treaſure, do thou caſt thine Eye, upon diſtreſſed *Ireland*; 'twill be a way to ſhew thy Charity, without any great venture: Or if thou be in the number of Adventurers, when thou ſhalt have read this, thou wilt count thy

A part

part ensur'd. The Advantage, Knowledge, and Delight thou mayst reap by it, I referre to thine own apprehension and judgement; Assuring thee, thou need'st not fear to engage thy purse, in the survey of that Countrey, where so good a King was willing to engage His Person. Such is the engagement of

Thy Friend and
Well-wisher,
G. N.

A Geographicall DESCRIPTION Of the Kingdom of IRELAND.

BEing in the North of *England*, and desirous to passe into the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and not willing to go more Northward, although from *Galloway* in *Scotland*, (which *Bede* terms *Candida casa*, the Vulgar *white-herne*) there be but a short cut, yet more willing to go the neareſt way to *Weſtcheſter*; but not finding the winde fair at my coming, I travell'd along to Saint *Davis* in *Pembroke*-ſhire, whence I had a ſpeedy paſſage into *Ireland*, but ſomewhat dangerous, by reaſon of the ſands and ſhelves which lye off into the ſea, but our putting into harbour worſe, becauſe of the continuall miſts that hang over the low flat land, ſo that our Pilot could hardly diſcern his marks.

There are many fair Ports and Harbours for Ships, on the Eaſt and South ſides of what I ſhall ſpeak, in the Deſcription of the particular Counties.

Concerning the names of ſeverall Nations and Men, they have their ſeverall conceits, it is known by the name *Ireland* to us.

It is an ancient Iland, and not of little eſteem, in regard of the greatneſſe of it, being accounted the third Iland anciently known in the habitable world, by good Geographers, who ſay, That of all Ilands, for greatneſſe the Indian *Taprobane* is chief; the next after it, is *Britain*; and in a third degree, another Britiſh Iland, called *Hibernia*, that is, *Ireland*; ſo that *Ptolomie* called it *Little-Britain*: The ſituation is under the 10 and 12 Climats, in Longitude extending 4 Degrees from the Meridian of 11 Degrees and a half: And the Latitude reacheth 4 Degrees from the paralel of 54, to that of 58 Degrees.

The Inhabitants are divided by the name of Wilde-Iriſh, and the Engliſh Iriſh, living in the Engliſh Pale, where the Engliſh at their firſt going over did incloſe themſelves.

Formerly it was divided into 5 Kingdoms, now Provinces; namely *Mounſter*, lying Southward, *Lemſter* Eaſtward, *Connagh* in the Weſt, *Ulſter* in the North, and *Meth* in the midſt almoſt.

From North to South, in length 400 miles, in bredth 200 miles.

MOunſter, in Latine *Mamonia*, the Iriſh *Mown*, containeth 6 Countries, beſides the County of *Holy croſſe* in *Typperary*; the firſt is,

Kirry, which lyeth near the mouth of the River Shan-

Shannon, and runneth out narrow at the entrance, but towards the Sea, with a broader promontory imbraced by the Sea on both ſides.

A Countrey mountanous, woody and wild, loftily looking into the Ocean; in which are many fruitfull fields, and pleaſant vallyes, beſet thick with woods.

A County *Palatine* granted to the Earle of *Deſmond* by the ſpeciall favour of *Edward* the third; but being often ingratefull in their rebellious treaſons, and rebellions loſt it.

Towards the Sea there is a territory called *Clanmorris*; not farre off ſtandeth *Ardart* a See of a poor Biſhop called *Ardfert*.

Towards the South of this runneth a faire River named *Dingle*, a commodious Port on the other ſide named *Smirwick-ſound*, or St. *Marywick*, where the Spanyards to ayde the rebellious Earle of *Deſmond*, 1583. ſet footing.

Deſmond, *Deſmonia*, in Iriſh *Deſwown*; lyeth largely ſtretched out towards the South, in which are three high promontories over-topping the Sea, and contemning his proud waves, running out into the South-weſt, called weſt-*Mounſter*.

The firſt promontory lyeth between *Dingle-bay* and the River *Maire*, and is called *Clan-car*, and hath a Caſtle built at *Dunkeran* by the Carews of *England*, in it dwelt *Donel mac Carty more*, a Lord of the Iriſh bloud.

The ſecond lyeth incloſed within two bayes, *Maire* and *Bantre*, named *Bear*-haven.

This for the moſt part is a leane, barren, hungry ſoyle, in which lived *O Swillivant Beare*, and *O Swillivant Bantre*, both of the ſame ſtock and high bloud in their Countrey.

The third called *Eraugh* ſituate between *Bantre* and *Balatamore* or *Baltamore*, a bay or creeke famous for the multitude of Herrings that are taken there, in this the *O Mahoums* by the gift of the *Carews* have large poſſeſſions; the *Calveris* Lord *Baltimort* the South promontory called of the ancients *Notium*, is at this day called *Miſſen-head*, the *Feildings* are Earls of *Deſmond* and Vicounts *Callon*.

The County of *Corke*, anciently reputed a Kingdome, contayning the whole ſpace a long the Sea from *Liſmore* unto St. *Brend*, where it headeth *Deſmond* weſtward, in the bowells whereof lyeth *Muſkery*, a wild Forreſt, where *Cormac mac xeg*, it is a great name, and towards the Sea coaſt lyeth *Carkray*, in which the *mac Curties* have the greateſt power.

There lyeth towards the South Sea a Port and road anciently of good ſafegard for Shipps, but by reaſon of a barre in the mouth of it, it falls dry at the ebb, and is now of little uſe, it lyeth four leagues weſtward from the out-point of *Kinſale*.

Betweene *Roſſe* and *Kinſale* there lyeth a ſmall Iland in the Sea called *Roem*, which may be ſayled about, having ten fathome water between that and the mayne: three leagues from hence lieth *cape de velbo* or *Old-head*, from whence to *England* end is 46 leagues, it is a high point reaching forth into the Sea, from whence about a quarter of a league South-weſt lieth the mouth of the Haven of *Kinſale*: a very commodious Port, 10, and 15. fathome going in and 4 or 5 to the very towne which lieth up in the mouth of the river *Bany* in a fruitfull Soyle, furniſhed with wood, and other commodities: Lord *Courcy* is Baron of *Kinſale*.

On the other ſide of *Kinſale* lyeth *Kerry* wherry a ſmall

ſmall territory once belonging to the E. of *Deſmond*: right before which lyeth the river *Sauranus* or *Severanus* which fetcheth its firſt originall from the mountaine of *Muskerry*, and going along by the head city of the county *Corke* by the Iriſh *Corcach* honoured with a Biſhops See; together with the See of *Cluni* annexed to it.

The river both rounderh and runneth through the middeſt of the towne not paſsible, but by bridges lying in length in one broad ſtreet having a bridge over it.

It is a towne of great reſort and populous: but formerly ſubject to the injury of the Rebells; which made them keep a carefull watch againſt them. That religious and devout man *Brioc* who flouriſhed among the *Sauls* was borne and bred here.

Below *Corke* the parting of the river maketh a ſweet and pleaſant Iland over againſt the chiefe dwelling houſe of the *Barries*, called *Barry* Court, derived from *Robert de Barry* an Engliſhman; who behaved himſelfe valiantly in the Iriſh warres, and was the firſt that manned and brought the Hauke to hand in Ireland: he had the title of Baron *Barry*; but after of Vicount *Beutiphant*.

The former river empties into the Sea below *Barry* Court neare *Imokelly* a faire poſſeſsion long ſince of the Earles of *Deſmond*, and containes a ſafe road in the mouth of it.

As this ſupplyes the lower part of the country, ſo *Black-water*, called anciently *Even-more*, the great river moyſtneth the upper part, upon which dwelleth the Noble familie of *Roch*, who went out of England, and flouriſhed there and enjoyed the title of Vicount *Fermoy*: and were Parliament Barons in *Edward* the 2. time.

Tong-hall

Yoghall ſtandeth on this rivers mouth, a Major town, nor great, but walled about, builded in length, and divided into two parts, the upper reacheth Norweſt, and hath a Church in it, and the lower part Southweſt; the commodiouſneſſe of the Key makes it much frequented by Merchants.

The County of *Waterford* lyeth in the Eaſt ſide of *Ireland*, ſtretching out it ſelf between the rivers, *Broadwater* Weſt, and *Shour* Eaſt; the Main on the South, and *Tipperary* Norweſt; both delightſome, and very profitable.

When *Broadwater* hath out-run the County of *Cork*, behinde it *Liſmore* preſently ſheweth it ſelf, an Epiſcopall See where *Chriſtian* once ſate, that was of the ſame Cloyſter with Saint *Bernard*, and Pope *Eugenius*; but now annexed unto *Waterford*: The *Lumly's* are Vicounts of *waterford*.

At the mouth of which river ſtandeth *Aidmore*, a ſmall town, ſo called becauſe it ſtandeth near the Sea.

Not far from hence ſtandeth *Dungarvan*, having a ſtrong hold of good force: It is a Tide-haven 8 leagues from *Waterford*, full of rocks, and deep within the harbour.

Vicount *Deſſee*, together with the Barony of *Dungarvan*, King *Henry* the ſixth granted to *John Talbut* Earl of *Shrewsbury*; but afterward, ſeeing it lay conveniently to that part of *Mounſter* that was to bee brought under, and reduced into order, it was by a Parliament annexed to the Crown of *England*.

On the ſide of the river *Shour*, *Waterford* the principall City of this County maketh a fair ſhew, the Iriſh and Britains call it *Portlargie*, the Engliſh *Waterford*, 37 leagues from *Englands* end.

It

It was built by certain Pirats of *Norway*; the ayr is groſſe and unhealthy, the ſoil not fertile, the ſtreets pent and narrow; yet by reaſon of the commodiouſneſſe of the harbour, which is fair and wide, 10 or 11 fathom deep going in, it is much frequented, and of great reſort, driving a quick trade, ſo that it is eſteemed the ſecond City in the Kingdom, and hath continued alwaies true and loyall to the Crown of *England*, ever ſince *Richard* Earl of *Pembroke* wan it firſt, and hath received many favours and priviledges from the Kings of *England* for their good ſervices.

And *Henry* the ſeventh augmented them much, for their diſcreet carriage of themſelves againſt the mock-Prince *Perkin Warbeck*, who counterfeited *Richard* the third, under which colour he couzened a great Peer of *Scotland* of his fair daughter.

This Counry of *Waterford*, together with the City, King *Henry* the ſixth gave unto *John Talbut* Earl of *Shrewsbury*.

But by reaſon of wars in *France*, and the civil diſſentions between the houſes of *York* and *Lancaſter*, the Kings of *England* were buſied, and the Nobles ſo intangled in thoſe broils, that they could not intend the affairs of *Ireland*, ſo that the Iriſh grew very inſolent and powerfull: So that in the 28 year of *H.8.* though the fault were committed long before his dayes; yet for puniſhment, by Act of Parliament it was ordered, That the heirs of many Noblemen, as the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *Ormond*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Baron *Barkley*, and all the Abbots and Priors (for they were all found liable to this puniſhment) with the reſt, ſhould forfeit all their lands and demeans in *Ireland*, into the Kings hands for ſuch neglect and abſence.

The

The County of *Limrick* is an inland County, lying behinde that of *Cork* Northward, between *Kerry*, the river *Shanon*, and the County of *Tipperary* a very fruitfull and populous place, but not eminent for any thing of note.

The Western part of it is called *Conilagh*, wherein there is *Knoc Patrick*, a very high hill, from whence there is a pleasant prospect into the Sea, where you may see how *Shanon* fals in to the Virginian.

The head City is *Limrick*, which *Shanon* by parting begirteth round, the Irish call it *Lowmeagh*, and the English *Limrick*; it is a chief Market-town of *Mounster*, and the See of a Bishop, and at this day called two Towns; the upper, wherein stands the Cathedrall Church, and a Castle, and hath two gates, and each of them a stone Bridge with bulwarks, the one leading into the West, the other into the East, unto which the lower Town joyneth, fenced with a wall, and a Castle thereto, and a fore-gate at the entrance into it; Lord *Esmond* is Baron of *Limrick*.

In the South of this County is *Kilmallo*, the next Town to *Limrick* both in substance and inhabitants, incompassed likewise with a wall: Vicount *Sarsfield* of *Kilmallo*.

Not far off standeth *Adare*, a little Town, hard unto which lyeth *Elan Gibbon*, where dwelt the White-Knight, so called for his gray hairs.

The other inhabitants of note are the *Lacyes*, *Browns*, *Harbyes*, *Chacyes*, *Sapells*, and *Pourcells*, all of English race; also the *Mac Shees*, *Mac Brian*, *O Brien*, of Irish blood.

The County of *Tipperary* is bounded Westward, with *Limrick* and the river *Shanon* Eastward, with the County

County of *Kilkenny*, with the County of *Corke* and *Waterford* ſouthward, and North with the territories of the *O Carolls*. The ſouth-part hath much corne, and many beautifull buildings, and the river *Glaſon* runneth with a large courſe thorow the Weſt-part of it; not farre from whoſe bankes ſtands *Emly* or *Awn*, a Biſhops See: thorow the middeſt of it glideth that goodly river *Shour*, or *Swire*, which iſſuing out of *Bladin* hills, haſteth thorow the lower *Oſſery*: of which *Hen.* 8. dignified the *Butlers* with the title of Earles, and thorow *Thurles*, which honoureth the ſame Family with the dignity of Vicounts; and ſo goeth into *Holy-croſſe*, termed the County of the *Holy-croſſe* of *Tipp*:

Then *Shour* goeth beſides *Caſsile*, honoured with the dignity of an Arch-biſhop, by *Eugenius*, third Pope of *Rome*, from thence runneth the River down *Shreading* Ilands here and there, and fetcheth a round about *Cabir* Caſtle, then holding his courſe by *Clomel*, a frequented Market-towne, as alſo by *Carick-mac-Griffin* ſituate upon a rock; it then leaveth *Tipperary* behind it, and is inſtead of a banke to confine the countries of *Waterford* and *Kilkenny*.

The *Botelers* or *Butlers* are great Families in this Countie, and were neere of alliance unto *Thomas A Becket*, for whoſe ſake *Henry* the ſecond did honour and enrich them.

For the government of which Province, that it might be kept from rebellion and ſeditious tumults, queene *Elizabeth* out of her Princely care and wiſdome, firſt ordained Sir *Warham Sellenger* or Saint *Leger*, a man well ſeene in *Iriſh* affaires, to be Lord Preſident, with one Aſſiſtant, two Lawyers, and a Secretary.

THe ſecond part or Province is *Leinſter*, which hath ſeven Countries, it is called by the Iriſh *Leighnigh*, by the Britaines *Lein*, lying all towards the Sea Eaſtward, a fer-

tile, healthfull, and beautifull place. The firſt County is *Kilkenny*, bounded Weſt with *Tipperary*: Eaſt with the Counties of *Weisford* and *Caterlogh*: South with the County of *Waterford*: North with queenes County; and Norweſt with upper *Oſſery*, a County ſurpaſſing the reſt in faire buildings, ſtrong Forts, and exceeding plentifull in all manner of proviſion.

Neere unto *Oſſery* there ſtandeth a very great mountain, called *Sleiew Bloemy*, towring very high, out of whoſe wombe iſſue theſe Rivers, *Shour*, *Neor* and *Barrow*, running in ſeveral ſtreames againe joyne before they enter the Ocean, and called of old the three Siſters.

This River *Neor*, commonly called *Neure*, runneth, as it were, thorow *Kilkenny* County, and when it is paſſed the upper *Oſſery*, and hath watered many fortreſſes on both ſides, it floweth beſides *Kilkenny*, which is a rich and beautifull Towne, farre exceeding any inland Burrough in *Ireland*: Parted into the Engliſh towne and Iriſh towne, the Iriſh towne being, as it were, the Suburbs, and hath in it S. *Canicks* Church, where the Biſhop of *Oſſery* hath his See.

But the Engliſh towne is nothing ſo ancient, builded by *Ranulph* third Earle of *Cheſter*; walled on the Weſt-ſide by *Robert Talbot*, and fortified with a caſtle by the *Butlers*.

Below *Neore* ſomewhat ſtandeth a little walled towne, called *Thomas* towne, in Iriſh *Bala mac Anda*, that is, the towne of *Antonies* ſonne.

Below this, the River *Callan* emptieth it ſelf into *Neore*, on whoſe bankes ſtandeth the towne *Callan*, the third incorporate towne of this County, as likewiſe *Iniſe Teog* which is the fourth.

Many Families of the *Butlers* in this County of good account, and ſome other Gentry, as the *Graces*, *Walſhes*, *Lovels*, *Forreſters*, *Shortels*, *Blanch-feilds*, or *Blanch-velſtors*, *Drilands*, *Comerfords*, &c.

The

The County of *Caterlogh*, called by contraction *Carlogh*, Eaſtward joyneth to *Kilkenny*, lying almoſt betweene the Rivers *Barrow* and *Slane*, fruitfull and well furniſhed with woods; the two principall townes ſtand on the weſt-banke of *Barrow*: *Carlogh* walled and fortified with a Caſtle: Alſo *Leighlin*, once a Biſhops See, now joyned to that of *Fernes*, Both of them of good force, and Conſtables over them: From hence *Barrow* runneth thorow the Lordſhip of *Idron*. Upon the River *Slane* is ſeated *Tullo*, a *Butler* being honoured by King *James* with the title of Vicount *Tullo*.

The *Cavanaghs* are a name much ſpread, valiant and excellent horſemen: From *Carterlogh*, *Neore* and *Barrow* run hand in hand ſome few miles, and after fall into the lap of their eldeſt ſiſter the *Sbour*, who all are ſwallowed up preſently of the devouring Ocean.

The County of *Leaz*, or queenes County, ſo called from queene *Mary*, who firſt made it a County, lying above *Caterlogh* towards the Norweſt, a ſmall County full of woods and bogs; the chiefe towne is *Mary-burgh*, there was uſed watch and ward to defend themſelves from the inſolencies of the Iriſh *O Moores*, againſt *Mac Gilpatrick*, the *O Dempſies*, who were very turbulent and ſeditious.

Many Caſtles and Forts in this County, one at *Tahmelio*, another at *Obowy*, a third on the River *Barrow*, and a fourth at *Norrach*; little elſe of moment in this County.

Amulenux is Vicount of *Mary-burgh*, the principall towne in this County.

Kings County, called formerly *Offaly*, but for the honour of King *Philip* made a County; the chiefe towne is *Philips* town: the *Dempſies*, Vicount *Glenmare*, and Baron of *Philips* town.

Many Engliſh Families ſeated here, as the *Warrens*, *Herberts*,

berts, *Colbeis*, *Moris*, *Leiceſters*. Some Families of the Iriſh, which ſuppoſe they have had hard meaſure in being diſpoſſeſſed of their ancient inheritances, ſeeke all occaſion to do the Engliſh a diſpleaſure, and wil omit no opportunity to revenge: ſo that it ever did, and now more eſpecially it behoveth the Engliſh to be circumſpect and wary.

The County of *Kildare*, lying eaſtward from the former Counties, a pleaſant, healthfull and fertile countrey, full of ſprings and paſtures: the chiefe town an Epiſcopall See beares the name of the County *Kildare*; the noble Families of the *Fitz-Geralds* hold the Earldome, granted by *Edward* the ſecond.

This County was firſt inhabited by the Earle of *Pembroke* and his heires, untill *Edward* the firſt.

The *Geraldines* continued loyall untill *Henry* the 8. and then one of them unadviſedly rebelled, but was puniſhed, and his confederates: howbeit queene *Mary* reſtored bloud and lands.

The places of note above the reſt is *Naas* a Market town, *Athie* placed on the River *Barrow*; *Mainoth* a Caſtle belonging to the Earle of *Kildare*, and a Market-town.

Caſtle-martin, the chiefe ſeat of the Family of *Fitz-Euſtace*, which deſcended from the *Poers*, who had the title of Vicount *Baltinglas* added by *Henry* the eighth.

But having loſt that title by attainder, the *Ropers* beare the honour of Vicount *Baltinglas*.

The chiefe Families derive from the Engliſh, there are the *Ougans*, *de la Hides*, *Ailmers*, *Walſhes*, *Boiſels*, *whites*, *Suttons*, &c. Now we have done with the midland Countries of *Lymſter*, we goe now to the Sea-ſide.

The County of *Weisford*, or *Wexford*, being a ſmall circuit of land, lying on the Sea ſide againſt *Beneath*, the mouth of the three former ſiſter Rivers eaſtward, in a promontory

montory where the ſhore fetcheth a compaſſe round, is placed the County of *Wexford*, in Iriſh *Reogh*; here on the river *Barrow* there was a faire citie, called *Roſſe*, well traded and peopled, but by diſcord and diſſention, onely a great wall left as the ruines of a huge pile: but the *Hervys* are dignified with the title of Barons of *Roſſe*.

Eaſtward *Duncannon* Caſtle ſtandeth over the River, and can hinder any ſhips from paſſing either to *Waterford* or *Roſſe*: from thence there runs out a little neck of land, which is a helpe unto ſea-men to ſaile into the River; not farre off ſtandeth *Tinterne* upon the ſhore, with many windings & creeks, where once there was a famous Abbey.

This Promontory is called *Holy-head*, lying over againſt Saint *Davids* in *Wales*; at which place the Engliſh firſt ſet footing into *Ireland*, where there is a towne by the natives called *Banna*, which ſignifies *Holy*.

Along the ſhore eaſtward lye many flats, which the mariners call the grounds, and endanger their ſhips.

The River *Slane* cuts quite thorow this County, and in the mouth thereof, where it maketh a poole, there lyeth *Weisford* the chiefe towne; it is not of any great bigneſſe, but yet memorable, in that being aſſaulted by *Fitz Stephen*, a valiant Captaine, it yeelded it ſelfe unto his protection, and became a Colony of the Engliſh, ſo that ſtill it uſeth the ancient apparrell of the Engliſh, and their ſpeech, but ſomewhat mingled with Iriſh.

Eniſcort is ſeated on the River *Slane*, and *Fernes* is ſeated more inward, an Epiſcopal See; beyond which River dwelt the *Cavenaghs*, *Donels*, *Montaghs*, and *O Moores*, of Iriſh race, ſtirring tumultuous ſpirits and amongſt them the *Sinottes*, *Roches* and *Peppers* Engliſh.

Vicount *Mount-garretto*, the *Butlers* are the men of note on this ſide *Slane*: many more Engliſh of note,

as moſt of the common ſort Engliſh.

The County of *Divelin* or *Dublin*, on the Eaſt lyeth broad upon the Sea, on the weſt bounded with the County of *Kildare*, on the ſouth, on two ſmall territories of *Wicklo* and *Arcklo*, once the habitation of the *O Tools* and *O Byrns*, and now termed the *Glimes*; and norweſt limited with the County of *Meth*, and *Nanny* a ſmall River.

It is a very plentifull County both in corne and cattell, abounding alſo with game for pleaſure; their greateſt want is fuell, which is a heavie turfe or Engliſh ſea-coale, but in the ſouth ſide a barren ſoile, hils and woods plenty, many hollow valleyes over-run with trees, which they call *Glinnus*, among which was the Biſhoprick of *Glandelan*, but now annexed to the Archbiſhop of *Dublin*.

All the reſt of the County is rich and plentious, the people of a ſtately port and garbe, in gentile neatneſſe and carriage ſurpaſſing all the reſt of *Ireland*; and it is divided into five ſeverall Baronies, *Rath-downe*, *New-caſtle*, *Caſtleknoc*, *Cowloc* and *Balrody*.

This whole County is *Neptunes* neighbor, no part thereof being twenty miles diſtant from the Sea.

To the ſouth of *Dublin* Haven ſtandeth *Wicklo*, a narrow Haven, over which bends a rocke immured ſtrongly with fortification in ſtead of a Caſtle, whoſe command none ought to have but Engliſh borne: Lord *Maynard* hath the title of Baron.

Then from the top of a hill, *New-caſtle* looketh into the Sea in the ſight of the three ſhelves, which they call the ſouth, middle, and north grounds, lying in length, yet ſhall you find betweene them and the ſhore ſeven or eight fathome of water.

A little higher where the River *Bray* disburdens into the Sea, is ſeene *Oldcourt*, the poſſeſſions of the *Walſhes* of *Carickmain*,

rickmain, who are a large and ancient ſtocke.

Next are *Powers* or *Poerſcourt*, belonging formerly to a Family of that name, ſince the *Wingfeilds* have the title of Vicount *Powerſcourt*.

A little Iland Saint *Bennets*, belonging to the Archbiſhop of *Dublin*, lyeth in an elbow of land which the River *Bray* maketh.

The creeke or bay is called *Dublin* Haven, which is five leagues from *Wexford*, into which Haven the greateſt River of this County powreth it ſelfe, called *Liffy*, whoſe originall being but fifteene miles diſtance from that place, yet through his many windings and turnings he watereth many countries.

Firſt ſouth, by Saint *Patricks* land, then weſtward, after north, watering the County of *Kildare*, at length into the eaſt by *Caſtle-knoc*, and ſo by *Kilmainam*.

Dublin is ſeated ſeven miles from the mouth of *Liffy*, it is the moſt famous towne of all *Ireland*, the Iriſh call it *Bala Cleigh*, that is, the town ſet upon hurdles, for the firſt foundation thereof was laid upon hurdles, by reaſon of the ſoft unſetled ground, like as *Sivil* in *Spaine* is ſaid to bee built on piles, *Venice* on woolſack, or ſuch like matter of foundation, it is an ancient towne, yet was much rent and defaced in the *Daniſh* warres; after it became ſubject to *Edgar*, King of *England*, who in his Charter cals it, The moſt noble City of *Ireland*.

Then the *Norwegians* got it in poſſeſſion, and at laſt it fell to the Engliſh, who defended it againſt the Iriſh, and was planted with a Colony of *Briſtow* men, on whom King *Henry* the ſecond beſtowed this City, and all the liberties and franchiſes which the men of *Briſtow* have; of which City many write in praiſe and commendation, one thus:

A City, in regard of the people, noble, of the ſite moſt pleaſant,

pleaſant, by reaſon of the Sea and River meeting together, rich and plentifull in fiſh, for traffick famous, for the green plaines delightfull and lovely, beſet with woods of maſt-bearing-trees, incompaſſed about with Parkes of Deere, So another:

Develin, a maritine towne, is the mother City of all *Ireland*, having to it an Haven paſſing well frequented, for traffick and entercourſe of Merchants matchable with our *London*.

There are many Keyes and Wharfs along the River, jetting out to ſtop the violence of the water.

A very ſtrong wall of rough building ſtone, reacheth along by the ſides of it, which openeth at ſix gates, from whence there runne forth ſuburbs of great length.

Towards the eaſt is *Dammes* gate, and neere it the Kings Caſtle, very ſtrong both by art and nature; and an Armory or ſtorehouſe built by *Henry Lounders* Archb. 1220.

Saint *Andrews* Church ſtands in the eaſt ſuburbs, not farre from which is Trinity Colledge, which queene *Elizabeth* honoured with the title and priviledges of an Univerſity.

The north gate openeth at the Bridge built by King *John* of Arch-worke, and this uniteth *Oustmans* towne to the City: for here the Eaſterlings, that came out of *Norway*, placed themſelves about 1050.

In the ſouth quarter of the City ſtand two gates, *Ormonds*, and *Newgate* the common priſon.

Theſe lead into Saint *Thomas* ſtreet, being large and long, where there ſtands a great Abbey of that name founded by *Henry* the ſecond, for the expiation of the murder of *Thomas A Becket*, as ſome ſay.

Into the ſouth openeth *Pauls* gate, and Saint *Nicholas*, which maketh a way into Saint *Patricks* ſuburbs, wherein ſtandeth

ſtandeth the Archbiſhops Palace, called Saint *Sepulchers*, and a ſtately Church dedicated unto Saint *Patrick*, having an arched rooſe of ſtone, and a tall ſteeple.

It maintaines a Deane, a Chaunter, a Chauncellor, a Treaſurer, two Archdeacons, and 22 Prebendaries; the only light and lampe (as the Parliament of that Kingdome ſaid of it) of all godly and Eccleſiaſticall diſcipline and order in *Ireland*.

There is another Cathedrall Church ſtanding in the very heart of the city, called Chriſt-church; neere the ſouth ſide of which ſtandeth the towne Hall, built of ſquare ſtone, and called the Toleſtall, where the Seſſions of the city are kept.

The chiefe Officer was a Provoſt, but *Henry* the fourth gave them liberty to chooſe a Major, and two Baylieſes, after King *Edward* the ſixth, changed the two Baylieſes into two Sheriffes.

No inconvenience ſave only that the ebbing and flowing of the Sea doth much choake the mouth of *Liffy*, that hinder great veſſels from going up, and makes them to obſerve the high water for tranſporting of goods.

Where *Liffy* dyeth in the Ocean, *Houth* ſtandeth compaſſed in a manner round with the Sea: of which thoſe nobles Saint *Lawrence* hold the Barony.

Not farre off is *Malebide* or *Molachid*, belonging to the *Talbots*.

More within the countrey is *Fingall*, a little place, but very well husbanded, even the garner and ſtore-houſe of this Kingdome, ſo great ſtore of corne it yeeldeth every yeare.

This place diſcovers the idleneſſe of the other Counties, which would equally anſwer the induſtry of the labourer, if it were imployed.

Divers worſhipfull Families are placed here and there of Engliſh in this County, as namely the *Plunkets*, who are ſtill Earle of *Fingall*, and Lord of *Kellene*, *Barnwels*, *Ruſſels*, *Talbots*, *Dillons*, *Nettervils*, *Lutterels*, *Burnels*, *Fitzwilliams*, *Gouldings*, *Uſhers*, *Cadlyes*, *Finglaſſes*, *Sarfeilds*, *Blackneys*, *Crucyes*, *Baths*, &c.

Part. 3. NOw we come to the Province of *Meth*, becauſe it lyeth in the middle; for ſtrength and ſafety called the Chamber of *Ireland*: peaceable likewiſe in the 38. yeare of *Henry* the eight, divided into eaſt *Meth* and weſt *Meth*.

The County of eaſt *Meth* is compaſſed with *Kildare*, on the ſouth with the County of *Dublin*, and the Sea eaſt; on the north with the territory of *Louth*, and with the County of weſt-*Meth* on the weſt.

The whole is divided into eighteene Baronies, *viz.* *Dueleke*, *Scrine*, *Slane*, *Margallen*, *Navan*, *Kenlis*, halfe the Barony of *Fower* neere *Kenlis*, *Killalou*, *Clove*, *Moylagh*, *Logherne*, *Old-caſtle*, *Luyn*, *Moyfeuraragh*, *Deeſe*, *Rath-touth*, and *Dunboyne*.

Boyne, a faire River, ſprings out of the north ſide of the Kings County, runneth thorow this country.

In the remoteſt places on this ſide *Boyne*, are theſe memorable places, *Galtrim*, *Killin* Caſtle, *and* *Dunſany*: On the further ſide of *Boyne* are *Trimletſtown*, *Gormanſton* and *Slane*: the *Fleming* Lord of it: of the next before Vicount *Preſton*, *Barnwell* Baron of the other, *Plunket* Lord of *Dunſany*.

Among theſe laſt ſtands a Market-towne, called *Aboy*, upon the River *Boyn*, which paſſing *Glan Jores*, that is, the Land of *George* runneth under *Trim*, a fine towne of trade, having a Caſtle erected by *William Pepard*.

So it flowes beſides *Navan*, the Barony of the *Lamberts*, where

where the Biſhops houſe is, who having no Cathedrall Church, doth all with the aſſent of the Clergie of *Meth*.

Boyn then running higher and ſwifter neere unto *Drodagh*, the *Moores* being intitled Vicount of it, loſeth himſelfe in the Ocean.

Many chief Families of Engliſh blood are in this countie: the *Brabazons* being Earles of eaſt *Meth*.

The county of weſt *Meth*, ſo called in regard of the ſituation, in relation to the former, and reacheth to the River *Shanon*, and lyeth betweene the Kings county ſouth, and *Longford* county north, to which it is not much inferiour in any thing, if anſwerable in civility.

Molingar is the chiefe towne, as lying in the midſt, compaſſed with many bogges.

It is parted into twelve Baronies, *viz*. *Fertulogh*, *Ferbile*, *Delvin*, of which the *Nugents* were Barons, and now Earls of weſt *Meth*: *Fourry*, as alſo *Corkery*, *Moyaſſell*, where the *Tuts* inhabited, *Moygoiſy*, *Rathcomire*, *Magirquirke*, all propagated from Engliſh blood; *Clonlalon*, *Moycaſſell*, meere Iriſh beare ſway. And others of more harſh and unpleaſant names, yet better liked of the Iriſh than our Engliſh names: ſo that one of them ſaid he would not learne Engliſh, leſt it ſhould make him have a wry mouth.

Hugh Lacy ſubdued this county, and had it given unto him by *Henry* the ſecond, who intending to build a Caſtle, and bowing downe his head to ſhew the carpenter how hee would have a peece of timber ſquared, had his head cut off by the ſame carpenter with an axe which hee held in his hand.

The county of *Longford* lyeth on the north ſide of weſt *Meth*, made a county not long ſince, called *Anale*, before inhabited moſt by Iriſh, and thoſe potent and turbulent.

Shannon runneth along this county on the ſide of it, and

ariſeth out of *Therne* hils in the county of *le Trim*, and flowing along makes many open pools, and after contracts himſelfe againe, and then runneth into a large broad mere called *Lough Regith*, but after findes his bankes againe, on which ſtands the towne *Athlon*: from thence *Shannon* having paſſed the water-fall at *Killoloe*, being very large and deepe, ſix or ſeven fathome water: disjoynes, running with open armes to the imbracement of the city *Limrick*; from whence ſpeeding about ſixty miles in length, making here and there an Iland, and where he grew ſhallow and paſſible, there formerly ſtood forts and bulwarkes to hinder the inrode of the pilfering Iriſh; and at laſt running with open mouth beyond *knoc Patrick*, is devoured by the weſterne Ocean: two Iriſh Septs moſt powerfull and eminent in this county *O-Pharoll Boy*, and *O-Pharoll Ban*; the Lord *Aungiers* are dignified with the title of Baron of *Longford*.

Another Province is Conaght, *wherein are ſix Counties.*

1 TWomond, or the county *Clare*, which the Iriſh call *Twawun*, that is, north-*Mounſter*, for ſo formerly was the name, untill Sir *Henry Sydny* laid it unto *Connaght*, ſhooting out with a narrow promontory into the Sea weſtward, and on the eaſt and ſouth ſide, incloſed with the large ſtreame of the River *Shannon*, and to the weſt with the maine, on the north barred with the county *Galloway*, ſo that there is no entring of it by land.

The territories of *Clan Richard* are very fruitfull and commodious both for ſea and land, onely vexed with bad and idle creatures, lazie inhabitants.

O fortunati ſi ſua norint!

Did they but truly conſider the benefit that would acrew by

by industry, how would they indeavour? As hath appeared by the care and paines of some English of note and esteem, as the *Muscegros* and *Clares*, who have built many forts and townes, from whom *Clare* the chiefe towne takes name.

Other places of note *Kilfenneragh*, and *Killalloe Orlaon* the Bishops seat, where there stands a Rock in the middest of the channell of *Shannon*, from which the water maketh a great noyse in the fall thereof, and which is a great barre and hinderance, that no vessels can passe any further.

Not farre from this banke stands *Bunraty*, made a Market towne by *Henry* 3. and is fortified with a Castle.

Seven miles off appeareth *Clare*, the principall towne, at a creek (flowing from *Shannon*) full of Ilands, the chiefe Families are Irish, (the English being degenerated wholly) *mac Nemors*, *mac Mahon*, *O-Loughlon*, the *O Brians*, the chiefe of all, and of ancient descent, and now Earls of *Thomond*, and who did good service against the Irish in Queen *Elizabeth's* time.

The County of *Galloway* bounderh South on *Clare*, West on the Sea: North on County *Mayo*, and East on *Shannon*, abounding both in corne and cattle.

The West-shore is very craggy and rugged, with a long border of greene Ilands; foure of which called *Aran*, make a Barony: also *Inis Ceath*, where the Monastery of *Colman* is a devout Saint founded for Scots and English, but their continuall discord made the English quite forsake it.

More within lyeth a lake called *logh Corbes*, spreading twenty miles in length, and three or foure in breadth, being navigable, furnished with three hundred small Ilands full of grasse and Pine-trees; but towards the Sea this lake is more streightned, and runnes under *Galway*, Irish *Gallive*, called so from the people *Gallaci* in *Spaine*; a chiefe town, and little inferiour to any in *Ireland*, built round like a Tower,

Tower, a Biſhops See much frequented by Merchants, invited by a commodious haven and ſafe roade.

Foure miles from hence ſtands *Knoc-toe*, that is, the hill of Axes; and not farre off *Aterith*, having a large wall, but poorely inhabited: the *Birminghams* are Barons of Engliſh race, but of Iriſh diſpoſition.

The better ſort of Iriſh are *O Kelleis*, *O Maiden*, *O Flairles*, *mac Dervis* &c.,

The country of *clan Richard* lyeth at the entrance of this County, and is annexed to it; it tooke the name from *Richard de Burgh*, out of which ſtock *Henry* the eight made an Earle of *Clan Rich*, whoſe eldeſt ſonne hath the title of Baron of *Dun Kellis*: In this territory is the Archbiſhops See of *Toam*, unto which many Biſhopricks were formerly ſubject, but now only three.

The County of *Maio* limited on the Weſt by the Ocean, South by *Gollway*, Eaſt by the County of *Roſcoman*, and North by the county of *Slige*, very rich and fruitfull, abounding with cattle, Deere, Hawks, and honey; taking its name from a little city which had a Biſhops See, but now laid to *Toam* (as I ſaid) but the inhabitants are under the juriſdiction of the Biſhop of *Killaly*: Lord *Bourgh* is Vicount *Maio*.

There is a remarkable lake at the Weſt ſide of this called *Loghmesk*, full of fiſh, and two ſmall Ilands: this County is inhabited with a valiant kind of people ſtout and hardie, moſt of which were invited by the rebels out of the Scottiſh Ilands the *Hebrides* to aid *mac William*, and *mac Conell*, who were defeated by Captain *Bingham*, Governor of *Conagh*.

The County of *Sleoo* lying along the Weſterne Sea: betweene it and *Ulſter* Northward runneth the River *Trobis*, iſſuing from the lake Erne, it is parted from the borde-

ring

ring Counties: *Le Trim* and *Roſcoman* by the vaſt Curlew hills; and cut in twaine by the River *Suc*, it is very fit and convenient for the breeding and rearing of cattle.

Sligo is the principall place of this county, where there ſtands a caſtle, under which is the Bay of *Slego*, a road full of good harbours for ſhipping; the chiefe names, beſides the *O Conors*, are *O Don*, *O Harris*, *O Ghar*, and *mac Donagh*.

There is an honourable Family in *Herefordſhire*, now dignified with the title of Baron *Scudamore* of *Dromore*, and Vicount of *Sligo*.

The County of *le Trim*, formerly called *Breany*, which incloſeth the county of *Sligo* on the Eaſt, and was the poſſeſſions of that ancient Family of the *Rorck*, untill *Brian O Rorck* rebelled in queen *Elizabeths* dayes, who was chaſed into *Scotland*, and ſent thence into *England*, and there hanged, ſo that his lands fell unto the Crown: the *Sherards* are Barons of *le Trim*; after it was made a county by the Lord Deputy, and called *le Trim* from the chiefe towne.

This county is full of riſing hills, and very fat ranke paſtures; ſo that one ſaith of it (but how true I know not) that it is ſo full of forrage, that unleſſe cattle were kept ſometimes from grazing, their fulneſſe would endanger them: but ſo fruitfull and fertile it is, that in a ſmall circuit of ground, it was able at once to ſhew one hundred and twenty thouſand head of beaſts; here is the See of the Biſhop of *Achonry*, united to the See of *Elphin*.

The head of the long and large river *Shannon* firſt ſheweth it ſelfe here.

The Families of note, *O Rorck*, *O Murreis*, *mac Lochleims*, *mac Glancheis*, and *mac Granelles*, all meere Iriſh.

The County of *Roſcoman* lieth Southweſt from *le Trim*, made a county likewiſe by *Henry Sidney* Lord Deputy, being

ing long, but narrow, and bound with the Rivers *Suc* Eaſtward, and *Shannon* Weſtward, and on the North with *Curlew* mountaines, which are high and impaſſible untill a cut was made thorow them.

It is a plain fertile countrey, much abounding with cattle, becauſe tillage is too painfull for the inhabitants.

There are foure Baronies in this county, lying under *Curlew* hils, by the River *Shannon*.

1 That of *Boyle*, where *mac Dermot* is chiefe.

2 That of *Balin Tober*, by the River *Suc*, where *O Coner Dun*, is of greateſt power, and upon it joyneth *Elphen* the Biſhops See.

Somewhat lower lyeth *Roſcomon*, the Barony of *O Coner Roo*; but the *Dillons* ſince have been Earls of *Roſcommon*, in which place is ſeated the chiefe town, but now poore and meane.

More Southward lyeth *Athlone*, the Barony of the *O Kellies*, ſo named of the head town, which hath a caſtle in it, and a moſt beautifull bridge of hewen ſtone, built by queen *Elizabeth*, and thought it the moſt convenient place for the Lord Deputies to reſide, the better to ſuppreſſe ſeditions.

The fifth part or Province is Ulſter, *the North part of* Ireland *hath ten Counties.*

THe County of *Louth*, in Iriſh *Iriel* or *Uriel* ſituated beyond *Meth*, and the River *Boyn* runneth out with a ſhore bending towards the North.

A fruitfull and pleaſant ſoyle if well imployed neere *Boyns* mouth is ſeated *Drogheda*, or in Engliſh *Tredagh*, a fine town well peopled and frequented, ſo called of the Bridge; *Boyne* cutting it thorow; it hath both a Market

and

and Faire granted by King *Edward* the ſecond, as alſo a Mint once there; The *Moores* now beare the honour of Vicount *Drogheda*.

Not farre off ſtands *Mellifont* Abbey, much praiſed by Saint *Bernard*, given by queene *Elizabeth* to Sir *Edward Moore* of *Kent*.

Seven miles off ſtandeth *Ardeth*, an inland town, and above it *Dundalke*, having a commodious haven, and formerly a wall, which *Edward Bru*, the King of *Scots* brother did burne, but after both himſelfe and forces ſlain and defeated by Sir *John Birmingham*: the Lord *Gorges* are Barons of it.

Eight miles from hence ſtands *Carlingford*, a port of good uſe and frequencie: the *Swifts* are honoured with the title of Vicounts of this place, the names of note are *Verdons*, *Tates*, *Clintons*, *Bellewes*, *Donedalls*, *Wottons*, *and ſome others*. Sir *John Birmingham*, before named, was formerly Earle of *Louth*. But *Henry* the eight honoured Sir *Oliver Plunket* with the Barony of *Louth*.

The County of *Cavan* lying to the Weſt of *Leuth*, and formerly called Eaſt *Brieny*, the habitation of *O Kellies*, who have been powerfull in horſemen, for the ſuppreſſing of whom, Sir *Henry Sidney* divided it into ſeven ſeverall Baronies, to hold in fee from the Crown of *England*; they have no townes, but dwell ſcattered here and there in forts and piles: they have a poore Biſhop of their owne, whoſe See is at *Kilmore*; yet ſomewhat better than thoſe Iriſh Biſhops who had no other rents and revenues than three milch kine; which being dry, the Pariſhioners did change for a new milch one: the L. *Lambert* or Barons of *Cavan*.

The County of *Fermanagh* lyeth to the Weſt and nore of *Cavan*, full of woods and many boggs, in the middeſt whereof is the greateſt lake in *Ireland*, called *logh Erne*, reaching out forty miles, very full of inhabited Ilands,

ſome containing three hundred, others foure hundred acres of land, and the banks of the lake are ſet all with ſhady woods. Such plenty of fiſh, Pikes, Trouts and Salmons, that the nets are broken a peeces often with the great draughts.

At B*al Tarbet* a little towne, firſt it ſtretcheth ſix miles in length from South to North; then for the ſpace of ſix miles it narroweth, in which ſpace ſtandeth *Inis Killin* a faire Caſtle, from which *Brian mac Guir* takes his Barony. Then it greatly inlargeth it ſelfe towards the Sea, as far as to B*elek*, neere unto which is a great down-fall of water, that moſt renowned Salmons leape.

Mac Guir was chiefe untill his rebellion; many of that Family dwel on both ſides: and thoſe beyond the Lake are counted of *Ulſter*, and they on this ſide of *Conagh*.

The County *Monaghan* lyeth on the Weſt ſide of the former great Lake, having many hills and much wood, not having any towne but *Monaghan*, which imparts its name to the County: which is divided into five Baronies, *Iriel, Dartre, Fevey, Loughty*, with the little territory *Donemain*. The *mac Mahons*, that is, the ſons of *Urſus*, or the Bear, were powerfull, but through diſſention among themſelves, and their rebellious practiſes, are rooted out: the B*lanys* are Barons of this place.

The County of *Armagh* lieth towards the eaſt in length, compaſſed with the River *Newy* by Eaſt, with the County of *Louth* by South, and with the B*lackwater* by North. So fruitfull and fat a ſoyle, that if any compos or dung be laid on it in ſcorne of it, it becomes barren.

The firſt place is *Fewes*, a ſmall territory belonging to *Turlogh mac Henry*, one of the Family of *Oneal*, thick ſet with wood, and by reaſon of the lakes and bogs impaſſible.

Next is *Orry*, in want of wood, where dwelt *O Hanlon*, and where ſtands *Mont Norris*, built by the Lord *Montjoy*: and *Auſley* are Barons of *Mont-norris*; eight miles off

neere

neere the River *Kalin* lyeth *Armagh*, a poore town, yet an Archbiſhops See, and Metropolitan, the firſt Archbiſhop was Saint *Malachie*, much commended by Saint *Bernard*, yet nevermore happy than in the enjoying of that learned and right reverend Prelate Doct. *Uſher*, now Archbiſhop, whoſe learning and piety is well known, and ſhews that an Archbiſhop and religious, though not always convertible, yet ſometimes compatible. This towne in the laſt Rebellion was ruinated by *Tyrone*. The chiefe men are *mac Genis O Hanlan*, and many of the Sept of *O Neal*, which aſſume unto themſelves ſeverall by-names. The *Blackwater* Eaſtward runneth betweene this Shire and *Tiroen*: the *Chamorths* have the dignity of Vicount from this place.

The County of *Down* lyeth Eaſtward on the Iriſh Sea, long and broad, on the North to the Lake *Eaugh*, and on the South to the County of *Louth*, from which it is ſevered by the river *Newry*, upon which ſtandeth a town called *Bagnall*, in remembrance of that noble Marſhall of *Ireland*, Sir *Richard* Bagnall. Neere which town the River *Banthelesſe* ariſeth out of the mountains of *Mourne*, paſſing thorow the country of *Eaugh*, which pertains to *mac Genis*, it hath a Biſhops See at *Dromore*; above which are the tracts of *Kilwalto* & *Kilwarny* much incumbred with woods and bogs, and lye inwardly: But by the ſhore the Sea doth winde in, and incroach upon the land, and makes many creeks, and the Lake ſpreadeth it ſelfe neere *Dyffrin*, a valley full of woods: anciently the *Mandavils*, afterward the *Whits*, ſo that it makes two Bilands, *Lecall* Southward, and *Ardes* Northward. *Lecall* very rich and battle ground, runneth fartheſt into the Eaſt of any part of *Ireland*, and is the out-moſt Promontory, called S. *Johns Foreland*: the *Cromwels* are intitled Vicount *Lecall*. In the very ſtreight hereof lyeth *Down*, a very famous town, and a Biſhops See, where Saint *Patricks* Tombe is ſaid to be.

By the Sea side ſtands *Arglus*, where S. *Patrick* founded a Church, and *Strangford* formerly called *Strandford*, where there is a ſafe harbour, at which the River *Coyn* with a violent courſe breaketh into the Sea from an honourable Family of the *Smiths* in *Kent* have the dignity of Vicount *Strangford*. *Ardes* the other Biland called *Audes*, lyeth over againſt *Lecall* to the North, parted with a ſmall channell out of the Lake *Coyn*, which on the Weſt ſide incloſeth it, as the ſea doth on the Eaſt, and the Bay of *Knocfergus* on the North; the ſoyle is good and fruitfull, ſave only in the middeſt where it is moiſt and wateriſh plain; the ſhore is repleniſhed with many ſmall Villages; Vicount *Montgomery* hath his title from *Ardes*. At the Bay of *Knocfergus* there was an ancient Monaſtery of the ſame Order and name with that neere *Cheſter*, to wit, *Banchor*. More inward neer the Lake is the Biſhops See of *Conereth* or *Coner*, whoſe Paſtor was devout, but his flock wicked, as Saint *Bernard* deſcribes them. *Ardes* was large in the poſſeſſion of the Savages, one of whom was perſwaded to build a Fort for his ſafeguard, made anſwer that he would not truſt to a Caſtle of ſtones, but of bones, meaning himſelfe and men. Above *Ardes* to the South-weſt lyeth *Clanbay*, that is, the yellow nation, a County full of woods, reaching to *Knocfergus*, the farthеſt part of *Down*, inhabited by the Family of the *Oneals*: the Popes are Earles of *Down*, and Barons *Bealterberts*.

The County of *Antrim* lyeth next in order unto *Louth* Northward, taking its name from a poore deſpicable town ſo called, and is ſeated in an out-corner of *Ireland* towards *Scotland*, within three hours ſaile, and is limited with *Knocfergus*, *Logh*, *Eaugh*, and the river *Ban*: the *mac Donels* are Earls of *Antrim*. *Knocfergus*, in Iriſh *Caſtelfergus*, that is, the rock of *Fergus*, where a famous man of that name was drowned; that place is well inhabited, and more frequented

red than the reſt of that country, by reaſon of a good and commodious harbour, well fortified and ſtrong: Viconnt *Chicheſter* hath his title from it. Hard by lyeth the nether *Clanboy* poſſeſſed by the *O Neals*, untill their rebellion in the queens time: now the *Hamiltons* are ſtiled Vic: *Clanboy* from this or the like place: neer *Knocfergus* there is a little Biland which runs out into the ſea, is called the Ile *Magie*, four miles in length, and one in bredth, where was a Monaſtery of that name, highly praiſed by venerable *Bede*. Then begins the *Glins*, that is, the Vallies at *Olderfleet*, which is a bad road, and run out far into the ſea: this place was formerly much annoyed with the Ilander *Scots*, under the leading of *James mac Conel*, Lord of *Cantire* in *Scotland*; but *Shan O Neale* ſlew him, and chaſed away his army. About this place, as far as the river *Ban*, is called the *Rowt*, the ſeat of the *mac Guillies*, a well eſteemed Family. *Dunluſe* caſtle, a ſtrong one, ſeated on a rock that hangeth over the ſea, the poſſeſſions of *Surley Boy*, that is, *Charles* the *Yellow*, who rebelled and was ſo chaſed by captain *Meriman*, his ſon ſlain, his cattell taken away, of which he had a great ſtock of 50000 Cows. So that he made his ſubmiſſion, and was received into the queens favour, and had a fair eſtate given unto him again upon ſome articles of agreement.

The county of *Colran* is beyond the *Glinns* weſtward, and lyeth between the river *Ban* and *Lough Foyle*, and confineth South, on the county of *Tir-Oen*. This *Ban* is a paſſing fair river, & riſeth out of the Mountains of *Mourn* in the county *Down*, carrying himſelf, and his name into *Lough Eaugh*, or *Lough Sidney*, a great lake, and for the ſpace of 30 miles, name and river are both drowned in the Lake; but after at *Tome* Caſtle he reſumeth it again, then by *Glaucolkein*, a great receptacle of robbers and rebels; carrying a proud ſtream, he tumbleth into the Sea: More abounding in Salmons this, than any river in *Europe*, it being exceeding water

in

in which such fish much delight. The principall Family is *O Cahan* a subject of *O Neal*, who in that vain ceremony of *O Neals* election, flings an old shoe over *O Neals* head. It is much molested by the Iland *Scots*, being poor, so that in Summer they seek for booty here. Towards the west of this lies *Derry*, a waste uncivil place, but through the great care, charge and industry of the City of *London*, so well planted, civilized and built, that it is scarce inferior to any place of *Ireland*; and have rightly named it *London Derry*: the *Ridgways* being Earles thereof, as *Hugh Hare* was Lord *Colrane* of *Colrane*. There is likewise a Bishop of *Derry*.

The County of *Tir-Oen* lyeth Southwest from the former country; it is upland from the sea, divided westward from *Tir Conell* by the river *Lisser*, from *Antrim* Eastward by *Lough Eaugh*, & bounded with the *Blackwater*, at South from the county *Armagh* a rough rugged uneven country 80 miles in length, and at some places 30 in bredth, severed by the Mountains called *Sliew Gallen* into the upper *Tir-Oen* Northward, and the nether Southward: there is first a poor Bishops See, called *Cloghar*, then *Dungannon* the chief habitation of the Earls, also *Ithlogabel*, where *O Neal* the Tyrant of *Ulster*, was usually installed with his vain ceremonies: there was a Fort at *Blackwater* which hath been much assaulted by the Rebels which resort thither to a refuge; but having found another passage over below that is of such use, therfore the Lord *Montjoy* built Sconces on both sides of that passage; and at the Lake *Eaugh* raised another Garrison Fort, and called it by his own name, *Mount joy*. This Lake incloseth the west-side of *Tir-Oen*, and is much supplyed by the River *Ban*, a large lake 30 miles in length, and very plentifull in fish. And Nature hath shewed her skill in bestowing variety upon the banks of it, as the shady groves, the medows alwayes green, the fertile corn-fields, if tilled, the bending and hanging hills, the warbling Brook

gliding

gliding along it, nothing wanting for delight or profit, and by that condemns the lazy lithernesse of the inhabitants, who suffer much of it to lye waste. In the upper *Tir-Oen* lyes *Strahan*, a Castle well known, as being the seat of the *O Neals* there are many more fortresses and towers with narrow loop-holes, unto which are adjoyned houses of turf and thetch, with hedges and ditches round about, to keep their Cows from robbers.

The County of *Donegall*, or *Tir-Conell*, it lyeth in the norwest corner of *Ireland*, a champion country full of Havens, bounded with the sea North and West, and parted on the East from *Tir-Oen* with the river *Lisser*, and from *Conagh* with the Lake *Erne*. *Lisser* at his very rising maketh a large stream, and spreadeth into a Lake, wherin is an Iland, in which neer to a Monastery is a narrow vault made by *Ulisses* (as some fabulously report) when he descended to hel; the inhabitants call it *Ellan a frugadory*, that is, the Ile of Purgatory, and Saint *Patricks* Purgatory: So in that place there is Saint *Brendans* Purgatory, of which much superstition is invented: this river *Lisser* neerer the sea, it maketh another Lake, called *Logh foile*, or *Logh Der*; and *Derry*, of which I spake before, bounds on it. From this river the *fitz-williams* take their Barony. Here is the fair foreland a promontory *Robogh*, with a small town having a Bp See. From hence Westward runs a cragged shore unto the mouth of *Swilly* lake; & so to the utmost promontory, which they cal the *Rams-head*, to another promontory cald *S. Helens-head*.

More Southward on the shore is that good and commodious Haven *Calebig*, whence you may see the ruines of *Sligah* castle.

A little lower, not far from the mouth of *Logh Erne* is *Donegall*, that is, the town of the *Gallitians* in *Spain*, the Earldoms have been to the *O Donels*, who held it untill their rebellious hearts cast off all true obedience.

Thus

Thus haſt thou ſeene, courteous Reader, the limbs and parts of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, laid open unto thee rich and plentious, as appears by thoſe large revenews it hath yeelded unto the Engliſh Crown, when as in King *Edward* the third his dayes ſome ſay forty thouſand pounds yearly, the Cuſtome-houſe at this time duly payd into the Exchequer, is thirty thouſand pound *per annum*. And great was that improvidence (if I may ſay it) both in civill government and Church diſcipline, that have ſuffered thoſe firebrands of the Chriſtian world, the Jeſuites, to raiſe there ſo ſudden and great flame of Rebellion, which wee hope (by Gods providence, working with the wiſdom and prudence of this preſent State now aſſembled) to ſee extinct, to the utter ruine and overthrow of that bloudy religion of Popery; and by this means ſo to root our, and diſperſe thoſe unconſtant and various diſpoſitions, that all hope of ayde and aſſiſtance from others, and oppoſition in themſelves ſhall be quite taken away.

And further, by this deſcription mayeſt thou obſerve how to entertaine the preſent profer, made by the honourable Houſes of Parliament to thy beſt contentment and advantage; how to get ſure footing in an Iland ſo great, ſo neere a neighbour to *England*, ſo fruitfull in ſoil, ſo rich in paſture more than credible; beſet with ſhady, pleaſant, profitable woods, inriched with many minerals (if ſought after) watered with ſo many Rivers, invironed with ſo many commodious Havens, lying ſo fit and open for ſailing into the moſt wealthy Countreys, ſo that he will ſeeme ſhort witted (whoſe wealth will bear it) that embraces not the preſent opportunity to inrich himſelfe in a plantation of his poſterity, in the middeſt of ſuch worldly felicity.

The end of the firſt part.

The second Part treating of the naturall Diſpoſition, Apparell, and Dyet of the Iriſh, *and of their ſeverall Rebellions.*

THe Iriſh for the moſt part are proud & haughty, cruell and barbarous, variable and inconſtant in diſpoſition, apt and forward to Tumults, rebellious to Government, falſe and hollow-hearted, more ready in promiſe then performance, the meaner lazie, idle, and ſluggiſh eſpecially the wild Iriſh, and the Engliſh Iriſh much degenerated.

Saint *Bernard* in the life of *Malla Eby* Biſhop of *Comer*, who reports that when he undertook his charge there, perceived that he was not come unto men but unto beaſts, no where had he until then experience of ſuch, in the moſt barbarous parts that ever hee came unto: no where had hee found ſo Manners ſo froward, for Rites ſo deviliſh, for Faith ſo impious, for Laws ſo barbarous, for Diſcipline ſo ſtiffe-necked, & for Life ſo filthy. Chriſtians they were in name, but Pagans in deed, lawfull Marriages they contracted none, or ſuch as are ſhamefull even with children of ten yeeres old.

So *Langfrank* complains to a King of Ireland, *Thordelueth*, that the Iriſhmen forſake and leave their Wives at their plea-

pleaſure without any juſt cauſe, and marry any others, even ſuch as be neer of kin to themſelves, or to the ſaid forſaken wives: and if an other man with like wickednesſe hath caſt off his wife, her likewiſe with like raſhneſſe they joyn withall.

With which Rites if this Nation of the Iriſh had not bin corrupted almoſt to our days, both the right of lineall ſucceſſion among them had been more certain, and as well the Gentry as the vulgar had not embrued themſelves ſo wickedly with the effuſion of ſo much bloud of their own kinred about their inheritance and legitimation, nor had they become ſo infamous in theſe reſpects among other forreigne Nations.

And further concerning their natures and diſpoſition, you may take the relation from the Earle of *Eſſex* his Letter to Q. *Eliſabet* gathered by his experience.

The people in generall have able bodies by nature, and have gotten by cuſtome ready uſe of armes, and by their late ſucceſſe, boldneſſe to fight with your Majeſtis forces.

In their pride they value no man but themſelves, in their affections, they love nothing but idleneſſe and licentiouſnes, in their Rebellion, they have no other end but to ſhake off the yoke of obedience, to root out all remembrance of the Engliſh Nation in that Kingdome. This is the generall quarrell of the Iriſh, and they who doe not profeſſe it, are either ſo few, or ſo falſe, that there is no account to be made of them.

The Iriſh Nobility and Lords of Countries do not only in their hearts affect this quarrell, and are divided from us in Religion, but have an eſpeciall grudge againſt the Engliſh Government, becauſe it limiteth and tyeth them, who have and ſtill would be ſupream Lords, if not Tyrants. The Towns being inhabited by men of the ſame Religion and

birth

birth with the reſt, are ſo carried away with the love of gaine, and for that cauſe ſupply the Rebels with what they want: therefore they muſt be ſtrictly looked unto.

The Laws of the Iriſh was that of fiſh and birds, the great devoure the leſſe, the ſtrong the weak, having but one Free-holder in a County, and he Lord both of eſtate and lives of the reſt.

For their ſucceſſion to inheritances, it was by the law or cuſtome called *Taniſtry*, mentioned by that excellent Hiſtorian Sir *Walter Rawleigh*: which is this, that a man is preferred to a boy: the Uncle before the Nephew, and commonly the moſt active, not the next heire is choſen, to hinder the inroad and oppreſſion of the next adjoyning Lord, between whom there was alwayes contention, which did ſo waſt and conſume them, or elſe being idle, the Land would not have ſuſtained them.

Concerning the apparell of the Iriſh it is after a ſlovenly manner, and the very Engliſh, there are much infected with this naſty filthineſſe, eſpecially lowzie beds, and foule linnen, except where the chiefe Engliſh live, as in Dublin, Wateford, and Kinſale, which in ſome meaſure retaine the Engliſh neatneſſe; but for the meere wilde Iriſh it may be ſaid of them as of the Germans, that they wander ſlovenly and naked, and lodge in the ſame room with their cattle.

Among them the better ſort uſed to weare cloſe breeches and ſtockings of the ſame, of red or ſome light colour, ſo ſtraight that the unſeemly parts of the body were expoſed unto view.

They uſed likewiſe a looſe Coat and a three covered Mantle of coarſe cloth, with a cap of Thrums.

Their linnen is coarſe and ſlovenly, they ſeldome caſt off a ſhirt untill it be rotten, and are coloured with Saffron to avoid Lice, which are incident to thoſe people, and they are

very nimble in taking Lice in a Sunny day, or a green bank.

But in the more Northern parts before the ſtrict civilizing of them in King *James* his time, both men and women went naked in the very Winter, having only their ſecret parts covered with a rag and a looſe Mantle caſt over them.

Thus naked they walke with their ſword tyed unto them with a wyth inſtead of a belt.

And at night men and women lye in a Ring together, round about the fire, in the middle of the roome with their feet towards it, folding their head and upper parts in their woollen Mantle firſt ſteeped in water to keep them warm, for they ſay, woollen wetted, and warmed by the heat of their bodies, doth preſerve heat.

The Church Diſcipline hath beene formerly and now is after the ſame manner with that in England, by Archbiſhops, whereof there are foure, Biſhops 29, many more formerly.

It has beene anciently a great Nurſery of Religion and Pietie: even from (if not before) Saint *Patricks* time, and Saint *Bridget* his Diſciple, who did advance Religion and Piety much in that Kingdome, as alſo in ſundry other places of Chriſtendome.

The Biſhops were formerly conſecrated by the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, untill the yeere 1142: at what time Pope *Eugenius* the fourth, ſent Cardinall *Paperio*, who together with *Chriſtian* Biſhop of Liſmore, Legat of all Ireland, held a Councell at Mell, and with the conſent of the Biſhops, Abbots, Kings, and Dukes of Ireland, eſtabliſhed foure Archbiſhops, *videlicet* Armagh, Dublin, Caſſile, and Toam. But the eſtate of the Clergy has been very meane there, ſo that by reaſon of devouring impropriations in the whole County of Connought. The Incumbents ſtipend is not above forty ſhillings, and at ſome places but fifteene ſhil-

ſhillings *per annum*, that the people muſt needs be better fed then taught.

Their allowance being anſwerable to the Iriſh Biſhops in former time, who had but three milch Kine allowed them, and when one was dry, the Pariſh did change her for another.

Which makes the Goſpell to languiſh where it finds ſo poore entertainment; that the Meſſengers thereof through want and neceſſity ſhould live ſo mean and contemptibly: and it gives great advantage to the Prieſts and Jeſuits both to abound and ſeduces who have mayntenance from elſewhere.

The right and title of the Engliſh Crown to Ireland was by Conqueſt, by Surrender, and Submiſſion.

THe Danes firſt invaded it with forreigne forces, then the Norwegians got poſſeſſion of it; but they were rooted out by the policie of that King of Meth, who had a beautifull Virgin to his daughter, with whom *Turgeſius* was much inflamed, requiring her to ſatisfie his luſt, to whoſe will the poore Prince could not aſſent, yet durſt not deny. So that he told him he had at home a Bevy of faire Ladies, out of which hee ſhould chooſe for his pleaſure. *Turgeſius* hearing that, wiſhed theſe Damſels *Cupids* wings for their more ſpeedy arrivall.

But the other attired certaine young men of courage in womens apparell, and had them conducted into the Kings Chamber, from whence all his attendance were commanded, but when hee expected more kinde embraces, hee was ſuddenly ſlaine in the place; ſo the Norwegians were deſtroyed, and the Iriſh enjoyed their eſtate untill the yeere 1172.

When

When *Dermot Mac Morck* King of Lemſter, having forced the wife of *Maurice O Rork* King of Meth (a light woman, and with conſent) by whoſe husband the other was purſued ſo eagerly with the revenging ſword; that hee was driven to quite his Kingdome of Lemſter, and fly to England for ſuccour to *Henry* the Second, who very willingly entertained this occaſion; who had long ſought occaſion of getting Ireland.

Yet not willing to entertain it at the firſt in perſon (being not a matter of that conſequence for himſelf to undertake)

He gave Dermot licence to draw what power of Voluntiers he could into that action.

Who applyed himſelf to Wales, where he found a valiant Gentleman of Norman Race, one *Robert Fitz Stephen*, who willingly undertook the ſervice with ſome Voluntiers whoſe happy and good ſucceſſe, cauſed *Richard* Earle of *Pembroke*, called *Strong-bow*, being the principall man invited by *Dermot*, and that with the promiſe of his daughter and Kingdome in marriage, the Earle himſelfe with two hundred men at arms, and a thouſand other Souldiers who arrived in the Bay of Waterford 1171, and preſently marched towards the town of Waterford and took it by force the next day, to the exceeding terrour of that Nation.

Dermot then accompliſhes the match, giving the Earle his daughter *Eva*; with which Ring of Mariage he affianced that Iſland unto this Kingdome: for hee went on with ſuch reſolutions, that hee in little ſpace ſubdued much of Ireland.

Which news being carried unto *Henry* the Second, hee made haſt over thither, that hee might have the glory of the Conqueſt, and ſeemed to be diſpleaſed with the Earle for his forwardneſſe, and his rigorous uſing of that people, recalling all from thence, under pain of confiſcation of their

their goods in England, but the King ſeemed ſomewhat appeaſed before his going over, which was 1172, at which time landing at Waterford, hee impriſoned *Robert Fitz. Stephen*, as having gone over without his leave, but not long after releaſed him, but took Weiford and other Territories from him.

Thus did hee receive the homage of divers Iriſh petty Kings, willing to obtain them by gentle means.

And keeping his Chriſtmaſſe there in great ſtate, and ſetling the Government of the Church, hee is unexpectedly called into England, leaving *Hugh Lacy* at Dublin.

Who in enſuing time rebelled, and were brought under by King *John*, who was the firſt that planted Engliſh Laws and Officers in Ireland, and both annexed that Kingdome and faſtned Wales to the Crown of England: and was the firſt who enlarged the Royall ſtyle with Lord of Ireland.

In the yeere 1339, there was a generall warre betweene the Engliſh and Iriſh, wherein many of the Iriſh periſhed, after which time matters were quiet untill the eighteenth yeere of *Richard* the Second, being 1400.

Who went over then with a great Army, but having accepted of the Rebels ſubmiſſion he returned into England: during whoſe time and till the civill warres in England all matters were ſetled and compoſed without any charge or aſſiſtance out of this Kingdome.

But in the time of the wars between York and Lancaſter, wherein many Noble Families were quite extinguiſhed in England, many Engliſh came out of Ireland either to take part or poſſeſsion of ſome inheritances, which fell unto them by the death of their friends.

So they have but ſmall regard of what they leave behind in Ireland. The meere Iriſh ruſhed on the forſaken lands, ſo that growing rich and proud they began to kick againſt authority;

thority; willing to caſt off the Engliſh yoke, and the Engliſh Pale had its limits ſometime more and ſometimes leſſe, according as they were able to mayntaine.

But when thoſe civill diſcords were blown over, and all things became calme by the good ſucceſſe of *Henry* the Seventh, and leaſure afforded to look towards Ireland, which then harboured a Rebell againſt him, one *Perkin Warbeck* who conterfeited himſelf *Richard* the Third, but was ſuppreſſed by the ſending over of 1000 men.

Again, *Henry* the eighth ſent over 500 ſouldiers to ſuppreſſe the *Geraldines* of Engliſh Race.

Afterward, all peaceable, untill Queene *Elizabeths* time, when they ſaw themſelves out of hope to plant Popiſh Superſtition in any of her Dominions.

Then Religion (never untill that age) became the cloake for Rebellion, and the Roman Locuſts, the incendiaries of Chriſtendome, to mayntaine the Popes uſurped authority, breathed every where fire and ſword, and worſe againſt her ſacred perſon and Dominions. And taking advantage of the blinde zeale of the ignorant Iriſh unto Popery: working on their variable condition. Boulſtering up their hopes and hearts with that old ſaying,

He that will England *win, muſt at* Ireland *firſt begin.*

By which means they raiſed two dangerous Rebellions in that Country.

By the Earle of *Deſmond* one 1578, the other of *Tyrone*, about 1590, plotting and intending, although it brake not out till afterward.

This *Gerald* Earle of *Deſmond* of Engliſh Race, whoſe Progenitours had done good ſervice againſt the Iriſh, and borderers of Wales, in the behalfe of the Engliſh King, had

the

the Earldome of Kildare given them, and Earles of *Desmond*, by *Edward* the Third.

But in *Henry* the Eighth's days, one of them being Lord Deputy, and questioned for his ill government, on which occasion *Thomas Fitz Gerald* his sonne took armes, but was soon suppressed himselfe, and five of his Uncles being taken and executed.

Queen *Mary* restored the Family to honour and estate.

But after *Gerald* Earle of *Desmond*, 1578, rebelled against Queene *Elizabeth* unto whose aide came certaine bands of *Italians* and *Spaniards*, sent by Pope *Gregory* the twelfth, and *Philip* King of *Spaine*, who landed at *Swirwie*, and built a Fort called *Del ore*, wherein they were besieged by *Arthur Grey* Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, soone taken and put to the sword: And the Earle of *Desmond* flying into the Woods, being betrayed by his own followers, and his head cut off. So this fire soon vanished into smoake, and the Earldome by Parliament annexed to the Crowne, and made a County: with Sheriffs appointed yeerly to be chosen by the Lord Deputy.

Upon the Attainder of this Earle and his Confederates, much land fell unto the Crown, *viz.* 574628 acres English mesure, wherof great part was restored to the offenders, the rest divided into Signories, was granted by Letters Patents unto certaine Knights and Esquires English, who were called Undertakers.

In *Kerry* and *Desmond*, by Patent to Knights 30560 Acres with yeerly rents 524 pounds, six shillings and eight pence sterling.

In *Limrick* by Patent to Knights and Esquires, and to their heirs were granted 96165 Acres, with rents nine hundred thirty three pounds, foure shillings half peny sterling.

In *Corke*, by Patent to Knights and Esquires, and to their

heires were granted 88917 Acres, with Rents, five hundred and twelve pounds, seven shillings and six pence half peny sterling.

In *Waterford* and *Tipperary* 12910 Acres, with Rents three hundred and three pounds, three pence sterling.

But these Undertakers having got so large a proportion of Lands, and so little care to plant them with English Colonies; and build and fortifie them with Castles as by Patent they were tied, but for private ends without any regard to the publick good or her Majesties bounty, sold them either to Papists or to Irish ill affected unto the English, which was a great prejudice to the State of that Kingdom, and the seeds of the ensuing Rebellion raised by *Tyrone*.

Concerning which I will briefly shew unto the Reader such collections as I have gathered from divers Authors.

COncerning the name and title of *O Neale*; it is in so much esteeme, that even those honourable titles of Earles, Marquesses, Dukes and Princes are despised in regard of that: and in such reverent regard among the Irish, that it is thought hee deserves the greatest curse in the world to fall upon him that shall dare to lay violent hands upon him: nor have any loyall subjects a more dreadfull awe to violate the person of their sacred Prince, then these people have to touch their great *O Neale*.

So that two thousand pound being offered by Proclamation to any that should betray him in his vast Campe, prevailed nothing at all, although hee were proclaymed Traitour, and held guilty of that crime by Act of Parliament to take that name upon him.

Neere *Tullogh Oge*, there was a stone Chaire placed in the open field, wherein he sate down that was created, then we

we whose office it was, took an old shooe and cast it over his head, proclayming him *O Neale*.

Henry O Neale and *Con mare* matching into the Family of the Earles of *Kildare*, by this their good fortune grew so insolent and proud, that by their cruell tyranny they grew intolerable.

Con Bunto, because lame, succeeded his father in the dignity of *O Neale*, and cursed his posterity if any of them should learne English, sow corne, or build houses to entertain the English.

This mans greatnesse grew in suspition with *Henry* the eighth, having been a party in the former Rebellion of the Earle of *Kildare*: which hee perceiving went into *England*, renounced the title of *O Neale*, and surrendred his Lands unto the King.

Which not long after was regranted unto him by *Henry* the eighth to hold in fee, together with the title of the Earl of *Tyrone* to him, and to *Matthew* his reputed sonne, and to the heires of their bodies lawfully begotten.

At which time also *Matthew* was created Baron of *Dungannon*: This *Matthew* till hee was fifteene yeeres of age, was reputed the sonne of a blacksmith of *Dundalk*, whose Wife *Con* had formerly kept, and shee at her death gave him unto the said *Con*, as being his sonne which hee did accept, and appointed him to be Lord of *Dungannon*, but hee was murthered in his fathers life time by *Shane*, that is, *John O Neale* the lawfull heire of *Con*, but *Matthew* the base sonne left *Brian* who was murthered by *O Donell* at the instance of *Shan*.

And *Hugh* and *Cormack*, who by the means and help of the English were preserved, yet both proved Rebels, *Shan* being barbarous and bloudy, did rave and rage in a cruell manner over the Lords and people of *Vlster*.

Began to diſpute that his father had no power to ſurrender to *Henry* the Eighth, being but a termer: that *Matthew* was baſe borne, that himſelfe was *O Neale*, and had Soveraigne power and authority over the Lords of *Vlſter*.

Who taking armes overthrew *O Really*, and took *Calloghe O Donnell*, Lord of *Tir Conell*, caſt him and his children into priſon, took his wife from him, and bore himſelfe as abſolute King of *Vlſter*.

But hee was ſoone quelled by the forces of the Earle of *Suſſex*, the then Lord Deputy: and by perſwaſion of the Earle of *Kildare*, went into *England*, and made great ſubmiſsion to Queen *Elizabeth*, and promiſing allegiance, was received courteouſly.

And ſo returning conformed himſelfe awhile in civill manner, and did ſome good ſervice againſt the *Scots*, killed their Leader, and drove them out of *Vlſter*, howbeit hee ſuddenly fell to his old byas, and played the Tyrant over the Lords of *Vlſter*, who craved aid of the Lord Deputy to ſuppreſſe him; but he grew the more outragious, and with fire and ſword drave *Mac Guir*, Lord of *Fermanagh*, out of his Country: ſet fire on the Metropolitan Church of *Armagh*, and laid ſiege to *Dundalke*, but had the repulſe by the Garriſon and aſsiſtance of the Major.

But Sir *Henry Sidney* Lord Deputy, taking the field with ſome forces: ſent *Edw. Baldolph* a brave Souldier to the North ſide of *Ireland*, where at *Derry* at *Coghfoyle* in a pitchfield (though hee loſt his life) yet gave the rebell ſuch an overthrow, that he was never able to appeare any more abroad; ſo that hee was minded to have ſubmitted with a halter about his neck to the Deputy, but by the perſwaſion of his Secretary hee tried, the friendſhip of the *Scots*, who received him kindly, but not long after ſlue him.

So

So that presently after *Shan* by a Parliament at *Dublin*, was attainted of high Treason; and all that hee had fell to the Queen. Then *Turlogh, Linnogh*, took the title off *O Neal*, for feare of the children of *Shan*, and *Matthew* the bastard, but being aged was quiet, and lived peaceably.

Now *Hugh* son of the base son *Matthew* lived somtime in *Ireland*, but much in the Court of *England*, commonly called Baron of *Dungannon*, who had served with a troop of horse under the Queen against the Lord of *Desmond*, and behaved himselfe so valiantly, that hee had given him a yeerly pension off a hundred marks.

He was a man of mean stature, but of a strange body, able to endure labours, watching, hunger and cold, being industrious and active, valiant, affable, and apt to manage great affaires, and of a hgh dissembling, subtile, and profound wit.

He put up a Petition to the Parliament in *Ireland*, that he might enjoy the inheritance of his Grandfather *Con*, and his father, granted to be Earles of *Tirone*, which by the help of Sir *John Perrot*, Lord Deputy, was procured of the Queen.

And so hee handled the matter (as well knowing the humour of the Court of *England*) that through the Queenes mediation he got *Turlogh, Linnogh*, to surrender his government upon some conditions.

After whose death he usurped the title of *O Neale*, which was capitall, yet coloured it over with a pretence, that it was only to hinder others.

In the yeer 1588, when that great Armado of *Spaine* was scattered by the *English*, and many of the ships cast away on the *Irish* coast: it is thought that this *Hugh* lodging and entertaining many of them, was by them seduced and perswaded to Rebellion.

And going into *England*, he was there detained prisoner,

for that he came without the licence of the Lord Deputie, Sir *William Fitz Williams*: but on submission, and certaine Articles proposed to him by the Lords, and he willingly accepting promising to confirme them before the Lord Deputy in *Ireland*.

In the yeere 1590, it hapned that *Con* the sonne of *Shan O Neale*, accused *Hugh* of treasonable practices before the Lords in *England*.

All which *Hugh* vehemently denied; but after getting his accuser in his power, he hanged him.

In *August*, the same yeere *Hugh* Earle of *Tyrone*, (for so hereafter we must call him, did promise under his hand before the Lord Deputy: and counsell of *Ireland* to performe those Articles agreed upon in *England*, but used many excuses to put off the execution of them.

And about this time *Hugh Roe Mac Mahone* was put to death by the Lord Deputy *Williams* very unjustly (as some say) to the great scandall of the Lord Deputy; and it caused great complaints and out-cryes among the *Irish*, who presently preferred their grievances against that Deputy, and he driven to answer them.

And upon this fact the government of the *English* in the North became odious, and they did strive what they could to shake it off, by expelling the Sheriffs from among them, fearing the like usage as *Mac Mahone*. And 1593, *Mac Guir* chiefe of *Fermanagh* stood upon his guard, accusing the Deputy of injustice in the businesse off *Mahone*, and set upon Captain *Willis*, and drove him and his guard bring Sheriffe into a Church, and would have put them all to the sword, had not *Tyrone*, interceded for them.

Whereupon the Deputy got into his hands *Enistillin Mac Guirs* castle, and proclaimed him a Traytor, and likewise gave out some hard speeches concerning *Tyrone*, which

did

did much exasperate him, and caused him to combine with the Lords of the North, to defend their Honours, Laws, and Liberties: and used two notable plots to assist him towards this Rebellion.

1 To make his men skilfull, hee prefered to serve the Queen with 500 men of his own.

And for that end procured expert Captains to exercise them; and to often changing these his men, got most of his followers to be able Souldiers.

Secondly, hee pretended to build a faire house at *Dungannon*, and so got much lead to make Battlements, which after he cast into bullets.

In the meane time Sir *Henry Bagnal* Marshall of *Ireland*, whose Sister *Tyrone* had married, did preferre many Articles against him, unto which hee answered so cunningly, saying, that the Marshall did it out of spleen of purpose to detain his sisters portion, and seemingly quitted himselfe; but afterward he grew jealous of his owne safety.

At this time *Gauranus* a Priest whom the Pope had made Primate of all *Ireland*, seduced certaine Irish Lords, among which *Mac Guir* was chief, and was overthrowne by Sir *Richard Bingham*, and the Priest slaine: in which service *Tyrone* was against *Mac Guir* with the Queens forces, but secretly prepared for his Rebellion.

Then the sonnes of *Shan O Neale*, were prisoners in *Dublin* Castle, which had they been kept, had been a bridle in *Tyrones* mouth; but by connivance of Sir *William Fitz williams* the Deputy, were suffered to escape, and so *Tyrone* got them into his custody, nor would he release them although thereunto required.

But covering his Rebellion, with seeming fears of his conceived enemies, made daily complaints of the Marshals envy; and what wrong he had done him.

In the yeere 1594, the Rebellion burst out; Sir *William Ruf-*

Ruſſel came in the place of *Fuzwilliams*, at which time *Munſter* men openly diſtreſſed her Majeſties forces, and *Tyrone* was ſuppoſed to countenance them.

Yet he appeared in perſon at *Dublin*, before the new Lord Deputy, deſiring her Majeſties favour, out of which hee had falne, rather by the calumny of them, then any cauſe of his own.

But the Marſhall charged him with great matters, ready to prove them; ſo that the Deputy thought fit to ſtay him, but the Councell of *Ireland* were of the contrary opinion, ſo he was let goe, but the Queene was much diſpleaſed for it, and ſharply reproved the Deputy, but he laid the fault on the Councell of *Ireland*.

And preſently tooke the field with his Army to relieve *Eniskillen* in *Fermanagh*, and in the Winter following, there was little done becauſe there was ſome Treaties of peace, but the Rebels grew ſo peremptory in their demands, that it was not liked by the Lords in *England*.

And therefore ſent over two thouſand old ſouldiers that had ſerved in *Britany*, and a thouſand more taken up in *England*, which news *Tyrone* hearing, and that the Caſtle of *Balſhannan*, and *Relike*, were to be planted with Engliſh Gariſons. Drew his forces together, and tooke the Fort of *Blackwater*, razed it: and broke down the bridge there, and now the Northerne Rebels appeare, but *Tyrone* ſhewed a ſeeming deſire of pardon.

This Lord Deputy fearing this ſtorme might fall upon him, deſired the Counſel of *England* to ſend him an aſſiſtant of ſome experienced Souldiers, which hee meant ſhould be under his command, but the Lords miſtaking his meaning, ſent over Sir *John Norris*, a great Commander and well experienced, that would ſcarce give way to any, who was ſtyled Lord Generall, and to command in chief, in the abſence of the Lord Deputy.

But

But the emulation that grew between theſe two hindered the buſineſſe; yet both of them went into the field, with the Army towards *Armagh*.

Tyrone makes ſuit again by Letters for pardon, but being intercepted, came not unto the Deputies hands, untill hee had proclaymed him Traytor.

But upon *Tyrones* inſtance, Commiſsioners were appointed by the Queen to treat with the Rebels.

At which time *Tyrone* complained of the Marſhall of many injuries.

And his demands were, that hee might have his Wives portion of the Marſhall, and the free exerciſe of his Religion, and many other.

But when Articles were propounded on the Queenes part, they ſet ſo light of them, and made ſuch ſcorne, that the Conference brake off: though the Queen for ſparing of bloud, had reſolved to give them any reaſonable Conditions.

This parley ended, the Lord Deputy, and the Lord Generall comming to *Armagh*, did ſo much terrifie the Rebels that *Tyrone* left the Fort of *Blackwater*, burnt the Town of *Dungannon*, and pull'd down his houſe there, and betooke himſelfe to the Woods.

Sept. the third, *Hugh* Earle of *Tyrone*, *Hugh O Donel*, *Brian O Rourk*, *Hugh Mack Guir*, *Brian Mac Mahone*, Sir *Arthur O Neale*, *Cormac Mach Baron Tyrones* brother, *Con O Neale Tyrones* baſe ſonne, *Henry Oge O Neale*, *Turlogh Mac Henry O Neale*, *Brian Art Mac Bryan*, and one *Francis Mountford* were (though abſent) indicted, and condemned of high Treaſon.

Now the *Lemſter* Rebels being revolted grew ſtrong, and forraged even to the gates of *Dublin*, to the County of *Wexford*.

This Winter paſſed without any matter of moment, becauſe indeed, Generall *Norris* not yet acquainted with *Tyrones* ſubtilties, ſeemed to harken to peace, thereby to reclayme him by faire means.

In the yeere 1596, the Queen granted another Commiſſion for the Treaty of Peace, and offered very largely, and at *Dundalke Tyrone* upon his knees made an humble ſubmiſſion to the Queen before theſe Commiſſioners, and made many requeſts, promiſing reformation, and many circumſtances and Ceremonies then paſſed. But theſe inconveniences followed, theſe delayes being no better then deluſions, that the *Vlſter* Rebels had reſt this Summer, and *O Neale* in the midſt of this Negotiation, required aid from *Spain*.

Sir *Richard Bingham* a valiant wiſe man, on ſome complaint of the *Iriſh*, was ſent for over into *England*, and Sir *Coniers Clifford* ſent in his place: but afterwards Sir *Richard* was againe employed in great command in that ſervice.

Again, an other Treaty of Peace with *Tyrone*, who layd the cauſe of his diſloyalty, on the wrongs that were offered him; and ſo with many diſſembling words, oaths, and proteſtations, making anſwer to ſome queſtions concerning *Spaine*, he departed.

This Lord Deputy being recalled into *England*, and the Lord *Bourgh* or *Borough* was ſent over in his place, with abſolute authority: ſo that Sir *John Norris* was much diſheartened thereby: and was thought of purpoſe for that end ſent over by the Earle of *Eſſex*, whom Generall *Norris* had diſpleaſed by undertaking an action with leſſe force then the ſaid Earle required.

At this Dep. arriving Generall *Norris* was commanded to his charge, which was Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, and not to ſtirre thence without leave, which thing did preſently

ly break his heart, ſo that he died there in the armes of his brother Sir *Thomas Norris*.

Now *Tyrone* ſubmitted or ſweld as he ſaw occaſion.

So that the Lord Deputy perceiving it preſently, made his way towards *Tyrone*, thinking it beſt to ſtrike at the head; who encountred the *Iriſh* in a narrow path, and made them give way: hee tooke the Fort at *Blackwater*, and left Souldiers in it, which being not long, after aſſailed by the Rebels, was againe relieved by the Lord Deputy, who immediatly fell ſick, as hee was paſſing to *Tyrones* houſe at *Dungannon*; and not long after departed this world, to the great joy of the Rebels, who found his ſeverity diſadvantagious to them.

Then Sir *Thomas Norris*, Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, under the great Seale of *England*, was made Lord Juſtice of *Ireland*, who repaired to Dublin; but being very ill through the great grief he conceived for the loſſe of his brother in a moneths ſpace, he made ſuit to be releaſed.

So that *Adam Loſius* Lord Chancelour, the Lord Archbiſhop of *Ireland*, and *Robert Gardiner* chiefe Juſtice of *Ireland*, by Patent from *England*, were made Lord Juſtices for the Civill Government.

And the Earle of *Ormond*, was made Lord Lievtenant and chief Generall of all Martiall affaires.

Tyrone again ſues for pardon, and proffers ſubmiſsion, ſaying, that it was offered injuries that compelled him thus to revolt: So there was another meeting appointed at *Dundalke* *Decemb.* 22. where on his knees hee ſhewed great ſorrow; and made humble ſubmiſsion, deſiring a ceſſation from Armes eight weeks, now this ſubmiſsion being ſent into *England*, the Lord Lievtenant received authority from the Queen to make a finall concluſion; ſo that another meeting was appointed, *March* 15 at *Dundalke*, where many ar-

ticles were propounded to the Rebels, which they ſlightly regarded; but for better deliberation, *Tyrone* deſired the tenth of *April*, for another meeting.

But *Tyrone* with pretences did fruſtrate all theſe parleys, and though hee had his generall pardon granted, yet continued he in his diſloyall courſes; ſo that on the former Indictment 1595, he is after out-lawed in 1600.

But he being prepared and his men expert, by trayning and often skirmiſhing, whereas at the firſt two or three of them were employed in the diſcharge of a Musket, hee left off to diſſemble and ſubmitted no more, but gives incouragement, and that with good ſucceſſe unto his Confederates.

Firſt, he ſends ayde to the *Lemſter* Rebels to annoy the Engliſh, and aſſaulted the Fort of *Blackwater*; as being a hinderance in his paſsing too and fro.

But Captaine *Williams* valiantly defended it with great loſſe to *Tyrone*, who went and lay further off, but this Captaine and his Company continued their defence bravely untill *Auguſt*, though much pinched with want of victuals: when Sir *Henry Bagnal* Marſhall of *Ireland* with foot and horſe of the Engliſh endeavoured to relieve it, and paſsing along the narrow paſſages through the thicke Woods beyond *Armagh*.

Where the Rebell with all his force aſſayled him, and bearing a deadly hatred and malice againſt the Marſhall, againſt whom he bent his whole ſtrength, and commanded his Souldiers ſo to doe, that he had the fortune to kill him; yet like a valiant Gentleman he ſold his life at a deare rate, to many of the Rebels. But his fall cauſed our mens hearts to fayle; whereupon the Rebell had the greateſt advantage againſt the Engliſh: the like never hapning againe, called The Defeat at *Blackwater*.

Wherein

wherein we loſt thirteen valiant Captains, and fifteen hundred old Souldiers: whereupon likewiſe the ſurrender of the Fort enſued.

It was thought this misfortune to happen from an overſight of the Marſhall, who made the Van of the army too ſuddenly to retreat; and too ſudden faces about, puts feare in the Reare; and makes them ſuppoſe it may be a running away.

For as Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in his fifth book & firſt part of the Hiſtory of the World, that as well in the Wars of theſe later ages as in former times it hath been found ever extreame dangerous to make a Retreat in the head of an enemies army: as he renders the reaſon, but I cannot digreſſe any further.

This overthrow much increaſed the inſolencie of the Rebels, the Rebells having gotten courage and armes thereby, and *Tyrone* termed the Deliverer of his Countrey, and the authour of their liberty.

All *Vlſter* in Rebellion, *Connagh* revolted, and the Rebels in *Lemſter* a continuall terrour and vexation to the Engliſh.

And now *Tyrone* ſent forces into *Munſter*, where after the departure of Sir *John Norris*, moſt of the County revolted, and now brake out like Lightning, making havock, and deſtroying in a barbarous manner. And for the better countenancing of the matter, a new pretended Earle of *Deſmond* is ſet up, on condition to be Vaſſall to *O Neale*.

At this time a ſupply came out of *England*, of a thouſand and fifty old Souldiers from out the Low Countreys; and nine hundred and fifty joyned to them of new, raiſed in *England*, ſent under the command of Sir *Samuel Bagnal* Colonel, and nine other Captains to ſtrengthen the Queenes forces in *Lemſter*, and a hundred under Colonel *Bagnals* command.

In the midſt of theſe broyls, the impudent Rebell is no-

aſhamed to intreat for pardon, and ſue for peace.

Although, as appeared in his Letters ſent to the King of *Spaine*, he magnified his victories, and vowed perſeverance: but his conditions were inſolent and ſo not regarded.

And now the wound is growne ſo great, and the caſe ſo deſperate that it admits of no cure, but by the hand of a valiant expert ſouldier.

And none found like *Robert* Earle of *Eſſex*, whom favour with the Queen, and fortune of warre had made popular.

And his own active inclination, and the policie of his powerfull enemies in Court, wrought it for his undertaking; and by his abſence they plotted his enſuing overthrow.

But before his going two Regiments of old Souldiers out of the Low Countries were ſent into *Ireland*, and diſperſed at his comming through the whole army, for the exerciſe of the reſt.

The firſt Regiment Sir *Charles Percy* Colonell.
Richard Moriſon Lievtenant Colonel, and five other Captains. } 1050 Foot.

The ſecond Regiment, Sir *Henry Bockora*, Colonell.
Captaine *John Chamberlaine* Lievtenant Colonell, and four other Captains. } 950 Foot.

This Earls Commiſſion was large, without limitation almoſt even the power of a Prince, and an army as great as hee deſired, the like unto which in all points *Ireland* never ſaw.

The

The eſtabliſhment was ſealed by the Qu. March 24, 1598.
It contained the pay of the chief officers of the Army.

The Lord Lievtenant Generall, *per diem*,	10 l.		
The Lievtenant of the Army, *per diem*,	3		
The Generall of the Horſe	2		
The Judge Marſhall	1		
The Auditor Generall	0	13 s.	
The Controuller generall of the victuals	0	10	
The Lievtenant of the Ordnance	0	19	
The Surveigher	0	6	8 d.
Two Clerks of Munition, each	0	5	
Foure Corporals of the Field	0	6	8 d.
One Commiſſary of Victuals	0	8	
And three others each	0	6	
The carriage Maſter	0	6	
And twenty Colonels each		10	

Sum. total. per annum, 13127 l. 16 s. 8 d.

More it contained, the pay of thirteen hundred horſe divided into twenty ſix Bands

A Captain at *per diem*,	0	4 s.	
A Lievtenant	0	2	6 d.
A Cornet	0	2	
And fifty horſmen, each at	0	1	3 d.

Sum. total. per annum, 31408. l. 5 s.

It contained further ſixteen hundred foot, diſtributed into a hundred and ſixty Companies, each Band having

A Captain at *per diem*,	0	4 s.	
A Lievtenant	0	2	
An Enſigne	0	1 s.	6 d.

Two

Two Sergeants, a Drum, and a Surgeon each at *per diem* 1 s.
And 94 Souldiers and ſix dead payes allowed to the Captain, each at *per diem* 8 d.

Sum total. 228246 l. 13 s. 4 d.

It further contained an extraordinary ſupply of ſix thouſand pounds *per annum*, to be allowed by concordation, for Spies, Guides, Meſſengers, Barks hyring, keeping of Priſoners, Buildings, Reparations, and like charges.

The totall of the eſtabliſhment *per annum*, amounts to two hundred ſeventy ſeven thouſand, ſeven hundred eighty two pounds.

Beſides, her Majeſty was at great charge not contained in the eſtabliſhment: as firſt for Officers generall.

The Lord Lievtenant for his ordinary entertainment yeerly, 1300 l.
His Lordſhips troop of horſe yeerly 1513 l. 2 s. 2 d.
His Lordſhips fifty footmen, as being allowed him for his followers, 608 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Treaſurer at wars *per annum*, 638 l. 15 s.
The Marſhall of the army *per annum*, 104 l. 18 s. 9 d.
The Mr. of the Ordnance for himſelfe *per an.* 450 l. 3. s. 4 d.
For Clerks, Gunners, and Miniſters for the Ordnance, *per annum*, 459 l. 5 s. 10 d.
The Muſter Maſter Generall *per annum*, 209 l. 17 s. 6 d.

Secondly, for chief Officers newly erected.

The Governour of *Loghfoyle*, *per annum*, 365 l.
The Governour of *Caricfergus*, 182 l. 10 s.
The Governour of *Dundalke*, 182 l. 10 s.
The Commander of the forces at *Raihdrum* and *Wickelow*, 182 l. 18 s.

The

The Commander of the Forces in *Ophaly*, 182 l. 10 s.
The Commander of the Forces at *Cavan*, 182 l. 10 s.

Sum. total. 6590 l. 19 s. 7 d.

Moſt of theſe Officers laſt named, beſides this laſt allowance, have either a horſe or foot company in the Army, or both:

Thirdly, a further charge the Queen was at for Officers in the foure Courts, and certain Patentees.

In the Exchequer, the Earle of *Ormond*, Lord Treaſurer of *Ireland*, for his fee *per annum*, 40 l.
The Treaſurour at Warr, 66 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Chiefe Baron, 71 l. 10 s.
And in augmentation to him, 88 l. 17 s. 9 d.
The Chancellour, 14 l.
The ſecond Baron, 34 l.
The Auditor Generall, 200 l.
The Surveigher Generall, 80 l.
The Remembrancer, 40 l.
The Serjeant at Law, 17 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Attourney Generall, 149 l. 6. s. 8 d.
The Sollicitour, 149 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Eſcheatour, 81. 13 s. 4 d.
The ſecond Remembrancer, 10 l. 10 s.
The chiefe Ingroſſer, 14 l.
The ſecond Ingroſſer, 9 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The ſecond Chamberlain, 13 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Clerke of the firſt-fruits, 10 l.
The Keeper of the Records, 13 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Uſher of the Court, 3 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Clerk of the Common Pleas, 3 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Tranſcriptor, 2 l. 13 s. 4 d.

The Deputy Auditour, 11 l.
The vice Treasurours Deputy, 11 l.
The Somonitor, 5 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Marshall of the Court, 5 l. 6 s. 8 d.
A Messenger, 1 l. 4 s. 5 d.
Two Pursuivants each for 18 l. 5 s.

In the Kings Bench.

The chiefe Justice, 400 l.
The second Justice, 133 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Clerk of the Crown, 10 l.

In the Chancery.

The Lord Chancellour *per annum*, 415 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Master of the Rolls, 50 l.
And in augmentation to him *per an.* 88 l. 17 s. 9 d.
Two Ministers each, 27 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Clerk of the Crown, 6 l. 13 s. 4 d.
And in augmentation, 26 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Clerk of the Hamper, 14 l.
Divers Officers in the Star-chamber, 56 l. 13 s. 4 d.

Severall Ministers of the Ordnance holding by Patents, 135 l. 13 s. 5 d.
The Constable of *Dublin* Castle, and others belonging to him, 335 l. 13 s. 4 d.

To Officers of State.

The Secretary *per annum*, 106 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Clerk of the Counsell, 62 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Surveigher of the victuals, 143 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The King at Arms, 35 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Serjeant at Arms, 18 l. 2 s. 6 d.
The Pursuivant at Arms, 13 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Irish Interpreter, 27 l. 7 s. 6 d.

Offi-

Officers about the Customs.

For creation money to Noblemen.

The Earle of *Ormond*, 30 l.
The Earle of *Kildare*, 20 l.
The Earle of *Clanrichard*, 40 l.
The Earle of *Thomound*, 20 l.
The Baron of *Cacher*, 15 l.
Divers Annates and Procurations, 299 l. 19 s. 3 d.
For Parchment, Ink, & bags in several Courts, 282 l. 10 s. 8 d.
For other payments by Warrant, 226 l. 2 s. 4 d.

In the County of *Wexford*.

The Justice of the Liberties, *per annum*, 20 l.
The Seneschall, 25 l.
The Receiver, 20 l.
The Marshall, 2 l.

The totall of these is, 3461 l. 13 s. 9 d.

In the Province of *Lemster*.

The Lievtenant of the queens County, 121 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The Provost Marshall of the army, 77 l. 11 s. 3 d.
The Provost Marshall of *Lemster*, 102 l. 13 s. 1 d.

Officers in *Munster*.

The Lord President, 133 l. 6 s. 8 d.
For his diet, and the Counsels allowed at his Table, 520 l.
The Retinue of 20 foot, and 30 horse *per annum*, 803 l.
The chief Justice, 100 l.
The second Justice, 66 l. 13 s. 4 d.
The queens Attourney, 133 l. 6 s. 8 d.
The Clerk of the Counsell, 20 l.
The Clerk of the Crown, 20 l.
The Serjeant at Armes, 20 l.
The Provost Marshall, 255 l. 16 s.

Sum. tot. 1951 l. 16 s. 8 d.

For Officers in *Connagh.*

The chiefe Commiſſioner *per annum*, 100 l.
His Diet with the Counſels at his Table, 882 l. 10 s.
An allowance to himſelfe, 40 l.
The Juſtice, 100 l.
The Queens Attourney, 20 l.
The Clerke of the Crowne, 20 l.
The Clerke of the Counſell, 20 l.
The Serjeant at Armes, 20 l.
The Provoſt Marſhall, 264 l. 12 s. 6 d.
The increaſe of pay to the preſent Cõmiſſioners, 282 l. 10 s.
Sum. total. 949 l. 12 s. 6 d.
Certaine Bands of Iriſh Kerne 1579 l. 8 s. 9 d.
For Warders in ſeverall Provinces, 3577 l. 2 d.
For Commiſſaries of Muſters, 577 l. 18 s. 4 d.
For Penſioners of all ſorts, 3249 l. 9 d.
Laſtly, Almes men, 88 l. 19 s. 4 d.
The totall of the above-named charge not contained in the eſtabliſhment, 21328 l. 8 s. 7 d.
To which adde the eſtabliſhment, 277782 l. 15 s.
The totall of the yeerly charge was 299111 l. 3 s. 7 d.
To which if you adde the great charge of all Forts, of Munitions, with the like extraordinary expences, and conſider that the 1300 horſe, and the 1600 foot by new ſupplyes were to be made up 20000.

What a maſſe of expence is here in one yeere, able to drain this Kingdome, ſeeing nothing comes from *Ireland* but complaints.

It will require the wiſdome and providence of thoſe that undertake it, and the patience of the people that beare it.

All this in a readineſſe, the Earle of *Eſſex* departs from *London* in *March* 1599, in the beginning of the yeere, not pro-

providently foreſeeing what a ſtep hee then made to his ruine.

The Nobility and gallant Gentry accompanied him on his way.

And the Earle of *Kildare* made ſuch haſte in an ill Veſſell, that himſelfe and many a brave man with him were all drowned in the paſſage.

The Earle being arrived in *Ireland*, took the place of government, and laboured to acquaint himſelf with the eſtate of that Kingdome, what parts were quiet, what in rebellion,

Who had certaine intelligence, that the Rebels in the County of *Dublin* were in number of the chiefe Families, 48 foot, 20 horſe.

In *Kildare* 220 foot, three horſe.

In the County of *Carlogh*, being wholly waſted, only ſix or ſeven Caſtles held for the Queen.

In the County of *VVexford*, all waſted but the Caſtles held for the queen, and ſome Engliſh Families, but all the reſt in rebellion.

In theſe two Counties 750 foot, 50 horſe.

In the Connty of *Leax*, moſt of the chiefe in rebellion, 570 foot, 30 horſe. Only a few Caſtles held for the queen.

In the County of *Ophaly*, ſome Caſtles held for the queen, others by the Rebels, 468 foot, 12 horſe.

In the County of *Kilkenny*, many great Families of the *Iriſh*, the *Butlers* in Rebellion, 130 foot, 20 horſe.

The Rebels held the Caſtle of Bellirage and Colekill. The reſt the Earle of *Orwond* held for the queene.

In the County of *Meth*, the ſon and heire of Sir *William Nugent* in rebellion, and the Rebels of *Vlſter* had much waſted the heart of the Pale.

In the County of Weſt Meth, lying moſt waſte, and poſ-

For Officers in *Connagh.*

The chiefe Commiſſioner *per annum*, 100 l.
His Diet with the Counſels at his Table, 882 l. 10 s.
An allowance to himſelfe, 40 l.
The Juſtice, 100 l.
The Queens Attourney, 20 l.
The Clerke of the Crowne, 20 l.
The Clerke of the Counſell, 20 l.
The Serjeant at Armes, 20 l.
The Provoſt Marſhall, 264 l. 12 s. 6. d.
The increaſe of pay to the preſent Cõmiſſioners, 282. l. 10 s.
Sum. total. 949 l. 12 s. 6 d.
Certaine Bands of Iriſh Kerne 1579 l. 8 s. 9 d.
For Warders in ſeverall Provinces, 3577 l. 2 d.
For Commiſſaries of Muſters, 577 l. 18 s. 4 d.
For Penſioners of all ſorts, 3249 l. 9. d.
Laſtly, Almes men, 88 l. 19. s. 4. d.
The totall of the above-named charge not contained in the eſtabliſhment, 21328 l. 8 s. 7 d.
To which adde the eſtabliſhment, 277782 l. 15 s.
The totall of the yeerly charge was 299111 l. 3 s. 7 d.
To which if you adde the great charge of all Forts, of Munitions, with the like extraordinary expences, and conſider that the 1300 horſe, and the 1600 foot by new ſupplyes were to be made up 20000.

What a maſſe of expence is here in one yeere, able to drain this Kingdome, ſeeing nothing comes from *Ireland* but complaints.

It will require the wiſdome and providence of thoſe that undertake it, and the patience of the people that beare it.

All this in a readineſſe, the Earle of *Eſſex* departs from *London* in *March* 1599, in the beginning of the yeere, not pro-

providently foreſeeing what a ſtep hee then made to his ruine.

The Nobility and gallant Gentry accompanied him on his way.

And the Earle of *Kildare* made ſuch haſte in an ill Veſſell, that himſelfe and many a brave man with him were all drowned in the paſſage.

The Earle being arrived in *Ireland*, took the place of government, and laboured to acquaint himſelf with the eſtate of that Kingdome, what parts were quiet, what in rebellion,

Who had certaine intelligence, that the Rebels in the County of *Dublin* were in number of the chiefe Families, 48 foot, 20 horſe.

In *Kildare* 220 foot, three horſe.

In the County of *Carlogh*, being wholly waſted, only ſix or ſeven Caſtles held for the Queen.

In the County of *VVexford*, all waſted but the Caſtles held for the queen, and ſome Engliſh Families, but all the reſt in rebellion.

In theſe two Counties 750 foot, 50 horſe.

In the Connty of *Leax*, moſt of the chiefe in rebellion, 570 foot, 30 horſe. Only a few Caſtles held for the queen.

In the County of *Ophaly*, ſome Caſtles held for the queen, others by the Rebels, 468 foot, 12 horſe.

In the County of *Kilkenny*, many great Families of the *Iriſh*, the *Butlers* in Rebellion, 130 foot, 20 horſe.

The Rebels held the Caſtle of Bellirage and Colekill. The reſt the Earle of *Ormond* held for the queene.

In the County of *Meth*, the ſon and heire of Sir *William Nugent* in rebellion, and the Rebels of *Vlſter* had much waſted the heart of the Pale.

In the County of Weſt Meth, lying moſt waſte, and poſ-

poſſeſſed by the Rebels, 140 foot, twenty horſe.

Beſides, Captain *Tirril* a bold man of Engliſh Race, who had of *Vlſter* men and other Rebels 200 foot.

In the County of *Lowth*, all waſted by the Rebels, only an Engliſh, Iriſh Baron, the Townes and Caſtles ſtood for the queene.

In the County of *Langford*, 120 foot.

The whole in this Province of *Lemſter*, and *Meth* joyned with it: 3048 foot, 182 horſe.

In the Province of *Vlſter*.

Conſiſting moſt of Iriſh, except ſomewhat which the *Scots*, held, were all forced to give way to *Tyrone*.

Dundalke the Frontier Towne between the Pale and Ulſter, and Knocfergus a Frontier Towne towards Scotland, were kept by the Engliſh, and ſome few other Caſtles, all the reſt poſſeſſed by the Rebels.

In the upper and lower *Clandebays* the Rebels, 160 foot, 70 horſe.

The *Duffery* had 20 foot.

Two more Rebels had 100 foot, 20 horſe.

The Captain of *Kilwarben* had 60 foot, 10 horſe.

Mac, 60 foot, 10 horſe.

Beyond the Min Water, 40 foot.

Sir *Francis Mac Surlebay*, 400 foot, 100 horſe.

The Iſland of *Magie*, belonging to the Earle of *Eſſex* was waſted.

Mac Guir in *Fermannagh* had 600 foot, 100 horſe.

Other Rebels there about had 500 foot, 150 horſe.

The *O Reylies* in the Brenny or County of *Cavan* had 800 foot, 100 horſe.

O Cane in his Countrey, 500 foot, 200 horſe.

Seven other chief Rebels had, 1180 foot, 281 horſe.

Tyrone

Tyrone the Arch traytour, *Tyrone* his country, 700. foot, 200 horſe.

And divers other Rebels with him: So the whole forces of the Rebels in *Vlſter*, 1702 horſe, 7220 foot.

In the County of *Tipperary*, the Baron of *Caher*, a Butler with his Brother and followers, 30 foot, 12 horſe.

And divers other great Families had in ſeverall companies, ſome not having above three or foure horſe, 1660 F. 79 Horſe.

In the County of *Corke*, *James fitz Thomas*, the new created Earle of *Deſmond*, 250 foot, 30 horſe.

And divers other Families, 820 foot, 8 horſe.

In the County of *Lumrick*, *Fitz Lary* with others had, 300 foot, 15 horſe.

In the County of *Kerry*, the Lord *Fitz-Morice* and others, 500 foot, 30 horſe.

In the County of *Deſmond*, *Oſullivan Beare*, and others had, 500 foot, 6 horſe.

In the County of *Waterford*, 200 foot, 10 horſe.

The whole number of the Rebels in *Munſter*, 5030 foot, 242 Horſe.

The Rebels of *Connagh* were, 3070 foot, 220 horſe.

In all the foure Provinces, *Meth* being reckoned for a County in *Lemſter*, the ſtrength of the Rebels were, 18246 foot, 2346 horſe.

Concerning which in *April*, the Earle of *Eſſex* ſent intelligence into *England* by a Letter.

And in a ſecond Letter of the reſolutions of *Tyrone*, firſt, that he intended to hearten his Confederates, and then to make head in *Vlſter* with his own forces, and *O Donnel* in *Connagh*, that the Rebels had taken oath at a publick Croſſe to be conſtant, and none ſought pardon but in ſuch inſolent manner, that it was rather a contempt.

That

That the very ſubjects grew cold in the ſervice, that although on private revenge they could appeare with an 100. Horſe, and 300. Foot, yet now pleaded their inability to ayd the Queen with ſixe of each; the Earle gathered ſome Engliſh forces together, and againſt his owne advice in *England*, and the Q. command (deceived by ſome falſe counſell) hee ſet not on the head, but on a few weake Rebels in *Munſter*, a matter of no conſequence, being beaten as they were.

June 15. the Lord Lievtenant received Letters from a Captain out of the North of *Vlſter*, that *Tyrone* had received Amunition out of *Spaine*, but no treaſure (as was reported) that he did ſollicite the Redſhanks into his pay, and had proviſion of armes, and other aſſiſtance daily from the Scots.

And alſo adviſed the Earle of their ſtrength, and of their intention to protract the warre, and weary the Engliſh, in prevention whereof he wiſhed his Lordſhip to procure foure thouſand Redſhanks which in their Boats might break in upon *Tyrone*, which thing the Lord *Bourgh* had formerly undertaken to procure, but was prevented by death.

Iu. 25. the Lord Lievtenant wrote unto the Queen of the ſtate and condition of the Rebels, ſhewing the cauſe of their rebellion, with the meanes to reduce and keepe them in ſubjection, and that as well by Sea as Land proviſion muſt bee made to reduce them: and afterward gives ſuch direction to her Majeſtie, as was followed in the enſuing warre, though himſelfe had not the good hap to put it in practice.

And in the concluſion bewayles his owne misfortune, that his enemies (whom he names) had gotten ſo neere her Majeſties elbow.

In the end of *July* his Lordſhip brought backe his forces into *Lenſter*, himſelfe going to *Dublin*, having done little, but admitted ſome few to protection, which afterward revolted againe.

In

In his absence 600. souldiers which were left in the *Glinne* had been beaten by the Irish, for which his Lordship used great severity in punishing of them, putting to death the tenth common souldier, calling the Captaines to a Court Marshall, caused an Irish Lievtenant to be shot for parlying with the Rebels.

By this time the Qu. advertised his Lordship of his errour in not setting on the chiefe Rebell *Tyrone*, but he excused himselfe, and layd the fault on the Counsell of *Ireland*, and that his intention now was that way beat, but yet that first hee must suppresse some neere *Dublin*; which being done, he took a view of his Army, and found it so much impaired, that hee sent to *England* for supply of 1000. new men to inable him presently to undertake the *Ulster* journey. And now resolved to march Northwest, he willed Sir *Conyers Clifford* Governour of *Connagh*, to compell *Tyrone* to give resistance at *Belike*, while himselfe set on him on the other side.

So that Sir *Con. Clifford* with one Troop of horse, and 1400. foot came to the Curlew Mountaines, where he left his carriages under the guard of his Horse, untill he had tryed the passage forward,

Who was presently assaulted by the Rebels, taking the advantage of the woods, boggs, and a stony Causey, and although the English stoutly received the charge, yet they being weary with a long march, and their powder fayling them which they had about them, they began to faint & so to flye; so that many were slain in the place, and many hurt, besides two worthy Commanders, Sir *Con. Clifford*, *Alexand. Ratcliffe*, killed: And had not Sir *John Jepson* valliantly succoured them with his Horse, most of the rest had perished: this happened by a great oversight (as was thought.)

By this time the 1000. men out of *England* were arrived in *Ireland*, yet his Lordship wrote over that he could doe little

this yeere, but only goe to the borders of *Vlſter*, whether going in September, *Tyrone* ſhewed himſelfe two dayes together on ſeverall hills ſome diſtance off, whence hee ſent to deſire a parley with his Lordſhip.

Who rejected that offer, & alſo ſent him word, that on the morrow he ſhould find him armed in the head of his Army.

The next day after a light skirmiſh, one of *Tyrones* horſmen cryed that *Tyrone* would not fight, but would ſpeake with the Lord Lievtenant apart from the Army unarmed.

The next day alſo he was told, that *Tyrone* deſired the Qu. mercy, and would faine ſpeake with his Lordſhip at the foard *Balla-Elinch*, neere the chiefe towne of the County of *Louth*.

Where they two only met, and *Tyrone* ſaluted his Lordſhip very courtly, many ſpeeches paſsing betweene them.

Whether (as being left not farre off) his Lordſhip called ſixe or ſeven of his chiefe Commanders, and *Tyrone* as many of his friends: and there was a Conference about a Treaty of peace, and a truce made from ſixe weekes to ſixe weekes, untill May, with proviſo that on 14 dayes warning given on either ſide, it ſhould be lawfull to reſume armes againe.

Now, the Queen having received his Lordſhips Letters what he had done, which was nothing with ſuch an Army in ſo long ſpace.

She wrote him a tart Letter, much blaming his proceedings, and queſtioning his diſcretion.

Which did ſo gaule and wring his Lordſhip, that preſently he left *Adam Loftus*, the Archbiſhop of *Dublin*, and Sir *George Carew* Treaſurer of the wars to governe *Ireland*, ſo went into *England*.

And unexpected preſented himſelfe before the Qu. in her

privy

privy Chamber, but had not that welcome that hee expected, and after a few words was commanded to his Chamber, and afterwards to the Lord Keepers house in the nature of a Prisoner.

And now a list of the Commanders, and whole Army is taken and set downe both horse and foot, how disposed of throughout the whole Kingdome, and were 14422. Foote 1231. horse.

The truce continuing the helme was easily held by those hands in which it was put, but *Dec. 6. Tyrone* began to practize acts of hostilitie upon that he had given (as hee said) 14. dayes warning, and because the Earle of *Essex* was imprisoned in *England*, on whom he did relye for safety, and would not now trust the Counsell of *Ireland*, that had so often deceived him before, this intelligence posted into *England*, that the Rebels were ready to assaile the *Pale*.

And a false rumour raysed by *Essex* enemies, that *England* would suddenly be in a combustion, which was no little prejudice to the said Earle.

The Queen hearing this and more, that the Rebels daily increased, and the English Irish discontented that the government was wholly out of their hands, by sending English Deputies over.

That *Tyrone* grew proud, bearing trust on the King of *Spaine*, who had sent him somewhat, but promised more; and the Pope not wanting in his fatherly care towards him, sent him a crowne of Phenix feathers, in imitation no doubt of *Vrban* the third, who sent King *John* Lord of *Ireland* a crowne of Peacocks feathers.

Upon this Sir *Charles Blunt*, Lord *Mountjoy*, is thought fit to be sent, and was thought on by the Qu. before *Essex* came over, who was forward to take the charge upon him, and so turned the Queenes intentions.

This Lord was a tall comely man, wiſe, valiant, and learned, cloſe in his counſels, reſolute in his determinations.

His courſes were much contrary to other Deputies, and ſo effected what they could not doe.

1. He led our men warily on any ſervice, not willing to diſ-hearten our men, or incourage the enemie; and himſelfe ever at hand, either to hearten or helpe, hee ventured his own perſon often, although it be a great queſtion in Military diſcipline, whether it be wiſedome or no.

2. His planting of Garriſon in the Rebels countreys compaſsing *Tyrone* on every ſide, ſo that they could not eaſily aſsiſt on the other.

Other Deputies made two or three journeys in the yeare, and that with the whole Army; which was diſcovered by the Rebels, that they fled into the woods and bogges, nor could the Army abide the field long for want of victuals, being ſo many at one place, where as the Lord *Mountjoy* planting good Garriſons in many places, taking the field with 1000. foot, and 200. horſe onely, was able openly to affront *Tyrone*, ſeeing he was compelled to leave many of his forces behind to guard his Countrey from thoſe Garriſons, which elſe would have forraged his Countrey.

Thus he did not only in Summer as others had done, but in Winter alſo, himſelfe being five or ſixe dayes in a weeke, on horſe-backe, which courſe did ſo vexe the Rebels, who were driven to lye in the woods without ſhelter for themſelves or cowes, which allowing them not milk, they wanted preſent proviſion, nor could they ſave their corne for the future.

4. Againe, he had a ſpeciall care to cut the paſſages open and plaine, that our forces might the more ſecure meet together.

5. Further, he was not eaſie to grant Pardons and Protections,

tections, but to such who had drawne blood on their fellowes, and so lost the hope of reconciliation to the Rebels, and forbad all parlyes with them.

But as the Rebels were many at the Earle of *Essex* comming, so now much more increased. In the County of *Dublin* increased one hundred.

And in many other Countreys, besides five Castles lately taken by the Irish.

In the Province of *Lemster* increased 1280. Rebels. In the Province of *Connagh* increased 300. Rebels, besides the doubt of *Tibot ne Longe*,

Who had one hundred Irish men in the Queenes pay.

So that now the Enemie strongest, the English weakest, and many other disasters made the businesse very difficult.

In this case the Lord *Montjoy* undertooke the businesse about *Ian.* 1599.

A little before whose comming *Tyrone* marcheth out of the North in a vaunting manner unto *Munster*, to incourage and countenance the Rebels, but under a religious pretence to visite a peece of the Crosse at a Monastery in *Tipperary* County, and so accompanied with the *Lemster* Rebels went on his devotion.

Now the army of English reduced to 12000. foot, & 1200. horse, for whose payment order is given to the Treasurer and Chamberlaine of the Exchequer of *England*, to pay the Treasurer of the Warres of *Ireland*, after the rate of the former establishment, and other extraordinaries.

So there was signed an establishment by the Queene, *Ian.* 1. 1599. for the pay of Commanders, and Souldiers.

And the Lord Deputy hasting away for *Ireland*, *Ian.* 10. 1599. in his way wrote backe to master Secretary, that he might have more Forces in regard the Rebels were so strong.

A ſecond eſtabliſhment ſigned by the Lords, 11. *Feb.* 1599. wherein every Officers and Souldiers pay, and other charges, the whole yearely charge 14055 pounds, 4 ſhillings 8 pence, farre ſhort of that allowance which the Earle of *Eſſex* had.

February 26. the Lord Deputy landed in *Ireland*, when Sir *George Carew* was made Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, *Tyrone* did not expect ſuch a ſudden arrivall, ſo that hee was ſtill in Weſt *Munſter*, where he might be ſurpriſed as the Earle of *Ormond* thought, if things hapned well.

And that he could not thence eſcape without engaging himſelfe, if the paſſages were watched.

So that daily newes came that *Tyrone* now, or never was to be ruinated: and how many Lords and others of the Iriſh which were for the Queene had layed waite for him, and would ſtop his paſſage back, but all this vaniſhed into Iriſh oſtentation of ſervice, which ſeldome uſe to take effect, and many times are not truly intended as this buſineſſe did ſhew.

And that his Lordſhip ſhould not expect any helpe from divers of the Nobilitie, and Gentry of the *Pale*, they preferred a Petition to him, that they were not able by reaſon of the ſpoyles the ſouldiers had made upon them, but a meere excuſe (as *Eſſex* ſhewed before.)

Then his Lordſhip wrote to Secretary *Cecill*, to excuſe himſelfe, for not reducing the 14000 which hee found in the Army unto 12000, and the cauſe thereof as he had done before.

And upon that receives an anſwer from the Queen, that ſhe doth accept of his reaſons for the preſent, but would have him effect it by degrees.

And not to entertain many Iriſh Commanders, who are of ſmall fidelity, and being employed to uſe them far from

their

their own countrey, and uſeth ſome other advertiſements, and ſo concludeth.

And now for all the great hopes *Tyrone* eſcaped into the North, paſſing over the Enny in great haſt, and marcheth 27 miles in one day: more then he had gone in five before, ſo that he could not be over-taken.

And at his being there, he ſent out a Mandate, by which hee ſummoned the Subjects of *Munſter* to appeare before him in this forme.

O Neal commendeth himſelf unto you *Morice Fitz Thomas*, *O Neal* requeſteth you in Gods name, to take part with him, and fight for your conſcience, and right, and in ſo doing *O Neale*, will ſpend his life to ſee you righted in all your affaires, and will help you, And if you come not to *O Neale* between this and 12 of the clocke to morrow, and take his part, *O Neale* is not beholding to you, and will doe to the uttermoſt of his power to overthrow you, if you come not to him by Saturday noon at the furtheſt from *Knoc Dumain*, in *Calrye* the fourth of *Feb.* 1599.

O Neale requeſteth you to come and ſpeak with him, and doth give you his word, that you ſhall receive no harme, neither in comming or going from him, whether you be friend or not, and bring with you to *O Neale Gerald Fitz Gerald*, ſubſcribed *O Neale*.

March the 7, the Lord Deputy had intelligence, that *Tyrone* was come to his houſe at *Dungannon*, and that the Earle of *Clanrichard* had ſworn, that when his ſonne came out off England, in *May*, he would enter into action (for ſo they call Rebellion: and that the Plantation at *Logh ſoyle*, was endeavoured to be hindered by the Rebell.

The 20 of *March*, the Secretary informed his Lordſhip of the relaxation of the Earle of *Eſſex*, who ſued earneſtly

A ſecond eſtabliſhment ſigned by the Lords, 11. *Feb.* 1599. wherein every Officers and Souldiers pay, and other charges, the whole yearely charge 140555 pounds, 4 ſhillings 8 pence, farre ſhort of that allowance which the Earle of *Eſſex* had.

February 26. the Lord Deputy landed in *Ireland*, when Sir *George Carew* was made Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, *Tyrone* did not expect ſuch a ſudden arrivall, ſo that hee was ſtill in Weſt *Munſter*, where he might be ſurpriſed as the Earle of *Ormond* thought, if things hapned well.

And that he could not thence eſcape without engaging himſelfe, if the paſſages were watched.

So that daily newes came that *Tyrone* now, or never was to be ruinated: and how many Lords and others of the Iriſh which were for the Queene had layed waite for him, and would ſtop his paſſage back, but all this vaniſhed into Iriſh oſtentation of ſervice, which ſeldome uſe to take effect, and many times are not truly intended as this buſineſſe did ſhew.

And that his Lordſhip ſhould not e[illegible]
divers of the Nobilitie, and Gentry o[illegible]
ferred a Petition to him, that they we[illegible]
of the ſpoyles the ſouldiers had ma[illegible]
meere excuſe (as *Eſſex* ſhewed before.)

Then his Lordſhip wrote to Secretar[illegible]
himſelfe, for not reducing the 14000
the Army unto 12000, and the cauſe th[illegible]
before.

And upon that receives an anſwer fro[illegible] Queen, that ſhe doth accept of his reaſons for the preſent, but would have him effect it by degrees.

And not to entertain many Iriſh Commanders, who are of ſmall fidelity, and being employed to uſe them far from their

IRREGULA
PAGINA

their own countrey, and uſeth ſome other adverti ſements, and ſo concludeth.

And now for all the great hopes *Tyrone* eſcaped into the North, paſſing over the Enny in great haſt, and marcheth 27 miles in one day: more then he had gone in five before, ſo that he could not be over-taken.

And at his being there, he ſent out a Mandate, by which hee ſummoned the Subjects of *Munſter* to appeare before him in this forme.

O Neal commendeth himſelf unto you *Mor is Fitz Thomas*, *O Neal* requeſteth you in Gods name, to take part with him, and fight for your conſcience, and right, and in ſo doing *O Neale*, will ſpend his life to ſee you righted in all your affaires, and will help you, And if you come not to *O Neale* between this and 12 of the clocke to morrow, and take his part, *O Neale* is not beholding to you, and will doe to the uttermoſt of his power to overthrow you, if you come not to him [illegible] at the furtheſt from *Knoc Dumain*, [illegible] 1599.

[illegible] to come and ſpeak with him, and [illegible] that you ſhall receive no harme, [illegible] going from him, whether you be [illegible] with you to *O Neale Gerald Fitz* [illegible]

[illegible] Deputy had intelligence, that *Ty*- [illegible] at *Dungannon*, and that the Earle [illegible], that when his ſonne came out off England, in *May*, he would enter into action (for ſo they call Rebellion: and that the Plantation at *Logh ſoyle*, was endeavoured to be hindered by the Rebell.

The 20 of *March*, the Secretary informed his Lordſhip of the relaxation of the Earle of *Eſſex*, who ſued earneſtly

ly in his behalfe to the Secretary, even ſo far as to make his excuſe for the matter in *Ireland*.

The Lord Deputy makes a Liſt of his army, about the beginning of the yeare 1600, and caſts up the allowances.

Generall Officers for the army as in the former eſtabliſhment.

Collonels 12 apiece *per diem*, 10 s.

Twenty ſix troops of horſe, in ſome more, in ſome leſſe at ſeverall rates of pay in number, 1200.

In *Loghfoyle* Garriſon 4000 foot.

In *Carickfergus* Garriſon, 700 foot.

In the Province of *Connagh*, 1400 foot.

In the Province of *Munſter*, 2950 foot.

In the Province of *Lemſter*, 4500 foot.

Totall of Foot, 1400.

Likewiſe a Liſt which the Deputy drew out of the Companies formerly mentioned; which lay in *Lemſter*, *Newry*, and *Carbuceford*, for to proſecute *Tyrone* in his Country, horſe 325, foot 3200.

Out of theſe taken to guard places and paſſages while the Army did return, foot 810, horſe 20.

Beſides deduct the ſix dead pays allowed to each Company of foot, which is 288, and foure out of fifty horſe, which is 26, and other deductions of ſicke and unſufficient men for ſervice.

There remayns for his army in field, 2102 foot, horſe 279 which is but a ſmall handfull for ſo great a ſervice.

Divers others there were which had pay; as his Lordſhips chief Chaplain five l. a week, and ten other Preachers at forty ſhillings a week, his Doctor of Phyſick five pound a week.

In *Aprill* it was conſulted about entertayning of 2000 *Scots*, and that each man ſhould have a Cow for a moneths pay or ſix pence, *per diem*.

Which

Which buſineſſe was to be furthered by the Queens Agent in *Scotland*, but it came to nothing being diſliked in *England*.

Now the Deputy reſolved to purſue the Rebels in many places at once, both by the North Garriſons, and the reſt of the Army.

Aprill the third, the Lord Deputy ſent Maſter Secretary notice of the falſheartedneſſe of thoſe that ſeemed moſt ſure, and that the Iriſh Commanders were dangerous to keep, yet knew not how to remove them without certain loſſe of them.

And how he intended to ſend a thouſand old Souldiers out of *Dublin*, to *Loghfoyle*, and others to lye in Garriſon at *Baliſhannan*, both places of great conſequence, and proved very advantageous to the Engliſh afterwards.

And informed likewiſe that *Tyrone* by his ſo ſuddain and haſty flight out of *Munſter*, had much diſheartned many of his Confederates, ſo that daily the heads of ſome Rebels or others were brought unto the Deputy.

And the Rebels of Lemſter made ſuit to be received to mercy: only the Towns where the Rebels had to do were very inſolent.

And *Tyrone*, by the arrivall of two ſhips, (wherein were many Prieſts) did incourage his friends. Laſtly, the Deputy complained to the Secretary, that all places were beſtowed in *England*, ſo that he could gratifie no deſerving man.

Further hee ſent word that hee doubted of the Earle of *Ormonds* conſtancy to the Queenes cauſe: and ſhewed his reaſons a name greatly followed in that Countrey.

In that Province of *Munſter*, the Rebels were very ſtrong, by reaſon *Tyrone* had been there, and by the aide of *Mac Carty* more.

There hapned an ill chance about the time that Sir *George*

Carew went to his charge of *Munſter*, whereof he was Preſident.

Who comming to *Kilkenney* in his way from *Dublin*, with the Earle of *Thomond* in his company, and a hundred horſe to attend him; where the Earle of *Ormond*, told them that he was to parley with ſome Rebels of thoſe parts, whereof *Owny Mac Rory* was chiefe, and requeſted them to accompany him.

To which they conſented and rode eight miles to the place of meeting, with ſome twenty horſe of the Earle of *Ormonds*, and a few followers refuſing the guard of the Lord Preſidents 100 horſe, and the Earl of *Ormond*, left his two hundred foot two miles ſhort, and with his other company met with *Owny*, who came out of the Woods, leaving five hundred men well appointed not farre off; came up to him with ſome pikes, but after an houre ſpent, and nothing agreed on, the Lord Preſident wiſht the Earle of *Ormond* to returne, but he ſaid hee would firſt ſpeak with the Jeſuit *Archer*; and did much revile him, calling him Traytor.

In the mean time the Rebels foot had incompaſſed, the Earle and his company, and preſently tooke the Earle of *Ormond* priſoner; and *Mac Rory* laid hands on the Lord Preſident: but the Earle of *Thomound* ruſhed on him with his horſe, and they both hardly eſcaped, the Earle of *Thom.* being hurt in the thigh.

The Counteſſe of *Ormond* having one only daughter, was much perplexed and diſtreſſed, but the Lord Deputy ſent her a Guard for her Houſe.

There were ſeverall conceits upon his ſurpriſall, ſome ſuppoſing it was not againſt his owne will, but howſoever the Lord Deputy thought it a matter of no great conſequence.

The Fort of *Phillipſtown* in *Opbaly* was to be victualled, and

and the Rebels gave out that they would hinder it.

And through the emulation of a great Commander that had another preferred before him, and ſtrengthened by the Court faction in *England.*

It might have miſcarried, for the ſaid Commander choſe out ſome weake companies for this ſervice to be led by the other; but the Deputy being advertiſed thereof, profered them to him that had made the choiſe of them, but hee refuſed to goe with them.

And Sir *Oliver Lambert* with 14 companyes did with much valour and courage effect the buſineſſe, though ſtrongly oppoſed.

May the fifth, the Lord Deputy makes toward *Tyrone* in the North: who had intelligence that he was lodged in the ſtrong Fortreſſe of *Coughlurkin* where the Rebels had fortified three miles in length. His Lordſhip drew towards *Armagh* with 1500 hundred foot and two hundred horſe, and ſent Captain *Edward Blany* with five hundred foot, and fifty horſe to make good the paſſage through the *Moyry* for the Earle of *Southampton*, and Sir *Oliver Lambert*, who were to come that way to the Army: and comming to the *Faghard*, not far from *Dundalke*, whether hee went to the Earle, and told him of the convoy, aſſuring him that the Lord Deputy would meet him by two of the clocke in the afternoon; hereupon the Earle having with him beſides the conuoy, two foot companyes, and fifty horſe of Gentlemen Volunteers: and ſo marched backe to the dangerous paſſage of the *Moyry*; where the Rebels taking advantage of the Woods and Bogs, aſſailed our men, lying lurking on both ſides, our men being to paſſe over a Ford.

But by this time the Lord Deputy himſelfe was come neere the place, who ſent two Regiments, who beat backe the Rebels; who left a few to skirmiſh with thoſe two Regiments,

giments, and the reſt fell back into the Wood, and iſſued out upon the Reare, brought up by the Earle of *Southampton*, with great fury both with horſe and foot: But Sir *Henry Foliot* made very good ſtand, and Sir *Oliver Lambert* taking his colours in his own hand, with ſome thirty of the Earle of *Southamptons* beſt men, haſtened towards the aſſaylants to ſecond the Earle, who behaved himſelfe with great courage, and made the Rebels give ground.

Tyrone was ſeene not farre off with great forces, yet fell not on, ſo that they marched to the Camp: little hurt being done to the Engliſh, but much to the Rebels.

May the 26, the Deputy had Letters from the Lords in *England*, and it was only to anſwer the demands of ſome Iriſh Lords upon ſubmiſſion.

June the 19, the Lord Deputy ſent to Maſter Secretary how that certain aide was come from *Spaine* to the Rebels, and makes a requeſt for a fleet to lie on the Coaſt of *Ireland*, and ſome ſmall Barks to hinder the *Scots* from relieving the Iriſh, Now Sir *Samuel Bagnal* drew out of the *Newry* into *Monaghan*, where he took ſome booty, and ſlue ſix Commanders, and many of the Rebels men with little damage to himſelfe.

Many Rebels of *Lemſter* now ſeek for mercy, but are not admitted, except ſome ſervice done for the Queene againſt their companions.

Two chiefe Rebels offer to ſubmit, but neither could be received without the others head.

His Lordſhip now out of *England* required to doe ſome thing againſt the *Lemſter* rebels; in his way thither, tooke two hundred Cowes, ſeven hundred Garrais, and five hundred ſheep, burning and waſting the corne all the way, as he went to a moſt dangerous paſſage, where Sir *Oliver Lambert* was appointed to meet him, both being conſtrained to

fight

fight all the way with the rebels untill they met; having done much harme unto the rebels.

May the seventeenth, they both marched towards a Fortresse, where the Rebels had stored much provision of all sorts, at whose entry there was a Foard compassed with Bogs, over which four horses passed quietly: but his Lordding in the head of the foot was assayled with fury.

The Traitour *Terrill* having appointed a hundred shot to ply the Deputies person, and given them marks to know him.

But the English defeated and slue 35 rebels, among which was *Owny Mac Rory*, a vile rebell, who before had taken the Earle of *Ormond* prisoner, a bloudy bold young man; by whose death that party never was able to appear in field.

And now the Captaine, and by their example the souldiers cut down the corn with their swords, that the rebels were driven to want for the future.

His Lordship returned one day with the foot alone, and sent about the Horse, and yet the rebels which lay there about durst not fight with him.

Eight heads of chief rebels were brought unto his Lordship that night, and one arch-rebell alive, who was presently hanged.

Sir *Oliver Lambert* foraging abroad, tooke a thousand Cowes, five hundred Garrais, and a multitude of sheep and killed twenty rebels; and much spoile daily was done then by the English.

At his Lordships going out of *Leax*, some were received protection.

At this time his Lordship had letters of approbation from her Majesty, with a promise of supply both of horse and foot, and with advice to make the company lesse, thereby

by to gratifie more Gentlemen with places of command.

Auguſt the twentieth, his Lordſhip returned to *Dublin*, where hee heard of the complaints that were made againſt him by thoſe of the Pale to the Lords in *England*.

In anſwer whereunto he writes to Maſter Secretary, onely deſiring his good wil in candid interpretation of his actions

September the fourteenth, his Lordſhip takes his journey towards the North, and encampeth three miles beyond *Dundalke*, and lay there untill the eighth of *October*, it being moſt tempeſtuous foule weather, his Lordſhips Tent having been often blown over.

Tyrone, in the mean time, before his Lordſhip came, had poſſeſſed the *Newry*, a ſtrong Fortreſſe as any the Rebels had, but his Lordſhip was reſolved to cut his way through them if they made reſiſtance.

Many skirmiſhes fell out well on our part, and in ſmall time he came to *Armagh*, where not farre off his Lordſhip built a Fort in a very convenient place, having a River by it all environed with Bogs, & a hill like a Promontory which his Lordſhip called Mount *Norris*.

So hee ſent ſome companies of ours to fetch corne and timber over the Bogs, where *Tyrone* met with them; and skirmiſhing with them was put to the worſt, and next day *Neale O Quin*, was taken priſoner, *Tyrones* great Favourite.

And the rebels intending to hinder the building of the Fort were ſoundly beaten, and that finiſhed and left in it foure hundred men under Captain *Blany*.

His Lordſhip returning by *Carlingford* found the paſſage very difficult for his horſe, that they were ſent a little about; and now they had certaine intelligence that *Tyrone* was come downe unto a place, by which we were to paſſe.

Which was a very great Wood at the foot of a Mountain, reaching ſo neer the Sea, that it had no more ſpace, then

that

that ſix or ſeven might walke abreaſt, with ſome leſſe, and at full Sea none in ſome places.

His Lordſhip diſpoſing his forces for the fight, ſending out a forlorne hope to march afore, and a forlorne Reare.

The enemy ſought to make good a ſmall piece of ground like a ſemicircle, where the Sea made a Diameter, and a thick Wood the Circumference; and at the corner next to our Army, there ran a River out off the Wood at the ſide of which they made ſtrong trenches, and at the further corner a Barricado which reached far into the wood, and down to the Sea.

The enemy appeared horſe and foot on this plain, but at our mens going over the River, their horſe drew into the Woods, and their foot into the Trenches, whence they poured out Vollies of ſhot.

But the ſtout courage of the Engliſh was ſuch that in little ſpace they beat them out of their Trenches and from their works, and made them retire into the woods, but ſallied out againe upon our Reare, to their further loſſe.

And in all this not much hurt to us, only two Gentlemen of quality killed; not twenty loſt, about ſixty hurt, of the enemy eighty killed, and the loſſe was (as wee had intelligence two hundred.

Our Marſhall and Serjeant Major were always ready to aſſiſt the weak, and bring ſuccour to the diſtreſſed, and the Army went on cheerfully.

And by this *Tyrones* reputation got a crack.

His Lordſhip returned to *Dundalke*, and from thence to *Dublin*, with his followers and Voluntiers, having diſpoſed the horſe and foot into Garriſons, Forts, and Provinces under their Commanders.

The horſe were 1198. The foot 14150.

About *November* his Lordſhip ſends into *England*, in the be-

behalfe of two chiefe Rebels ſubmitted *Conner Roe Mac Guire* and his ſonne, both which had done good ſervice in the laſt North journey: and had taken *Tyrones* brothers eldeſt ſonne, a yongman of the greateſt hope in the North, and though three thouſand l. were offered for his ranſom, yet they brought him to the Lord Deputy. There were certain rebels neere *Dublin*, in the *Glinne* which in his Lordſhips abſence had done much ſpoile, ſo that his intent was to chaſtize them, but ſeeming and ſhewing to goe another way, that they ſhould not ſuſpect him, on Chriſtmas day early in the morning, and after a tedious march he arrived at the chiefe rebels houſe, ſo ſuddenly that he took his wife and eldeſt ſonne, and made him fly ſtarke naked into the Woods, while his Lordſhip kept a good Chriſtmas, in his houſe till the twentieth of *January*, his ſouldiers waſting and ſpoyling the Country, in the mean time. And leaving Garriſons in ſome places, he paſſed into *Trim* in *Eaſtmeth*, and ſo to *Danoar*, in *Weſtmeth* a ſtrong Caſtle, having viſited many chiefe Gentlemen in the way.

February the two and twentieth, his Lordſhip had letters out of *England*, in which hee heard that the Earle of *Eſſex* was in the Towre for treaſon; which news wrought much alteration in the Deputy; now hee begins to inſinuate and comply with Secretary *Cecill*.

And *Eſſex* irreparably fell, more perchance by the ſharpneſſe of his enemies wit, then by the burthen of his owne crime.

Howſoever the Deputy being privy to ſo much as hee was, he ſaid he would not put his necke under the Queenes Attourneys tongue; and reſolved with himſelfe that had he been ſent for into *England*, not to have undergone the hazard of a triall: but his Lordſhips former ſervice, and future employment blew over this ſtorm without any ſhatter falling on him.

But

But with countenance and good ſucceſſe hee goeth forward, and with courage to ſet on *Tyrrils* Iſland very ſtrong, ſtanding in the midſt of a Bog, in the midſt of a Plain neere an Abbey, where his Lordſhip proclaimed *Tirrils* head at two thouſand Crowns, and ſo aſſayled the Iſland. But the next day, the foure and twentieth of *February*, ſo much ſnow fell that nothing could be done, and in the night the Rebels ſtole away quitting the Iſland, and left ſome ſtore of corne, and a few cattell, ſo his Lordſhip paſſed beyond the Iſland into a Plain, deſtroying the corn and burning the houſes as he went into *Meth*, and then to *Trim*, and ſo marched into the *Ferney*, from whence to *Ardes*, ſo ſeven miles to *Melliſont*, then to *Drogedagh* two miles, where he ſtayed untill the tenth of *April*, and then went to *Doblin*, in all which paſſage nothing of moment was done, but viſiting ſome chiefe Subjects, and ſtriking terrour to the Rebels.

About this time his Lordſhip had order for the proclayming of a baſe coine, and cry down the currant.

To hinder the Rebels traffick, as was pretended, but it proved the undoing of the poore ſouldier, each ſhilling having but two pence half-peny ſilver in it: ſo that commodities were raiſed to an exceſſive rate; and the exchange which was formerly provided for their helpe, was growne difficult, or altogether put down.

At *Drogedah*, his Lordſhip altered the liſt of the foot, but not the horſe: and diſpoſed them into Garriſons.

Her Majeſties charge in the yeere 1600 to 1601, by eſtabliſhment, and orders for increaſe was 276914 l. 9 s. 4 d.

Out of which by his Lordſhips providence was ſaved, 15262 l. 6 s. 5 d.

Alſo by Checks impoſed on the Army 1729 l.

So the charges that yeere, beſides munition and other extraordinaries 234622.

Certaine buſineſſes that hapned in *Munſter*, that yeere, under the command of the Lord Preſident, Sir *George Carew*.

In generall ſome ſubmitted, and ſome revolted.

His Lordſhip comming to *Dungarvin*, had notice that *Florence Mac Carte*: though hee had received favours from the State, was entred into action (for ſo they call Rebellion) and raiſed in *Carby* and *Deſmond*, of the Provincialls and *Bonnaghs* (for ſo are hired ſouldiers called) two thouſand foot, never aſſailed the Engliſh untill they came betweene *Kinſale* and *Cork*, where they ſet on Captain *Flowre* Serjeant Major of *Munſter*, who had 1200 foot, and 100 horſe, who did valiantly reſiſt and beat back the Rebels, though he had two horſe killed under him; yet were 100 of the Rebels ſlain, upon which *Florence Mac Carty* ſubmits, and yielded his ſon for pledge.

Now plots are laid for the killing of the titular Earle of *Deſmond*, by one *Dermod Oconner*, who had married the Daughter of the old Earle of *Deſmond*, and had the leading of 1400 *Bonnaghs*, who after ſurpriſed him by a tricke, and preſently ſent his wife to the Lord Preſident for the money promiſed in reward, and wiſhed him to come to *Killmalloch*, and there hee would bring him, but the Rebels in the way reſcued him, and ſet him free again.

May the twentieth, his Lordſhip took the field, and marched towards *Limneck*, and from place to place proſecuted the rebels ſo cloſe that many ſubmitted and others fled out of the Country: and the titular Earle of *Deſmond* by Sir *Charles Wilmot*, was quite driven out of the Countrey, in whoſe paſſage Sir *George Thornton* ſent out the Garriſon, and killed 120 of the Rebels, and got 320 Garrans laden with baggage, fifteen Pikes and Peeces, 40 horſe, but loſt ſixteen horſe of his owne in the fight, the titular Earle was quite bro-

broken and ſtole backe into *Munſter*, and lived as a Wood Kerne, with three or foure in his company, and once againe being like to be ſurprized, he ran away in ſuch haſt, that he left his ſhooes behind him.

The Lord Deputy waſted and gathered in all the corne, ſo that the yeere following the Rebels were pinched, and in *Munſter* all ſubdued or ſubmitted, ſo that 400 of that Province received their pardons under the great Seal.

And all being quiet, hee did queſtion the Corporate Towns that were ſo ready to aſſiſt the Rebels, as being aiders and abetters of the rebellion for their owne private gaine.

And ſo he ſent 1000 of the *Munſter* Liſt to the Lord Deputy to be diſpoſed at his pleaſure.

The Lord Deputy and the Counſell wrote into *England* from *Tredagh*, where he had layne from *March*, 21, untill *Aprill* the ſixteenth following, to ſignifie that many chiefe rebels had ſubmitted.

Chiefe of the *Ferny* and of the *Fewes*, and the chiefe likewiſe of the *Brenny*.

And further ſollicited for ſupplyes of mony, victuals and munition, to be ſent ſome to *Dublin*, but moſt to *Gallaway*, for the forces to plant *Ballyſhannon*.

An eſtabliſhment ſigned by the Queen, *March* 31, 1601, which was according to the former, the charge 215773 l. beſides the charge of munition, of levying horſe and foot, for re-inforcing the Army, with many like charges.

About *April* divers Rebels in the North ſubmit and diſcover many ſecrets to our Captaine concerning the *Spaniſh* Invaſion this yeare.

Ogby Ohanlon ſubmitted at *Tredagh*, and ſubſcribed to divers Articles.

The Garriſon at *Liffer* did ſpoyle the rebels, and tooke 300 Cows.

The Lord Deputy kept Saint *Georges* Feaſt at *Dublin*, *April* the twentieth, inviting many of the ſubmitted Rebels, where he carryed himſelfe with ſuch wiſdome and gravity; that they did both admire him and feare him.

In *May*, *Munſter* Rebels had their pardons granted them upon the interceſſion of the Lord Preſident.

A liſt out of five Engliſh Shires, and Iriſh Submitties, 207 horſe, 374 Archers, as likewiſe ariſing out of the Iriſh Lords and their Captains horſe 128, Kerne 361.

And now preparation is made for the Summer ſervice, whence to take forces for the field.

To be drawne out of *Munſter* to *Connagh*, a thouſand foot, fifty horſe.

And in *Connagh* already 1150 foot, horſe 74.

Thus to be diſpoſed in *Connagh*, at *Galloway*, and *Athlone*, 350 foot.

At the Abbey of *Boyle* in *Connagh*, under the command of the Earle of *Clanrichard*, a thouſand foot, 62 horſe.

To leave in *Lemſter* ſide of the *Shannon*, at the *Annaly*, to further the plantation of *Baliſhannan*, eight hundred foot, horſe twelve.

Theſe all lying to inſeſt the Rebels, or to hinder their joyning together, or to hinder Northerne forces from comming into *Lemſter*.

And to hinder *Tyrones* gathering in the corn.

May the two and twentieth, his Lordſhip parts from *Dublin*, and wrote into *England* for ſix thouſand ſouldiers ready, if ſo be any forreigne aide ſhould come, and to have a Magazine at *Limrick*, many pardoned in the County of *Corke*.

And about the eight of *June*, his Lordſhip came neere the Pace of *Moyry*, where hee purpoſed to build a Fort to ſecure that Pace.

Now

Now againe, hee ſollicits his former demands by Letters into *England*.

And ſo he marched by *Dundalke* to *Lecagh*, comming ſuddenly on them he took much booty, and many ſubmitted to his Lordſhip in this paſſage; from thence he went to Mount *Norris*, and ſo hee intended to plant a Garriſon at *Armagh*, and ſo forth hee went to *Blackwater*, to ſee that way to that Fort, where the Marſhall *Bagnal* had his defeat.

The foure and twentieth, hee marched two miles ſhort of the *Newry*, with a thouſand two hundred and fifty foot, and an hundred and fifty horſe.

The nine and twentieth day, his Lordſhip had notice that Sir *Henry Davers* had done much damage to *Briſan mac Art*, in killing his men, and taking his cattell.

Many received Pardons and were accepted of, becauſe that certaine newes came, that the Spaniſh forces which lay at *Lisbone*, were to come for *Ireland*.

So his Lordſhip diſpoſed of the Companies into Garriſons and Forts neere the enemies Countrey, and went with his followers to *Dundalke*, having with him onely three companies of foot, and a troop of horſe; but going towards the North, he gathered ſome forces out of the Garriſons, ſo he went to a Hill neere Blackwater on the Southſide, making a ſtand where *Tyrone* and his horſe and foot ſhewed themſelves in a Medow beyond the River with Trumpets, and Drums, and Colours which they uſed not to doe before, but now only in a bravado.

Making ſome ſhot at us, which being at too far diſtance fell ſhort without doing any hurt, but we having a Rabenet and a Falcon planted on a little Hill, made ſome ſhot at the Rebels which made them ſeulke into the Woods like Puppits.

So

So that his Lordship sent 300 foot to a Hill close by the waterside; and at the evening came and encamped upon it, whence he saw *Tyrone* draw some horse over the water to our side; but Sir *William Gadelphin* went with a troope of horse to meet him, but he presently retyred back.

So we placing the two small pieces, charging them with Musket shot, drove the Rebels out of the Trenchies, which they had made beyond the River, so that the 300 men passed over the River and possessed them, and an adjoyning old Fort, with a plain, not altogether Musket shot from the Wood, where the Rebell was fled; and his Lordship seeing the Trenches did admire that they wold take so much pains to make that which they had so little care to keepe, so his Lordship went to view a Place in *Tyrones* Wood, who stood looking on us; who only made a few shot at our men in their retreat.

So the sixteenth his Lordship passing over the *Blackwater*, with a Regiment of *Irish*, marched to a place at the left hand of our Campe, at the entrance of a great Wood, where our men made a stand in a fair green Medow, having our Campe not farre behinde them, and the Wood at each side and before them; in which great multitudes of the Rebels were assembled, so that there hapned a great and large skirmish, with various accidents; sometimes they, sometimes wee giving ground; for the Lord Deputy drew our forces out of the Campe, as he saw the Rebels increase.

Doctor *Latwar* his Lordships Chaplaine, not content to see this in the Campe, went into the Medow to our Colours, and was shot so that he died the next day.

Not one more slain of the English only a Captaines legg broken, but 26 of the Irish on our side, and 72 hurt, such as were kept in pay only, that they should not side with the Rebell.

Among

Among the Rebels *Tyrones* Secretary, and above two hundred Kernes were killed, which did much abate their courage, and animate our men.

His Lordſhip wrote into *England*, complayning of the ſcarcity of the victuals, and that which was, being ſalt fiſh, which as hee ſaid was moſt unfit for marching, was not good nor wholſome.

His Lordſhip riſing from about Blackwater, made another Proclamation for *Tyrones* head at 1000 l. and 2000 l. to bring him alive.

So hee matched too and fro ſpoyling and cutting downe all the Corn thereabouts, and burning houſes in the woods neere where the Rebels lay, but would not fight.

So he returned to the Blackwater, and with ſome choice foot and horſe went to view the way to *Dungannon*, *Tyron's* chief houſe, ten miles diſtant, and ſetting ſome to cut down the wood the Rebels ſought to hinder them, but were beaten back, ſo after we marched ſix miles to *Armagh*, and three to *Rawlaghtany*.

From whence Sir *Hen. Davers* with 300 foot and 40 horſe, went to burn ſome houſes that ſtood in a Fortreſſe which he performed, but the Rebels followed them back even to our Campe into which they poured a Volley of ſhot, and retyred into an adjoyning Fortreſſe.

Here the Commiſſary viewed the Army, and found in the Liſt 2950, but by Pole 1728.

The fourth day at night the Rebels came with cryes, Drums and Bag-pipes, as if they would have attempted our Campe.

And poured into it two or three thouſand ſhot, but doing little hurt.

For his Lordſhip commanded that none of our men ſhould ſtirre, having lodged in a Trench ſome 400 ſhot, with

with command that they ſhould not give fire untill the rebels were neere; which doing they put up paid with the ſhot, and ſent out lamentable cryes. So then his Lordſhip ſent for more forces becauſe hee had intelligence, that *Tyron's* Army was much increaſed.

Now there came more certaine newes of the *Spaniards* comming, and of their intention to land at *Waterford*, in reſpect of the commodious harbour, and the peoples good affection unto the *Spaniards*.

A ſpeedy ſupply of a thouſand ſhot was required out of *England*, becauſe *Tyrone* was growne very ſtrong, as appeared by a liſt given by one that had been lately *Tyrones* Marſhall, and now received into favour: as followeth.

Tyrone for his guard 100 horſe.
His ſonne *Hugh O Neale*, 100 horſe,
His brother *Cormack*, 100 horſe } in all 400.
Art mac Baron, 20 horſe,
Phelim O banlors ſonne, 10 horſe.
Turlogh Brafils ſonne 50 horſe.
Con Tyron's baſe ſonne, 20 horſe.
His guard of foot, led by *James Oſheale* a *Lemſter* man, 200. } 400
Led by *Jenken Fitz Simon* of *Lecale*, 200. }
Other chiefe Commanders of foot, 3260 foot.
Tot. Horſe and Foot, 4060.

All theſe (except 300) had meanes to keepe themſelves and companies in *Tyrone*: and divers of them beſides have great forces to keep their owne forces.

About this time ſome diſcourteſies hapned between the Lord Deputy and the Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, for that he had made ſome complaints of the Deputy in *England*, but by perſwaſion of Secretary *Cecil*, the Lord Preſidents great friend, they were united as faſt as greatnes will permit.

His Lordſhip for want of victuall lay about *Armagh*, and the Blackwater Fort.

Aug.

Aug. 29. his Lordſhip came to *Trim*, where the counſell of *Dublin* met him, and from whence, *September* the third, they wrote into *England*, in excuſe that they had paſſed the limited ſumme of 6000 for extraordinaries: it being farre too little to compaſſe ſo much buſineſſe, and provide ſo many things as was needfull, and had not been able out of it to repaire *Athlone* Caſtle, the Key of *Connagh*; nor divers other Forts and Caſtles of great conſequence.

Now intelligence came from Secretary *Cecill*, that the *Spaniards* were diſcovered about *Sylly*, 45 ſayle, (whereof 17 men of warre) and ſuppoſed that they would land at *Limrick*: moſt of them 100 tun apiece, and had ſix thouſand ſouldiers in them.

As alſo other letters from the Councell in *England*, that his Lordſhip would aske what ſupplyes were needfull, and that in convenient time.

September the nineteenth, two thouſand men out of *England* arrived, ſome in *Corke*, and ſome in *Waterford*.

And his Lordſhip writes for ſtore of munition and victuals, to be with all ſpeed ſent to *Dublin*, telling Maſter Secretary that *Tyrones* very friends would faile with his fortune, and many others when they could rid themſelves of the feare of him.

And that the Iriſh ſubmitted Lords deſired to continue ſubjects, if they might ſee appearance of defence, though perchance not ſo much out of their honeſt diſpoſition, as for the ſmart they yet feele of a bitter perſecution.

In *June*, the Queene wrote to the Lord Deputy with her own hand, a moſt gracious acceptance, and a free commendations of his good ſervice.

September the three and twentieth, the *Spaniſh* Fleet came into *Kinſale*, lying between *Roſſe* and *Corke* Bay out into the South Sea: the Lord Deputy and Lord Preſident of *Mun-*

ſter, being both together with the Councell at *Kilkenny*, whence they road both to *Corke*.

Where they underſtood the number of the *Spaniards* to be about ſix thouſand, under the command of *Don Jean de Aquila*, who was one of the chiefeſt Commanders of the King of *Spaine*, and had been Generall in *Britany*: And that a thouſand of them ſcattered by foul weather, were landed at *Baltimore* to the Weſtward of *Kinſale*.

And that they expected (according to promiſe) great aid and aſſiſtance from the pretended Earle of *Deſmond* and *Florence, Mac Carty*, who were both taken priſoners, and already ſent into *England*.

And that they had brought ſixteene hundred great Saddles, for which *Tyrone* had promiſed to furniſh them with horſe, and then they would keepe the field, for they had likewiſe many armes in hope the Iriſh Rebels would ſupply them with men, which would revolt at their firſt appearance.

About *October*, many letters are ſent into *England*, to the Counſell and to Maſter Secretary.

And he tels them, that ſeeing the occaſions are ſo great, good ſupplies are to be ſent with all ſpeed, becauſe defence muſt be made for the ſubject that hath means.

And money alſo, becauſe the Swordmen which have no means, will goe to the enemy if wee entertain them not.

Thus his Lordſhip ſtreightned for want of men, to ſuppreſſe the rebels in the North, and oppoſe the forreigne enemy in the South; but that God who accounts rebellion as the ſin of Witchcraft, and an evill thought againſt lawfull Soveraignty impiety, did ſo counſell and incourage him, that collecting a ſmall force together to *Corke*, hee ſhews himſelfe in field, and preſently marched within five miles of *Kinſale*, and on the 17 of *October*, within halfe a

mile

of the walls, and ſate down under a hill called *Knoc Robin*, whither the *Spaniard* out of the Towne, made ſome ſhot to hinder his encamping but could not.

And the next night made a great ſalley, but were beaten back again.

Many skirmiſhes hapned between the *Engliſh* & *Spaniard*, who always went backe by weeping croſſe; by Gods providence and the valour of our ſtout Commanders. So that *Don Jean* himſelfe ſaid hee never ſaw men come more willingly to the ſword then ours.

There was little done by reaſon our artillery were not come to the Campe.

But the 26, our Campe roſe and intrenched themſelves very ſtrongly on Spittle Hill, on the North ſide of *Kinſale*, a little above Musket ſhot of the Town.

Sir *John Barkley* with three other Captains, the night before falling into the *Spaniards* Trenches, made them forſake them; and fell into the gate of the Towne with them, and killed and hurt above 20 of them, having but three of our men hurt.

The diſpoſall of the whole army in Forts & Garriſons.

Left at *Loughfoyle* horſe 100, foot 3000 under ſeverall Captains.

Left at *Carlefergus* horſe 150, foot 850.

In *Lecale*, foot 150.

Left in the North Garriſons, horſe 100.

Foot in No: Garriſons 800.

Left in the Pale and places adjoyning 175.

Foot in the Pale under ſeverall Captains 3150.

Left in *Connagh* 62 horſe.

Foot left there, 1150.

Tot. 587 horſe.
foot 9100.

A liſt of the Army with his Lordſhip at Kinſale.

The old *Munſter* liſt, Horſe 175. Foote 1950.

New Companies 2000 Foot.

Brought from the North and the Pale to *Kinſale*, 436 horſe, more foote 950. more foot 2080.

tot. at *Kinſale* horſe 611.

Foot 6900.

The whole Army in *Ireland* 1198 horſe, 1600 foot.

But many of theſe Companies were very deficient: the the 27. our Artilery were landed at Oyſter haven, and brought into the Campe: and two Culverings were planted to batter the Caſtle of *Rincovaur* which the Spaniards poſſeſſed from their firſt comming, which Caſtle commanded the harbour of *Kinſale*, but one of the Peeces preſently brake, ſo we planted two more, which grew ſo hot, that the enemy, ſeeing they could not bee releeved, neither by water nor land (for both had beene tryed, but in vaine) ſent out a parly for Conditions that would not bee accepted, but preſently after for life only, which was granted, being 86 in number, and ſome 30 had beene ſlaine in the defence of it.

The Spaniards drew a demi-Cannon out of the Towne, and did play into our Campe: the firſt ſhot killed two men, and indangered many, piercing his Lordſhips tent, the ſhot altogether falling about his quarter, ſome ſupplies of men, munition, and victuals, came out of *England* at this time, brought by the Earle of *Thomond*, and being noyſed that *Tyrone* was comming downe with a great Army to joyne with the Spanyard, the campe was ſtrongely fortified on the north ſide from the Towne; and the next day the Lord Preſident with 1100. Foot, and 325. horſe drew out into the borders of the Province to ſtop him, at leaſt hinder his paſſage.

But the Spaniards getting intelligence of the Lord Preſi-

dents

dents going out of the Campe, and ſuppoſing us thereby to be much weakned, about noone they drew out moſt of their forces, and ſent 60. ſhot and pikes to the foot of the hill neere our Campe, leaving their trenches very well lined.

Some entertained skirmiſh with thoſe that did approach ſo neere; Others of our men went about and ſet upon the trenches, and beat the Spaniards out of them, ſo that when the formoſt retyred, ſuppoſing to have reliefe of their ſeconds which they left in the Trenches they were deceived, and faine to make haſte into the Towne: many of them hurt and ſlaine a Serjant taken, ſo that *Don Jean* committed the Serjant major: commended the valour of our men, and that his owne had loſt their reputation.

And commanded that no man ſhould after come off from his ſervice, except he were fetched off by an Officer.

The 13. day ten great ſhips came into *Kinſale* under the command of Sir *Rich. Leviſon*, who brought 2000. Foot with Munition and Artillery: and Officers of all kinds to attend the ſame.

A liſt of the Army at *Kinſale* Foot 11800.

Out of which was choſen a flying Regiment (as they called it) to anſwer all alarmes, and were exempted from other duties.

The Horſe 857.

The Caſtle *Nipark* upon a breach made by our cannon, yeelded only on condition of ſaving their lives, ſixteen being only left in it; It ſtood in an Iſland beyond the water.

The Lord Preſident returned with foure Regiments, two he carryed out, and two met him, and comming to the Campe, they quartered by themſelves on the Weſt ſide of *Kinſale*, and were commanded by the Earle of *Thomond*, for the Lord Preſident went to the Lord Deputy.

The Towne with a Demi-Cannon played upon our Admi-

rall, and Vice-Admirall in the the harbour of *Kinſale*.

And ſhot them throughout.

But our Shippe peeces preſently diſmounted the Demi-cannon, and hurt their chiefe Gunner.

Our battery lay ſo continually upon the Towne on all ſides, that did it much offend the enemy within, who impatient that we built a fort cloſe to the towne Weſt gate.

Made a brave ſally with 2000 men on our Ordinance on the Eaſt ſide, and made moſt furious aſſault, having brought with them tooles to cloy the Peeces, and to diſmount them if poſsible.

And indevoured to pull downe the Gabions in our trenches and baskets filled with earth, for the ſafegard of our Gunners and Cannoneeres.

But they found ſuch reſiſtance by the great courage of our men, that they were driven to retreate into the Towne, leaving above 120 dead in the place, and many ſlaine neere the towne, ſome others taken priſoners.

But on our ſide not many hurt, two Captaines and one Lievtenant killed.

Among the Spaniards at their ſhipping many of them were found to have Spells, Characters, and hallowed Medalls, as preſervatives againſt death.

A Drumme was ſent to offer *Don Jean* to bury his ſlaine, who returned thankes, but withall prayed the Lord Deputie to ſee them buried, promiſing to doe the like for ours, when they fell in his power.

At this time newes came that ſixe Spaniſh ſhips were put into *Caſtle-haven*, neere *Baltamore*, and ſixe more were ſcattered from them by ſonle weather, theſe ſix brought two thouſand men, and many Ordnance and Munition, and news that 20000 more were comming.

Sir *Richard Leviſon* getting five or ſixe ſhips out of the harbour

harbour of *Kinſale*, got in little time into *Caſtle-haven*, and and ſunke one Spaniſh ſhip.

The Admirall of the Spaniard having 9 Foot water in her hould drave on a rocke, and the Vice-Admirall and two others run aground, moſt of the Spaniards quitting them.

And ſo our Fleet returned to *Kinſale*.

Into which harbour came a Scottiſh Barke laden with 80 Spaniards, who were by the Maſter put all into the hands of the Engliſh, ſo were landed and carryed into the Campe, upon whoſe examination divers diſcoveries were made, that great preparations were made for *Ireland*, and that in *Spain* they doubted not but that it was taken already.

Now intelligence came to the Campe that *O Donnell* was joyned with the Spaniards that landed at *Caſtle-haven*, & that he together with all the forces that *Tyrone* could make, would releeve *Kinſale*.

Upon which our Campes did more ſtrongly fortifie and intrench themſelves for their owne defence.

And ſo had not leaſure to follow the batteryes as they had done before, becauſe the new ſupplies were much waſted with hard ſervice, and great ſickneſſe.

Two ſmall Sconces were built at the Weſt ſide of the Towne, betweene the Earle of *Thomands* quarter and the water, and ſo caſt up trenches from place to place, to inveſt the town to the land, and hinder the driving in of the cattell into the town. *O Donnels* forces, are ſaid to be 4000. and *Tyrones* 8000. which are all to joyne with the Spaniards, and lye not above ſixe miles from our Campe.

A Letter was intercepted, ſent to *Oneale* by the Spaniſh Generall.

To the Prince Oneale, and Lord O Donnell.

I Thought your Excellencies would have come at *Don Ricardos* going, ſince he had order from you, to ſay that upon

on the Spaniards comming to you (from *Castle-haven*) you would doe me that favour; And so I beseech you now, you will do it, and come as speedily and as well appointed as may be: for I assure you that the enemy, are tyred and very few, and they cannot guard the third part of their trenches, which shall not availe them, for resisting their first fury, all is ended.

The manner of your comming, your Excellencies know better there then I to give here: for I will give them enough to doe this way, being alwayes watching to give the blow all that I can, and with some resolution that your Excellency fighting as ye doe alwayes, I hope in God the victory shall be ours without doubt, because the cause is his.

And I more desire the victory for the interest of your Excellencie, then mine owne.

And so there is nothing to be done, but to bring your squadrons, come well appointed and close withall, that being mingled with the enemies, their forts will doe as much harme to themselves as unto us.

The Lord keepe your Excell. *Kinsale* Decemb. 18. after the old stile.

Though you be not well fitted, I beseech your Excellen. to dislodge and come towards the enemy, for expedition imports, it is needfull that we all be on horseback at once, and the greater hast the better,

Signed by Don Iean de Aquila.

This newes made us ply our batteryes the more, and the like importunitie made *Tyrone* advance within a mile of us in the way to *Corke*.

But some of our Foot drawing out of the Campe towards him, for that time he drew himselfe into the woods.

Our Army was but weake at this time, many sick, and some ran away in number 6595.

Tyrone

Tyrone often shewed his Horse and Foot on a hill not farre off, and we had intelligence from one of Tyrones Commanders, that both he and the Spaniards resolved to assaile our Campe together on all sides in the night.

But Tyrones guides missing the way, happened to be within an houre of day, when they were discried, in a plaine not far from our Campe: where Tirrill led the vanguard wherein the Spaniards from Castle haven were, Tyrone leading their battell, and O Donnell their reare intending to force the great Campe.

But the Lord Deputy, with the Lord President having been in Counsell all that night drew out some regiments. The Marshall Sir Richard Wingfield with 400 horse, and Sir Henry Powers regiment advanced within 20 score of the enemy, resolving to give them battell, two more regiments being come up; which the enemy perceiving retyred over a foard somewhat disorderly, and the Marshall seeing it desired leave of the Lord Deputy to fight, which being granted to take occasion according to his discretion, hee presently marched forward over the foard.

The enemy still retyring further over the bogge into a plaine, hoping to find the bogge some safegard from us.

But the Marshall with some horse and foot went to the bogge side, and gave them occasion of skirmish; there their Battallians standing firme on the one side of the bogge, and our foot on the other.

In the meane time the Marshall found a way through the Foord to the ground where the Rebels stood, hee pointed the same with some foot, and presently got over three troope of Horse, with which he charged the enemies battailes of 1800 men, but finding them stand firme, wheeled about.

But now three troope of Horse more, and two Regiments

of foot which were with the Lord Deputy, who ſtood not farre off with a vigilant eye, came all up.

So that the Marſhall with the Horſe charged home upon the reare of the Battell, which being Iriſh, and not uſed to fight in the plaine, eſpecially ſeeing their horſe flye, which were the chief Gentlemen (in number five or ſix hundred) were ſuddenly routed, and our men followed the execution. The other two Battels ſeeing the other routed, advanced to their ſuccour, but the Lord Deputy ſending another Regiment to charge on the flanke of the Vangard, which preſently retyred diſorderly, being followed by our horſe and foot. But the Spaniards that were not ſo light-footed, drew out by themſelves, yet were ſoon broken (by a troope of horſe led by Sir *William Godolphin*) and moſt of them killed: their Commander Don *Alonzo del Campo* taken priſoner, together with two Captaines, 7 *Alferoes*, Enſignes or Colours (as we call them), and 40 ſouldiers.

In the mean time many of the light-footed Iriſh eſcaped away, by advantage of this execution done on the *Spaniard*: and all the mayn battaile except 60 were killed.

On our ſide little hurt, Sir *Richard Greames* Coronet killed, ſome Commanders of quality hurt, and ſix ſouldiers hurt, many of our horſes killed, and others hurt. Of the Iriſh 1200 left dead in the place, beſides thoſe that were killed in two miles chaſe. Wee took nine of their Enſignes, all their Drums, Powder, and two thouſand armes.

And their deſtruction had been greater, had not the greedineſſe of our men in pillaging and rifling the *Spaniards* hindred it.

And had not our foot been tired out with continuall ſervice, and our horſe ſpent for want of proviſion to keepe them in good caſe, we had cut the throat of all the Rebels, for they never made reſiſtance, nor looked behind them, but ran and ſhifted for their lives.

His

His Lordſhip preſently in the midſt of the dead bodies, gave thanks to God for this great victorie.

So let all thine enemies periſh, O Lord, but let them that love him be as the Sun when he goeth forth in his might.

The Rebels were upon report about ſix thouſand foot, & 500 horſe, whereof 14 Captains ſlain, ſouldiers ſlain 1995.

His Lordſhip had not above 1200 foot, and leſſe then 400 horſe, ſo that it was Gods great goodneſſe to give him the day.

And about noon he returned giving volleys of ſhot in manner of Triumph.

Which the *Spaniards* in the town hearing, who had layn ſtill all this while expecting *Tyrone*, and now ſuppoſed that it had been he, made a ſally out upon our Campe, but ſoone perceiving their errour, they did retire into the town again.

But made divers ſallies out to hinder our making of trenches, and other works which now we did moſt earneſtly.

About the laſt of *December*, *Don Jean* ſent to the Deputy about a parley, tearming him Vice-roy, and much complained of the treachery and falſhood of the Iriſh.

And that if honorable conditions were offered, he would accept; and ſo after many parlyes and propoſitions, Articles were accorded on both ſides.

That the *Spaniard* with all he had, and while they tarry be well intreated, and have things neceſſary for their money: and ſent ſafe away into *Spain* in *Engliſh* ſhips, aſſoone as conveniently they may: paying for their paſſage, and leaving a pledge for the ſafe returne of them backe againe.

So our army went to refreſh it ſelf at *Corke*, and the *Span.* abroad in *Kinſale*, only *Don Jean* rode with the Deputy, and made means to his Lordſhip, that his Excellencie would ſhew ſome commiſeration on the Spaniſh priſoners that were in *Corke*, that were in great extremity for want of proviſion in number 160.

The 25. certaine Captaines are dispatched West-ward to receive from the Spaniards, as Castle-haven, Baltimore, and Beer-haven, those Castles which they possessed, but they not knowing of this their Generals Composition, they at Beer-haven being 60. did build a Fort of trees and earth and planted three pieces in it.

About the eight of March (for so long it was by reason of foule weather and crosse winds, before all the Spaniards could be sent home) his Lordship with the Army attending them about, not willing to trust them over-much, or give them occasion of doing ill.

About the end of the yeere 1602. his Lordship wrote unto the Counsell in England, shewing them the hope of that they had of the peace and quiet of Munster, upon the death and execution of three arch-rebels.

Likewise shewing them there was great discontentment in the army, upon an occasion of an abatement of halfe a pound of beefe to each mans day, and two herring on fish-dayes; and that the horsmen did murmure, for that Oates were raised 5 s. a quarter more then usuall, being but 10 s. before, now 15 s. which his Lordship did alter againe for feare of a mutiny.

And presently after his Lordship fell sicke, and so continued repaying to Dublin to take physick.

Now here Majesties charge is cast up for the former yeere ending 1602. and but was 446087 l. 17 s. 8 d.

Besides the Contentum Bils impressed upon account here, the levies and transporting of forces, (paid in England) and the payment of wages, and the charge of the office of the Ordnance, Powder, Bullets, &c.

Now a List is taken of the army in the beginning of the yeere 1602. Collonels 14.

Totall of the horse by the list 1487. foot 16930.

But

But of these only 500 horse, and 2650 foot went into the field with his Lordship, the rest were placed in severall Forts, Castles, and Countries, for the better preventing of the Rebels joyning together, and were so placed, that upon little warning many of them might meet with his Lordship, now intending to bend all his forces on *Tyrons* country.

So being recovered, took the field in *June*, and marching up to *Blackwater*, to the fittest passage into the heart of *Tyrone* five miles Eastward from the Fort of *Blackwater*.

There was but a small space or skirt of a Wood between our Camp and the River, which wood he had cut through the yeere before, and there building a bridge over the River, and a Fort to safegard it (calling it *Charlemount*) he passed to *Dungannon*, six miles distant, a plaine open way; whence *Tyrone* making hast away left the Towne and his own house there seated all a fire, so his Lordship sending a company before to view it, presently marched thither with his army, and *Tyrone* fled as high as the Castle *Ran*, upon the Bann, his Lordship sent out Companys to spoyle and forrage, as farre as *Enniskillin* or *Lough Erne*, and taking two of *Tyrones* chiefe Islands, hee marched to *Lough-Sidney* where he met Sir *Arthur Chichester* with his forces, who came from *Carickfergus*, at their meeting place his Lordship raised a Fort capable of a 1000 foot, and 100 horse, and called it *Mountjoy*, after his own Barony. And his Lordships resolutions were to follow *Tyrone* from place to place, but that a scarcity of victuals hindred him, so that he was faine for 20 dayes to go elsewhere to provide, but leaving these Garrisons in the mean time, so strong about *Tyrone* that he should not dare to venture on the plaine, and they stirring about to seek after him in his fortrels, he should not feed his Creaghes abroad.

Now fresh news came of new supplyes from *Spaine*, and

con-

confirmed, for that a ship of *Spaine* arrived at *Ardes*, and brought *O Sullivan Beare*, and other Captaines of the Rebels munition and store of money: which made them grow somewhat resolute, whereas before they were ready to sue for mercy: this caused some obstructions in their proceeding.

But the Lord Deputy intending to take the field and have the *Newry* but hearing that *Tyrone* would send and disturbe the parts about *Killultagh*, to hinder that himselfe should not be prosecuted,

His Lordship sent some Commanders to invest a strong Fort wherein lay all the goods of such Rebels as were fled into *Tyrone*: called *Enisblaughen*, which was seated in the midst of a great Bog, and no way accessable, but through thick Woods very hardly passable, and the Fort had about it two deep ditches both compassed with strong Pallisado's a very high and thick Rampire of earth, and timber, and well flanked with Bulwarks, and sixty souldiers for its defence; who by the industry and valour of our men were made to yield, and men brought to his Lordship at the *Newry*.

This done his Lordship took the field, *Aug.* 20, marched towards *Armagh*, and so spoyled *Tyron's* Country, who was fled into *Fermanagh*; from whence he went to a Fortresse at the bottome of *Lough Earne*, so that hee could not be approched, so that making waste thereabouts & leaving Garrisons, at the end of Sumer his Lordship returned to *Dublin*.

About *October* 20, many Rebels offered submission, especially many of *Tyrones* Captains, and *Tyron* himself writes an humble letter to the Lord Deputy.

Who begins a journey into *Connagh* to take the submission of other Rebels, and to view the Towne of *Galloway*, where he continued all Christmas, and caused a fort to be built there.

The

The Lord Preſident of *Munſter*, went to ſurprize the caſtle of *Dunboy* which *Oſullivan Beare* got from the *Spaniard*, at *Bearhaven*, where in were ſixty Warders, and three peeces of Ordnance, neere unto which his Lordſhip pitched his camp having a riſing hil between it & the caſtle, there were within it ſome *Spaniards* & *Italians*. But our battery making a breach was entred by the Engliſh, and poſſeſſed part of it, but the Rebels defended the reſt all the day and night, and part of the next day: untill our men wonne it by force, and ſlue and executed 134 men; ſparing 12 of good account, which were kept to worke upon *Tirrill*. Spaniſh Ordnance taken in this Fort, one Demyculvering, two Sacres, and one Falcon all of braſſe, and two Sacres, five Minions, and one Falcon of iron, the Caſtle was blown up, and his Lordſhip returned to *Corke*. Sir *Samuel Bagnal* with a Regiment, fell by night into *Tyrrils* Campe, lying in *Munkerry*, killed 80 of his men, made him flie away in his ſhirt, took a thouſand cattell, 60 horſes and hackneys, and much rich ſpoyle.

And Sir *Charles Wilmot* brake by night into the quarters of the Knight of *Kerry*, killed 40 of his men; tooke 500 Cows, 200 Garrais, and two moneths proviſion of meale, and meeting with other Rebels, he took in all 2000 Cows, 4000 ſheep, and 1000 Garrais, ſo that the Rebels as b oken men flew towards *Pale*. About this time Captain *Taffe* commanding our Iriſh in *Carbery*, aſſaulted a band of Rebels, led by a Prieſt the Popes *Nuncio*, who killed the Prieſt with moſt of his men, and got his cattell.

Upon whoſe death *Mac Carties*, & all *Carbery* ſubmitted.

So the Lord Preſident from *Connogh* returned to *Munſter*, and leaving two Commiſſioners to governe *Munſter* in the beginning of *March*, ſailed into *England*.

And now *Tyrone* himſelf ſues for the Queenes favour, which ſhe is very unwilling to grant, ſuppoſing him no worthy to live, who had coſt ſo many lives, and cauſed her

ſo

so much charge and trouble: yet the Deputy earnestly mediates, but it doth not appeare that ever hee did yield unto it; yet willing he should come in.

But *Tyrone* had little left but the grudging of the common people, which alwayes followes disasters, and especially that he had engaged the ruine of his whole Nation, for his owne private discontents, and that these warres however beneficiall to him, yet were they most pernicious to them. Thus *Tyrone* having almost, if not altogether worne out and wasted his friends and fortune, found it high time to seek favour and accept it upon any terms.

Which the Deputy having secret intelligence of (the Queens death not yet publikely knowne) made some haste to accept of his submission, lest another should have taken the start out, that he had taken in his toyle.

And so *March* 30, 1603, at *Mellifont* hee made his humble submission to the Deputy (sitting in a Chaire of State) on his knees, and in the company of the Deputy rode to *Dublin*, *April* 4.

At which time open tydings came of the death of that victorious Queen, and the happy comming in of K. *James* to the Estate of *Tyrone*, made a new submission to the Deputy, as to King *James* King of *England*.

And now upon this change divers of the Towns and Cities, as *Cork*, *Waterford*, and *Wexford*, through the seducing of the Priests and Jesuits, had set up the Idolatrous Masse, and brought in Popish superstition, by force and violence, on a false suggestion, that K. *James* was a favourer of the same.

So the Deputy was like to have a new businesse in hand by those that had not shewed themselves all this time; who seeing their hope of gaine gone, the rebellion growing to an end, themselves will venture to continue it rather then let it sinke.

As

As *Limrick* and *Galloway*, but especially *Corke* grew exceeding insolent, and by force to advance to the height, the Romish Religion.

And for prevention hereof his Lordship first writes to the *Maior*, and then drawes towards them with the Kings forces.

Hanged some of the Ring-leaders at *Corke*, sware the other Cities to obedience, leaving strong Garrisons in them. Left Sir *George Carew* the Kings Deputy, sent for *Tyrone*, and carried him into *England*, where he was joyfully welcomed, and graciously entertained at the Court, created Earle of *Devonshire*, and made a privy Counsellour. *Tyrone* having procured his pardon of the King, and a Proclamation for his safegard in his return to *Ireland*, being grown exceeding odious to our Nation, there he stayed awhile, but after being disloyall, fled into *Spain*, and there died.

The War ended the army List, horse 1090, foot 11150, and after to be reduced to 8000 foot.

The charge from 1602 to 1603, beside *concordatum*, munition, and other extraordinaries 290733 l. 8 s. 9 d. Which War continued from *October* 1. 1598: to the last of *March*, 1603, which was foure yeeres and a halfe, and cost besides great *concordatums*, great charge of munition, and other great charge of Extraordinaries 1198717 l. 19 s.

Thus was *Ireland* by that noble Lord cured of its desperate state, and brought into the most absolutest subjection, in which it had ever been since the first conquest. And had the resolution held of disarming the Papists, which afterward could not be effected when our army was reduced to so small a number.

Or the eye of Policy or Church Discipline been so vigilant or observable, as it might have been.

We need not now have felt what we may justly, though late enough lament.

But whether slides my eager pen, it was my promise to set a period to that sad Scene, and how meanly performed, no man knows better then my selfe.

But since that Tragick part is now againe (after so many halcyon happy dayes) come on the Stage, it calls to minde still some sad events which then happned, and follow yet this Rebellion, whose Incentive is enraged rancour, and end ruine and destruction.

For besides that inhumane disposition of the Native Irish, as appeared by a barbarous fact committed about Newry in Ulst by three Irish people in their house, taking them and burning, that running away by the light, but were apprehended, executed, and hung on Gibbets. There is an imbred hatred in them towards the English, and generall dislike of our Civill government, but much more of our Religion, the love of the Irish to Spain, (whence some of them are descended.

The least successe of the Rebels, and the hope of pardon upon the worst event, which last by the great wisdome of the Parliament is prevented by setting them Lands to sale all soone as they are entred into Rebellion, the better to awe them; for those continuall parleys and overtures of peace, proved most dangerous to the State, and most advantageous to the Rebels, and called them to revolt upon the least discontent, and where as the Irish have layen to look on them these many years, it makes them prove Judith, who by nature goe best with a hard hand.

Being best preserved by the same means by which they were first gained.

These things lying fermenting in their hearts (has now broake out in a filthy running soare) especially pressed by the

the hands of Priests and Iesuits, who for their owne lusts and ends, care not what exigence and miserie they driue those misled people into, who were they so wise as to consider those miseries they formerly indured, when the prouision of the Countrey was destroyed, and they lay scattered in the wayes dead by reason of hunger, and nothing more common, then to see multitudes of those miserable people dead in the ditches of Towne, with their mouthes all coloured greene with eating of nettles and docks, and whatelse they could reare out of the ground.

Beside this, two most horrid spectacles were then seene three children, the eldest not aboue 10 yeares old all eating and gnawing the intrails of their dead Mother, upon whose flesh they had fed 20 dayes past, having deuoured all the flesh to the bare bones, now fell a roasting the intralles on a slow fire to sustaine themselues from starving.

Another more cruell discouered by Captaine *Treuor* lying at the *Newry*, of certaine old women in those parts which used to make a fire in the fields, whether diuers little children drawe on carrell in the cold mornings, and comming to warme themselues, were by these surprised, killed, and eaten, which at the last was discouered by a great girle which brake from them by strength.

For the certaine information the Captaine sent out some Souldiers to try the truth of it, who found the scalps and bones of children scattered in the fields, and so did apprehend those cursed caitiffs, and put them to death. These and many as bad are the accidents that happened in that Rebellion.

And who can expect better in this, or else, who sees not worse, if not suddenly preuented, this fire of rebellion abroad kindled, will be found to increase into a deuouring flame, by slow and sleaue opposition to be first in potion, if they

We need not now have felt what we many justly, though late enough lament.

But whether slides my eager pen, it was my promise to set a period to that sad scene, and how meanly performed, no man knows better then my selfe.

But since that Tragick part is now againe (after so many halcyon happy dayes) come on the Stage, it calls to minde still some sad events which then happned, and follow'd selfish Rebellion, whose Incentive is enraged rancour, and envy, rume and detraction.

For besides that inhumane disposition of the Native Irish, as appeared by a barbarous fact committed about Nenagh in Kerr by three Irish people in their house, killing them and burning it, and running away by the light, but were apprehended, executed, and hung on Gibbets. There is an imbred hatred in them towards the English, and a generall dislike of our Civill government, but much more of our Religion, the love of the Irish to Spain, (whence some of them are descended.

The least successe of the Rebels, and the hope of pardon upon the worst event, which fair by the great wisdome of the Parliament is prevented by setting them Lands to sale all soone as they are entred into Rebellion, the better to awe them; for those continuall parleys and overtures of peace, proved most dangerous to the State, and most advantageous to the Rebels, and caused them to revolt upon the least discontent, and where as the Irishes have layen to loose on them these many years, it makes them proue Judith, who by nature goe best with a hard hand.

Being best preserved by the same meanes by which they were first gained.

These things lying festering in their hearts (that now breake out in a filthy running soare) especially pressed by the

the hands of Priests and Iesuites, who for their owne aymes and ends, care not what exigence and extremity they drive those misled people into, who were they so wise as to consider those miseries they formerly indured, when the provision of the Countrey was destroyed, and they lay scattered in the wayes dead by rotten rish hunger, and nothing more common then to see multitudes of those miserable people dead in the ditches of Downe, with their mouthes all coloured greene with eating of nettles and docks, and whatelse they could reare out of the ground.

Beside this, two most horrid spectacles were then seene three children, the eldest not above 10 yeares old all eating and gnawing the intrails of their dead Mother, upon whose flesh they had fed 20 dayes past, having devoured all the flesh to the bare bones, now fell a roasting the intralles on a slow fire to sustaine themselves from starving.

Another more cruell discovered by Captaine *Treur* lying at the *Newry*, of certaine old women in those parts which used to make a fire in the fields, whether divers little children drove on carrell in the cold mornings, and comming to warme themselves, were by these surprised, killed, and eaten, which at the last was discovered by a great girle which brake from them by strength.

For the certaine information the Captaine sent out some Souldiers to try the truth of it, who found the scalls and bones of children scattered in the fields, and so did apprehend those cursed caniffs, and put them to death. These and many as bad are the horrours that happended in that Rebellion.

And who can expect better in this, or else, when seen worse, if not suddenly prevented, this fire of rebellion now kindled, will be found to increase into a devouring flame, by slow and slender oppositions to be first in motion, if they

Rebels have liberty to combine and know their owne strength; for by delay the foe is incouraged, and his number animated by such as submit for feare of them, when they cannot be secured by us.

And if we have not such forces as may keepe and command the field, thereby to compell the Rebell to make resistance: t one place with most of his forces, then will hee forrage and spoyle all abroad in the Country; but if hee be made unite in one head, then will he soone be driven to want of victuals, which will be apt to breed murmurings and mutinies among themselves.

And a warre of force will be great, costly, and large (as the Earle of *Essex* said) and that will make the burden more deservedly to be complained of, then that of Queene *Elizabeth*, who did grieve and groane (as thee sayd) with her subjects, under so great a weight as the maintaining of 1400. foot, and 1500 horse, in a climate full of contagion, in a Kingdome utterly wasted.

Which forces ours must farre exceed; for although the Rebels have not such woods and fortresses as then, yet now are they equall in number, and farre more ready then formerly, and better exercised in feats of armes, and no doubt will make the best advantage of the hils and boggs, for the Earle of *Essex* was wont to say that the warre in *Ireland*, was as aswell to be made with woods and bogges as men; It's not like the coursing of a Hare, but as the digging after an earthed Foxe from one angle to another.

It was then thought the savingst way to breake them by factions raysed among themselves, they being covetous and mercenary; and will be hired to any thing, especially if the Iesuites and preaching Priests be but rooted out, which doe solder them so fast and close together, that were they quite banished, they would moulder asunder in short time of themselves.

Some obſtructions were then like to happen, as ready to hinder the good progreſſe ariſing from the diſcountenancing of the Generall by the ſupreame authority that imployed him; his want of truſty friends to meditate and ſpeed his proceedings; this feare rayſed many jealouſies in the Earle of *Eſſex* head, and run him on the raſh attempt to have (unwarranted) the Service.

This made Lord *Mountjoy*, ſo labour to ingratiate himſelfe with Secretary *Ceal*, a man powerful with the Queen, by which meanes all neceſſaries are timely ſent unto him, himſelfe incouraged to diligence, and had in honour and reputation in the eyes of his Souldiers. It was the only overthrow of victorious *Hanibal*, to bee ſecretly maligned, by the crafty wiles of *Hanno* working upon ſome thrifty humours of the Senators of *Carthage*, and ready to urge all his proceeding to his diſadvantage.

And when ſome ſhall labour by falſe evidence to ſway the opinion of his Supreame judge in the tirle of their favour and his deſerts; this dealing may prove injurious to the ſervice by whomſoever to be undertaken.

It was then thought fit for the further countenancing of the Generall, for to leave the diſpoſing of many places, eſpecially the Companies of the ſupplies ſent unto him, for ſo Gentlemen were kept in *Ireland* from being troubleſome in importuning authority for Companies in *England*, & men did more indeavour to deſerve well being in the eye of him of whom they have, or elſe expect advancement, and by that meanes will he bee able to curbe the inſolencies and miſdemeanours, of many bad Captaines, who ſue and preſſe hard for command to make a living, rather then out of any love to the cauſe or Countrey, or any affection to their Companies, as may appeare by keeping of them imperfect, and ſo lay the greater burden of ſervice on the reſt, or elſe

by changing away some for such such as are not serviceable, as was attempted in the last Scottish imployment: and knowing that their time is short, and at the end of the yeare begins (through their waste and improvidence, their misery) Captaines make harvest wages by reaping other mens corne.

These crimes in the Queenes wisdome were thought so heynous, as that the offenders were made examples by cashiering, degrading, and other notes of infamy.

And Captaines refusing to shew their Companies, when they were required by the Commissaries of the Musters should be checked two moneths pay, which will prove an ill president to be now observed.

Another inconvenience then happened is that there were not large Magazins of provision layd in the safe Townes lying on the Sea or great Rivers, for an Army has a large body, and much of it (like a frogs belly) and without that satisfaction the hands and knees are feeble.

And through the default of the Victualers there happened as great a mischiefe, that seeing the state of *England* exceeds all other Princes in their large allowance both by Sea and Land. So for the kind more nourishable, as beefe and porke, where as the Spaniard and French feed on hard peafe and beanes, dry rusks, and inspid rice, easie to be kept indeed.

But through the roguerie and deceit of the victualers, it is both cut short in quantity, and unsavoury, and unwholsome in the quality breeding diseases and infection among the poor Souldiers. This is no news to any that have been in the late actions of the English, and will never be otherwise until some severe course be taken with these cruell Harpies that ruine both King and people, by uttering any musty provision.

An

An excellent and commendable provision was then made for the sick, a Guest-house in the Towne; and carefully looked into, and to have their lendings in ready money, and surplussage allowed.

And for those that were sick or sickly in the Camp; their own means allowed them very duly.

Then a generall contribution from the Officers and Captaines of the Army: amounting to fifty pound a week, bestowed in providing warm broth, meat and lodging, was a great succour both to the sick and wounded, nor permitting them to lye in the field scattered or neglected, as though by their losse of limbes or health, they had lost their Christianity, what is it that takes away the edge of their valour, that they dare not venture so boldly as they would, but this neglect and scorne that is offered them, or least the losse of a member prove more miserable then the losse of their lives.

But let us now goe on with better hopes, and resolutions becomming the English Nation, assuming unto selves there is now wealth and honour to be gotten as well as then, when divers atchieved the dignity of Earles, many Viscounts, 13 Barons which were Colonels and Captaines in the service, besides many well affected Irish; who wonne honour and nothing can be wanting to us, if we be resolved to take care of us.

Besides, know of what condition your adversaries are Rebels in the highest degree against God, so having wounded their own conscience, and God their hearts; they will prove no other then a head of Deere, shewing a faire head; but make their heele the safe Gardian off them; and those light-footed *Kerne* have alwayes made better use of their heels then hands; and proof hath shewed when-

ever

ever they were called to the aid of the *Scots* or *English*.

Whose best commendations was, that the *Irish* at the first went on well, but according to their custome suddenly fell off; and leave their party ingaged, if they looke not to it.

So they did in a good cause, and with good company, but now all stained, and stand guilty of Rebellion, which is as the sin of witchcraft.

They became crest-falne, faint-hearted, that if followed with speed, *affum est*.

The Tragedy is ended, they must all uncase.

But why am I so bold, when wisdome almost divine is busie about it?

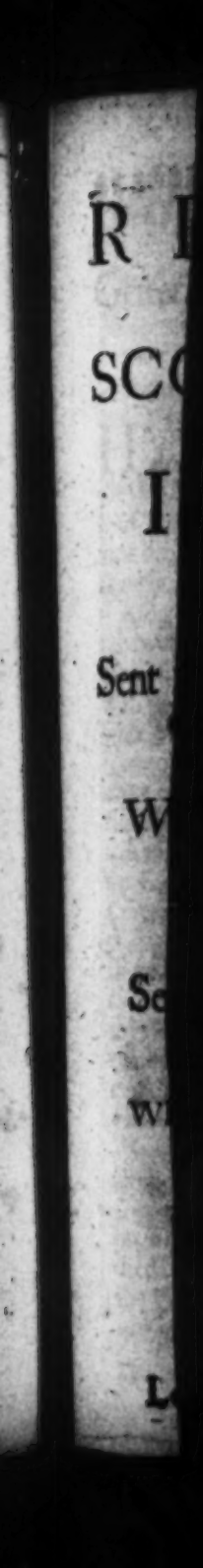
As if I meant to light a candle to the Sun, why that has been at noon day, to pry a corner that glorious light stoops not too.

Besides, *Abundans cautela non nocet*.

Many buoyes in the Sea, many beacons on the shoare, makes all the more safe and secure. And it may be used as an old wifes medicine, if it doe no good it will do no hurt: for it is not meant as an advice, but as an opinion of a well-wisher, which may be allowed or cancelled at any mans pleasure.

But when thou goest out with thy Host against thine enemie, keep thee then from all wickednesse, Deut. 23. 9.

FINIS.



A TRVE

RELATION

Of the proceedings of the

SCOTTISH ARMIE

NOW IN

IRELAND,

By three LETTERS.

The First

Sent from Generall Major MONROE to Generall *LESLIE* his Excellence.

The Second

Writ by the Major and Aldermen of *London-Derry* to Generall Major MONROE.

The Third

Sent by the Earle of *ANTRVM* to Generall Major *Monroe*.

Which Letters were sent by Generall Major *Monroe* to Generall LESLIE his Excellence.

London Printed for *Iohn Bartlet*, 1642.

RELATION

Of the proceedings of the

SCOTTISH ARMIE

NOW IN

IRELAND,

By three LETTERS.

The First

Sent from General Major MONRO to
General LESLIE His Excellence.

The Second

Writ by the Major and Aldermen of
London-Derry to General Major
MONRO.

The Third

Sent by the Earle of ANTRIM to
General Major Monro.

Which Letters were sent by General Major Monro to
General LESLIE his Excellence.



London Printed for John Bartlet, 1642.

Generall Major MONROE his Letter to Generall LESLEY.

Right Honourable,

HAving received your Letter of the fourth of May from Captaine *Fraser* at my returne to *Carrickfergus*, on Thursday the twelfth at night; please your Excellence to be enformed truely of the passages of our first expedition towards the *Newrie*; having broken up from *Carrickfergus* the twenty seventh of Aprill at night, we marched to *Mallone*, being nine miles from *Carrickfergus*, and a mile beyond *Belfast*, where we remained the twenty eight, till after mid-day, that my Lord *Conneway*, Colonell *Chitchester*, with a thousand commanded foot, did joyne with us, and three troopes of horse, and two troopes Dragooners, with our small pieces, and one big peece of five pound bullet taken off the Castle of *Carrickfergus*: And being forced to leave a part of our provision for ten dayes behinde us, for want of carridge horses. We broke up *Boden*, as we might be served to quarter that night at *Drumbo*, having directed from *Carrickfergus* one of the Kings ships towards *Carlingford* with some provision of Meal, Chiese and Ammunition, for which we had no transport by land, giving him order to secure the water mouth at *Carlingford*, being the water passes to the *Newrie*. The other ship I directed towards *Colraine* and *London-Derry*, with some chiese to them both, and to bring intelligence from thence against our returne. The twenty ninth we marched towards *Lessnagarvie*, where we joyned with eight hundred foot and two troopes of horse of my Lord *Clanneboyes*, and my Lord *Ards*, commanded by Lieutenant Colonell *Montgomrie*, and Lieutenant Colonell *Hamilton*; and being in all about three thousand foure hundred foot, in two divisions, *viz.* *Conneway Chitchester Clanneboyses* and *Ards* making one division, *Sinklers* commanded men, him and I being a thousand five hundred we made up the other division, and marched dry about in the Vauntguard and gave out the orders night about my Lord *Conneway* and I. We had also with us three troopes Dragooners at fifty

a piece, and five troops of horse at forty a piece; and all being put in order, we marched towards the woods of *Kilwarline*, where the Enemy lay in one Passe with 2500. men and sixty horse, commanded by my Lord *Evock*, *Mackartane* Sir *Con Macginnische* and Sir *Rorie Macginnische*, they having cast off one bridge on the Passe, and retired from it to another Passe in the woods; I commanded our horsemen to goe about and to draw up on their flanke in the wood having way to passe but one horse after another: in the meane time our commanded Muskateers and foure of our fielding-peeces were brought over the Passe, and made good one passe till our whole Army was set over, and then our Canons forced them to give ground, till we made open the second passe being straite, having mosse and bogs on every side; at length our commanded Muskateers charged the front, and the Cavilree on the flankes, till they were forced with losse to retreat in disorder athwart the woods and bogs on severall hands, in which time our whole Armie came over the passe, and then our commanded Muskateers skirmished with them for three miles in the woods on both flankes, while the body of the Army was making passages free to carry through the Canon and horsemen: at night we encamped all horse and foot in one body, the whole night in armes in the midest of the wood. In this skirmish Sir *Rorie Mackginnische* and *Mackartans*, two active men, brothers were killed with one hundred and fifty more; with the losse of two men on our side, and foure wounded. About Sir *Rorie* was found divers Letters, which furnished us with intelligence of all their designes in opposing us in that field, and of their intentions elsewhere.

Saturdy the last of *April*, we marched in the former order through the woods, towards *Lochbrecklane*, where being come on the plaine, our horsemen on the wings killed divers of them retiring, and some taken prisoners were hanged thereafter. And being come late to quartar we could not ingage that night with the intaking of the *Iland*, where there lay a wicked Garison in a fast place environed within a loch, being a refuge in safety, and their Boat drawne. Sunday the first of *May*, being eight miles from the *Newrie*, I commanded the Cavilrie and Dragoneers to march, for blocking up the *Newrie*, till our coming: and they being gone, I persued the *Iland* from the land with Canon and Musket for a time, and finding the roagues desperate, I adventured upon promise of reward six hieland-men with their armes, Pike and sword, to swim under mercy of our owne Canon, to bring away their Boat, whereof three swimmers dyed, two retired, and the

six

ſixt alone brought away the Boat, being ſhot through with a fielding-peece; ſhe was clamped up with ſalt hides, and being manned again, tooke in the *Ile*, the whole ſixty therein put to the ſword, and our priſoners which they had releaſed. And leaving a Serjeant and twelue Muſkateers there, we marched towards the *Newrie*; and having ſummoned the Town and Caſtle to come in to our mercy or no mercy, the Towne gave over, the Caſtle held out, alledging He was able to keepe it ſeuen yeers. In the meane time we granted a time to the next morning to Him to adviſe; during which time I fully recogniſhed the houſe and perceiued that I could take it in by pittard or by fire. On Munday the ſecond of *May*, prepared our fagots, and made ready our batteries, before tneſday at mid-day, reſolving to take it in rather by terrour of our Canons then by fire or pittard, which would make the place unprofitable for us; next if it were taken ſo Sir *Edward Traſer* a man of good account, being there Priſoner, had died alſo by them or with them; ſo having all things in readineſſe quainted them againe there was no quarter for them but he and his Gariſon to march forth without Armes with white ſticks in their hands, and he ſhould have a free Convoy, and their liues ſpared. Theſe of the town ſhould haue no other quarter then to come forth in our reuerence. And our priſoners to be ſafely delivered unto us, which they once accorded unto: but getting intelligence Sir *Philome* was neere hand for their reliefe, they reſolved to delay till the next morning, which being refuſed, we forced up their outer gate and were ready to pittard the ſecond were not for feare of the priſoners who cried for mercy; and that the gate ſhould be made up inſtantly as was done, and the Caſtle that night guarded by us and the priſoners guarded in the Town.

On Wedneſday the fourth of *May*, the Captaine was ſent away with a Convoy, and the towns-men detained till triall ſhould be had of their behaviours; as alſo the gariſon of *Carlingford* fled away for feare and the Captaine of the Kings ſhip made booty there and manned the Caſtle of *Carlingford*. This day I did write to *Dundalke* to Sir *Henry Tichburne* to come to the *Newrie* to learn of him the eſtate of the Country beyond him, who came to us on thurſday the fift of May of whom I could learn nothing, who being returned we entred in examination of the towns-men, if all were Papiſts; and the indifferent being ſeuered from the bad whereof 60. with two Prieſts were ſhot and hanged, the indifferent are baniſhed: which being done, finding the place commodious for our Army, I reſolved to place Lieutenant Coloneel *Sinkler* with his men to maintain the place, having joyned with them

them 100. of my Lord *Ards* and my Lord *Clannebowies* men till the rest of their owne regiment might be sent to them by water from *Carrickfergus*. And in my simple judgement your Excellence shall finde that place a convenient part to draw the third of the Army there being neerest the strength of the Enemy, in the Counties of *Ardmach*, *Tyran*, *Monacan* and *Cavan* otherwise it will be impossible to transport your Army from *Carrickfergus* for lack of carriage and toylsome wayes; for in this last march five of my carriages were broken, being but fielding peeces, which are the onely Cannon for use in this service: and our horses also in the most parts of the Country will not be usefull but rather a toyle to the foot to guard them; for it will be a War in my judgement very strange, for in the whole march I had never any alarme given us being quartered in the fields untrenched.

Friday the sixt of May having serled the Garison, I resolved to march towards the enemy to *Ardmach*: and having sent forth one strong party of Horse and Dragoneers towards their Army. they thinking the whole Army was marching, retired back on *Ardmach* and burnt the town, putting all the *Britisb* to the sword and retired to the straits of *Tyron*; whereupon we being scarce of victuals and our body weakned, our souldiers burthened with unnecessary trash of baggage. I resolved to returne with the Army home, marching through my Lord *Evankes* Countrey, *Mackartan* and *Slavenels*, being onely the considerable Enemy in the Countrey of *Down*. And in our March I resolved my selfe with 800. Musketeers to put them from their strengths in the Mountains of *Montue*, and to rob them of their cattell, which we did. I marching through the Mountains, on the right hand, and the Army, Horse and foot and Artillary marching through the Valley on the left hand, where we joyned together. On Sunday the eight at night, foure miles from the Passe of *Dundrum*, bordering betwixt my Lord *Evanks* Lands & *Mackartans*. Munday the ninth we divided our Army in three, Colonel *Home* with 500. commanded Musketeers two troops of Dragoneers, and one troope of Horse; to *Conroway* the Artillary cattell and baggage safest way towards *Mackartanes* owne house; the rest of the Horse, Lieutenant Colonell *Montgomrie* and 200. commanded Muskateers were sent about the Mountaines to run through betwixt *Kilwarning* woods and *Killernie* woods to the randevous the next day at *Mackartanes* house; and hearing *Mackartane* with his forces and cattell were lying in one strait in the woods of *Killernie*, I marched thither my selfe, with the body of the foot and Colours; and having quartered on Munday at night within three miles of the Enemy, came

upon

upon them the next morning unawares without sound of Drum, so they were scattered. And having commanded further three bodies of Musketeers to severall parts, appointing one randevow for all, we brought together to our quarters at night above foure thousand cattel, and joyned all together at night at *Mackrianes* house; and divers were killed of the Rebels, being scattered on all hands: and one strong body of them on one passe in the woods fore-gathered with the horsmen, and Lievtenant Colonel *Montgomrie*, where the foot behooved to guard the horse, they being unskilfull in their leding, having lost foure horses and five men.

Wednesday the 11. hearing the Enemy was resolved to fight with us in the wood, we marched with our Artillery and commanded men in the Van-guard; our two divisions marching after with commanded men in the flanks, we were forced to make severall slopt to cleere the passages they had stopped with wood to keepe us up; our cattel marched next to the Army being guarded with Pike-men and Musketeers on all quarters; our baggage next to them, our horsemen and Dragoneers in the Rere of all. The Rebels being drawne up on the hils, perceiving our order of march, durst not ingage with us, so cunning free off. we quartered at night in *Drumbo*: and the next morning divided our cattell, such as remained unstolen by the horsmen and plunderers, being an infinite number of poor contemptible country-men, which could not be reduced to order. And on thursday the twelfth, we returned to our severall quarters, all our victuals being spent, except our cowes. At my returne I received one letter from my Lord Marquesse of *Argile*, craving advice where he should land his men in the County of *Antrim*; likewise one other letter from the Earle of *Antrim*, rather to intrap me then to approve himselfe a loyall Subject; the third I received from the town of *London-Derry* shewing their necessities, which letters I have answered severally as I could best for the time.

And for answer to your Excellence of the fourth of *May*, I finde Companies cumming over and no provision with them, which questionlesse, except it be prevented, will breed disorders amongst us; for there is not provision here for the Forces already come to give them bread, and if I had not had meale that came from *Scotland*, and some Bisket borrowed from the Kings Ships, I had not intended the Expedition for the *Newrie*, and I did thinke in sixteen dayes time the most part being out of the Garison, that the Major should have had store of bread for a new Expedition in readinesse to goe into the County of

An-

Antrum, to assist the Marques of *Argiles* forces at their landing against the Rebels, being dangerous for them, except we be able to divert the Enemy toward the band-water, in regard my Lord *Antrum* is joyned strong with the Rebels, making a pretext of laying downe of Armes, in the meane time doth what he can to cut our throats; and except the men come suddenly I cannot draw to the fields to assist *Argile*; neither can I get *Sinclers* regiment well provided, who are at the *Newrie*; for in ten dayes time all the provision thereabouts will be eaten up, till more forces joyne with them to enlarge his freedome.

And my Lord *Linsies* men I have quartered in Broad *Iland* and *Rhuagie*, where they have houses but no victuals; and if all should be trusted to the Major of *Carrickfergus* his furnishing one thousand must live on one hundred mens allowance of bread a day: so that meale must be the provision which will fit us best to goe to the fields.

In all our journey we could not rammasse ten serviceable horse for Cannon or baggage, but above eight hundred colts and fillies were rammassed together out of the Mountaines and Woods by the poore contemptible robbed people and plunderers which I followed the Army, which I could not in pity take from them. The most of our carriage that was weighty at this time was drawne by Oxen, our baggage horse were scarce and weake. But I hope when grasse growes up wee may get some horses from them, if wee could be served meanly, for the present which no man can supply so wel as my Lord *Clanneboyes* and my Lord *Arddis*, Master *Arthur Hill*, and *James Edmistoun* of *Broad Iland* and *Ylemagues*; and this is all the helpe your Excellence may expect for transporting of Baggage or Amunition, except it be brought from *Scotland* for the time.

I must intreat your Excellence to cause send one Copie of this Information to our Commissioners, and another to my Lord Chancellour, since I cannot have time to write to them; please your Excellence to receive the letter that came from *London-Derry* the 27. of Aprill, as also the Earle of *Antrums* letter from *Dunluce* the last of Aprill, directed to my selfe. So having no further to acquaint your Excellence with for the time; wishing your Excellence an happy arrivall here: I remaine

Your Excellence humble and obedient Servant,

Carrickfergus this 13. of *May*, 1642.

ROBERT MONROE.

The Major and Aldermens Letter of *London-Derry* to Generall Major MONROE.

Right honourable and noble Sir,

WEE of this Citie of *London-Derry* and other parts, have either bin forgotten, or given over for loſſe, as we conceive; for all other parts of the Kingdome are plentifully ſupplied, and yet though we have made our wants and miſeries knowne divers times to *Dublin* and to *England* and *Scotland*, yet no reliefe ever came to us, but onely thirty barrels of powder brought by Captaine *Bolline* from *Dublin*, long before Chriſtmas, which was partly upon the arrival thereof diſpoſed to all needfull parts; and want of powder and armes here hath bin our ruine. It is the great providence and goodneſſe of God that we are hitherto preſerved, having bin ſo ill armed and provided for; all the armes within his Majeſties ſtore here were ſhipt to *Dublin* the laſt ſummer, and nothing left here but old decaid Calivers, which we have hitherto made a ſhift with, and trimmed them up to our great charges.

We have raiſed ſeven hundred men for the defence of this Citie and keepe them hitherto at our owne charges, in expectation of money and other ſupplies, but there is not one hundred good ſwords amongſt them and their armes but meane. Sir *William Stewart*, Sir *Robert Stewart*, and Sir *Ralph Gore* had Commiſſions from his Majeſty out of *Scotland* in *November* for raiſing their Regiments, and two horſe troops, they lye in the County of *Tyrone* and thereabout, and ſo have done all this winter, to oppoſe the enemy, but being unprovided for, and not one penny to pay them, they could never attempt any great ſervice. It is much that they keepe the enemies from our walls to this houre, now our powder is gone, our victuals is beginning to faile, and theſe three Regiments had bin ſtarved long ſince, if we of this Citie had not relieved them with Beefe, Butter, Herins, and other neceſſaries, to a great value, but this will hold us no longer, for we have not now victuals enough for our owne men in the Citie. And if a Ship of *Briſtow* had not arived here with ſome Peas, Meale and Wheat, we could not have ſhifted longer, and all that will not laſt the Regiments fourteene dayes;

for the provision of the Country is distressed by the enemy, or deserted by our owne men; and we are inforced to feed multitudes of unserviceable people that are fled hither for relieſe; ſo if the enemies ſword ſpare us, famine will diſpatch us, except God in mercy provide for us. But this is not all, for now at this very houre Sir *Phelome O-Neal* having gathered from all parts what forces he can make, is with a very great Army of Horſe and foot at *Strabane* and the foord of within ten or twelve miles of this Citie, intending (by all the intelligence we can get) to ſet up his reſt, and deſperately to breake in upon us, where all the forces we can make are ready to bid him welcome.

Sir *Phelome* on the one ſide of the River, and ours on the other, in ſight one of the other: ſo as we of this Citie were enforced not onely to ſend a great part of our men out of the Citie to joyne with them, but alſo unfurniſhed and pared with that little powder was left us, which with a little we got out of the *Briſtow* ſhip, we have ſent to encounter this *Iriſh* Rebell. And now to revive our fainting ſpirits God hath provided for our relieſe, and ſent this bearer Captaine *Strange* into *Lochfoyle*, who being in his Majeſties ſervice and ſent for the comfort of his Majeſties diſtreſſed Subjects into theſe parts we have made a true relation to him of our deſpaire eſtate and the great danger we are in, for want of powder and other proviſion, that we have not onely prevailed with him to lend us for the preſent ſix barrels of powder, but alſo to ſet ſail for us to *Carrikfergus*, to preſent our wants and dangers we are in to your Honorable conſideration, moſt earneſtly praying that for the love of God, and honour of our King, and the ſafety of this place and people, ye will diſpatch him back againe to us with a good and large proportion of Powder, Match, and head Muskets, Swords Pikes, ſome Spades and Shovels, whereof we have not any, and of theſe or what elſe may be had as much as ye can poſſibly ſpare us; for we want all things fit to defend a diſtreſſed Country, and offend a deſpirate Enemy.

We alſo pray that you will reſtore the Captaine the ſix barrels of Powder we have borrowed of him; and if there be any Biſket, Cheeſe or any other victuals to be ſpared to ſend us ſome good proportion thereof. So being at preſent in great haſte, and perplexity, with our ſervice preſented to your honour, we remaine

London Derry the 29. of Apill, 1642.

Your humble ſervants

Robert Thornton, *Major.*

Henry Aſburne, *Ian. Phan.*

The Earle of *Antrims* Letter to Generall Major *MONROE*.

Noble Colonell,

I Was glad when I heard you were to be employed in this Kingdom, but now more pleased to heare that you and others of your name are safely arrived. I hope you beleeve I have not beene ignorant of the relation that has bin betweene your Family and mine, and still continued by those of my name in *Scotland*, especially by Sir *Donald*, I shall be very ready to keepe the same correspondency, if I had the opportunity. And now having the occasion by your journey into *Ireland*, I shall be as willing to give you a beliefe of it as any other friend whatsoever. And I am very confident to receive a return from you accordingly.

I cannot so easily expresse any particulars, as I should be contens to doe by word of mouth; and if you please to doe me the favour to meet me at *Glenarme*, and to signifie to me the time, I shall take it as a great argument of your respects and friendship to me; and you may be there as much Master of the place as my selfe. I shall not go attended in the posture of a Souldier, but in my accustomed manner, that the lookers on may take notice of our familiar meeting and respect to each other. And I hope we shall agree in the maine point for his Majesties service and the quieting of my Countrey; and I shall strive to relieve *Coleraine* with victuals very shortly.

I am sorry that in my absence my people were so unfortunate as to doe any hostile act, though in their owne defence, being compelled to it for safety of their lives, which they say they can make appeare in a convenient time: and the relation of the manner of the one and the other, I must refer to our meeting, and then I shall be better able to tell your honour how much I am

Your affectionate friend and humble servant,

Dunluce *the last of* Apil, 1642.

ANTRIM.

FINIS.

The Duke of Marlb'r's Letter to General Major MONROE.

My Lord, I Heard you were to be employed in this Kingdom, and was not a little pleased to hear that you and others of your name were like to be in it. I hope you believe I have not been ignorant of the readiness you have shewn to serve your Family and mine, and shall continue to do it on all occasions. I have also been very ready to accept the first occasion offer'd, if I had the opportunity. And now having the occasion by your journey into Ireland, I shall be willing to give you a belief of it at any other time you please. And I am very confident to receive a return from you accordingly.

I cannot in civility expect any particular [illegible] I should be content to [illegible] and I [illegible] do me the favour to [illegible] my [illegible] Master at [illegible] place as my [illegible]. I shall not propose to you the [illegible] of a Soldier, but in my acquaintance I am not [illegible] on my side prefer me to our Sovereign Lady the Queen for [illegible] and I shall agree with you for the [illegible] Majesty's service and the quiet of my Country; and I shall [illegible] to keep [illegible] with you very well.

I am sorry that in my absence my people were so unfortunate as [illegible] to displease you, though there was [illegible] for [illegible] which they [illegible] in a convenient time; and the relation of one and the other I must refer to our meeting, and then I shall be better able to tell your Honour how much I am

Your affectionate friend and humble Servant,

Dunkirk the [illegible] of April 1694.

MARLBOROUGH.

Iune the second 1642. 13

A

New Remonstrance of IRELAND:

OR,

A CONTINVED DIURNALL

Of the most remarkeable passages from the fifth of *May* to this present.

By C. I. an eye-witnesse of them.

LONDON.
Printed by *A. N.* for *Ed. Blackmore*, at the signe of the Angell in *Pauls* Church-yard.
1642.

June the Second 1642.

A

New Remonstrance of

IRELAND.

OR,

A CONTINVED

DIURNALL

Of the most remarkeable passages
from the 8th of May to
this present.

By Clarke-writer of them.

LONDON,
Printed by A.N. for Ed. Blackmore, at the Signe of the
Angell in Pauls Church-yard.
1642.

May 5.

We had certaine newes of the taking the *Nenny* by the Lord *Gormy* on the one side, and Sir *Henry Tichborne* where were released some Prisoners of note, as Sir *Arthur Trevor*, Sir *Charles Poynes*, and divers other Prisoners since the beginning of this rebellion, not many Rebels were killed for they fled.

Also, that *Carlingford* was taken from the Rebels by one of our Ships comming in with French Colours: the Enemy thinking it to bee some Ship of *Munster*, for the chiefest came aboord and so were kept, and the ship entred further and tooke the Towne.

We had news that young Sir *Charles Coote* had done good service about *James* towne in killing some Rebels, and releeving some Castles.

That day the Lord *Leyer* came with his Troope from him to hasten more relieve to Sir *Charles Coot* that was there.

The sixth day Colonell *Croford* went out some twelve miles with 300 foot toward a place called *Kilcocke* to forrage.

The 7. day, 1200 men were sent to *Trim* to Sir *Charles*, but many of them threw downe their Armes, and refused and mutined for want of pay, and when one was taken out to be hanged for example, the rest rescued him, and with much adoe this Mutiny was alayed, and they went, but wee are in much feare of such a rising, here being no money to pay them.

Newes also that the Lord *Mongarret* had gathered his forces to the number of 4000, and was marching againe to the *Naas*, where we have a garrison, two Troopes were sent to strengthen the Garrison.

8. Day Colonell *Craford* returned home, having falne upon the enemie the day before at *Kilsarke*, and killed some 50, the reſt runne away, and he brought away from them 300 Cowes, and 600 sheep, a great ſervice as things goe now.

The ninth day was moſt unhappy newes to us, for newes came that Sir *Charles Coot* being at *Trim*, ſome, or all the Lords of the *Pale* had on the Sunday (before thoſe forces of ours were come to Sir *Charles*) gathered a multitude of 3000. or more, intending to take *Trim* from Sir *Charles*, who was at that time but weake, having but 1200. horſe, and 300 foot; in the morning they ſet on the Towne, and Sir *Charles* ruſhed out againſt them, becauſe his men were not ſo quicke in making them ready, Sir *Charles* entred the thickeſt of them with but 17 Horſe and himſelfe, and routed the whole body of the enemies Army, a wonder; and the reſt came in, and they fell to execution, and the enemy to running. Some 200 of the enemies were killed, but moſt unhappily was Sir *Charles Coot* ſhot and killed by one of our men, whether wilfully by ſome Papiſt or otherwiſe, it is not knowne, but the glory of our battell is gone, every one is beclouded: the moſt unhappie day ever befell the Proteſtants: and ſuch joy to Papiſts that no other thing was deſired of them more then this, whoſe name was their terrour: for hee with 100 men could doe more againſt them then others with a 1000. often have the enemys confeſt they could not hold up their heads to fight againſt him; who know not what we have loſt in him, a *Caeſar* for his valour, and a *Cato* for honeſty to his Countrey, a father to us all; that ſought not ſo much as for plunder, for his Countreys good, a man ſo well read in the nature and courſe of the Iriſh men and Countrey none like him left us, every day bemoaning him, and the enemy rejoycing; Never to much can bee ſaid of him, ſuch wonders he hath done ſince theſe times, for under God he hath beene the inſtrument of our delivery.

10. Day a Garriſon departed to *Butſky* of 50. to keepe a Caſtle there; Alſo, a Lieutenant was ſhot to death with us for killing a woman.

Alſo, newes that Sir *William Coules* had done very good ſervice, Who in the middle of the Enemy hath held out ſince the firſt of this, and now had burnt all 13 miles about him in the North; Alſo, that the Scots were gone to releeve *Coutreain* and *Derry* beſieged by the enemie.

This

This 11. day we had newes that the Lord *Moygarret* advanced neere the *Naas* being incouraged by Sir *Charles* his death, but little feare they him there. Also, certaine newes that the Earle of *Fingall* was killed by Sir *Charles*, the day before his death, and *Germiſton* a Lord wounded.

Alſo, newes that the forenamed 1200 were got well into *Trim*, and had made out againſt the enemie ſix miles beyond and killed many.

May 12. 1642.

This day we had newes from the North, that the Scots beat themſelves for to releeve *Coulerain* beſieged by the Rebels, and that Sir Sir *Phelim O Neall* had burnt *Armagh* to the ground Church and all, alſo *Charlemont* and *Caſtle Blaney*, and fled to the woods and bogges for feare of the Engliſh and Scots forces in the North.

From *Trim* we heard that Colonell *Gibſon*, in Sir *Simon Harcourts* time had broke upon the enemy, killed 200. and more, chaſed them to a bay foure miles, they run and burnt the *Neven* for feare, and other places ſome 7 miles from *Trim*, and departed further into the North. Wee loſt none of note.

13. Newes from the *Naas*, that the Rebels had raiſed many alarms and fired ſome houſes by ſtealth, but were ſtill beat and run, and every day our men killed for five dayes more or leſſe of them with no loſſe, Captaine *Rochford* guiding all.

14 Day, Sir *Charles Coote* was buried with much lamentation to Proteſtants, and much joy to Papiſts.

Alſo 2 Troops went to the *Naas*.

That day one Captaine *Dowdall* a Scot, being in Garriſon at a plaine called *Kilſhalin*, and as ſome ſay invited out to dinner to a protected Papiſts houſe, was betrayed and killed, he and his Lieutenant and a Miniſter ſuch miſchiefe we have daily by the protection of Papiſts.

That day Colonell *Crauford* went out to recover his body, and did ſo, and killed of all ſorts in revenge neere 2 100. even protected and all, and juſtly.

15. Day being Sunday, every Pulpit was filled with funerall Sermons and Prayers, For Sir *Charles* was buried the day before, for he is not to us like other dead men, which dying are forgot, but ſtill more daily remembred, and juſtly our want of him calls for it.

16. Day we heard ſome ſcattering newes of a Battell betweene the

the Scots and Irish in the North at *Carlingford*, but as yet it remains uncertaine how true.

That day some few Horse went out for us to plunder, and were some of them lost, about two and not more.

About 12. a clocke that night on the North part of the Citty being on the other side of the River, was an alarm by some of the enemies horsemen, some say more then a 100. which charged our Sentinell, but our men charging them againe with a few foot they set spurs and run without losse on any side, but some cattell they drove away from a place called *Tulow*, some two miles from us, that were the Bishop of *Dublins*.

17. Day were a 100. Horse sent under the command of Captaine *Armstrong* to seeke after the lore night troublers.

Also a Troope went to *Tredagh* and another Convoy to the *Naas* to fetch some Wagons home, and brought them safe and left all quiet in the *Naas*, but brought home Captaine *Rochford* sicke, a Captaine of Sir *Charles Cootes* Regiment, a valiant man, I thinke Sir *Charles* his death troubleth the hearts of his Regiment much with sorrow.

Also, that day Captaine *String* was buried.

Newes also came, that in most part of the County of *Carnavagh* the Rebels have burnt, as they do every where, an evill prognostick to their businesse neere Winter, but all must be burnt, that is not by one side or other.

Also, we had newes that the Lord *Mongarret* had besieged *Carlo* Castle with 3000. men, in which, and in the Church adioyning are a great number of distressed English Families of that County, which if the Castle be taken, will be all put to the sword, and hard it is to relieve it, Sir *Charles* being the only man of such purchase, that knew all passages, and very hardly can they hold out, much feare is of it. This day some 300. foot landed from *England*.

18. Day newes came from the County of *Cavan*, that Sir *Francis Hamilton*, and Sir *James Craige* having kept head all from the beginning, and done good service against the Rebels daily, they hearing that great store of Gentlemen of the sept of Master *Dering* were met at *Cavan*, at a kind of a Session some 7. miles from their two Castles that are neere together, *Francis Hamilton* is called *Killeaby*, Sir *James Craige*, *Crohan*; they both upon this hope made, what strength they could, and came upon this Master *Dering* unexpected,

and

and cut them all off, being the chiefe of that Sept, not left them 40. or more Gentlemen the chiefe of that name, and having so done, they tooke away a great part of their cattell and returned to their Castles; This was good service, which was severely punished by them of that Sept to the State.

19. Day newes from Trim Colonell Gifford who came to Dublin, and brought two prisoners of note, the one Lord of Dunsany and his Sonne, a man of 8 hundred per annum, many Alarmes they have had of late, but the Rebels never stood up it, but fled.

Much discontent is here among the Souldiers for want of pay, and little hopes of living in peace for want of it, for this is due to them then 100000 besides all strange paies one the Citie.

Newes that the President of *Munster* had taken *Kilkenny*, but this remaines somewhat doubtfull, because it is the onely strength the Enemy hath, but it is reported very confidently that the President hath for certaine recovered his health, and done some great thing.

That night we had Horse and Foot went out to a place called *New Castell*, where was intelligence that there were a company of Rebels: but though our men went out very privately, yet they had intelligence from the Citie papists as usually they have, and while our Army went that way, all the cattell on the South side of our Citie were carried away by the Rebels without resistance.

That day the Army returned home againe, and brought home prey of Cattell, and killed as is reported 30. that were scattering, but the maine upon intelligence given were gone.

Also, that day the Rebels attempted to stop the water that belonged to some Mills in the Citie, but it was unstopt againe by us.

20. Day, newes came that the Earle of *Clanrickard* had releeved the Fort of *Galloway* very well, and had blockt up the Towne round.

Also, newes from *Limricke* that one of our Ships had taken a French Ship laden with Armes for the Rebels, and intended to land at the foresaid Port, but was taken by us with much Armes in it.

That day also in the morning Rebels came even into the Suburbs and stole Cattell very desperatly.

21. Day, Sir *Henry Tuchburne*, and Sir *Thomas Lucas* were elected Privie Councellers.

That morning we had an Alarme on the North side of our City, such

such strange boldnesse they have, since we lost him, whose name was their terrour, some Carrell they drove away.

23. Day newes from *Nass*, that great store of Carrell they had taken from the Rebels, and other goods, but being taken from the Souldiers by the Captaine, a mutinie began, and much adoe to stop it, their pillage was faine to be restored.

24 Day was searching for strangers that had lodged themselves in our Citie, such boldnesse they had taken since Sir *Charles* his death, when as before no Papist durst shew himselfe almost. Now begin to creepe into the City, Countrey Papists, besides what are City Papists, to give intelligence, and other mischiefe; indeed things lie strongly still, for want of some such warlike man as he was; This day also landed 400. men from *England*, & a whole Regiment are landed, but no money, which makes our Souldiers mad. Also, a Troope went to *Trim* to day.

FINIS.



A 14

CERTAINE relation of the Earle of Ormonds proceedings in IRELAND,

Shewing what Prisoners he hath taken, and what townes he hath burnt and what store of Pillage he hath sent, and brought home with him.

Also the manner of the Enemies besieging *Londonbridge*, with 12000. men, and how that there were slaine 2000. of them, the rest put to flight by the Earle of *Corks* forces and Sir *Charles Vavasor*.

Being a Letter sent from Sir *Robert Travers* to Sir. *William Dilg*, living in the new Exchange in London

Ordered to be forthwith printed.

London Printed for *John Bladen* 1642.

A

CERTAINE

relation of the Earle of

Ormonds proceedings in

IRELAND,

Shewing what Priſoners he

hath taken, and what townes

he hath burnt and what fore

of Pillage he hath ſent, and brought

home with him.

Alſo the returne of the Enemies be-

fieging Ramelbridge, with their ſlaughter, and

how that there were ſlaine 1000. of them,

the reſt put to flight by the Earle of

Carle Ionnes and Sir Charles

Vavaſor.

Being a Letter ſent from Sir Arthur Terry to Sir William

Tilly, living in the Minories in London.

Ordered to be forthwith printed.

London Printed for Iohn Blading 1642.

A Certaine relation of the Earle of Ormonds victories of late.

worthy sir

I Know you cannot but much desire to here from your friends especially having left them in this miserable distracted Kingdom, where nothing is frequent but tumults and bloudy massacres; yet in the midst of these it hath pleased Almighty God to blesse your friends with health: I know you expect some news from hence, and God be praysed, I never had more cause, nor better newes to certifie you of, which hath conduced to

to the glory of Almighty God, and the comfort of all the poore distressed Protestants, against whom that devouring beast of Rome hath advanced her force.

About the beginning of this moneth *Sulvan Beare*, came from the Westerne parts with twelue thousand men, and came to *Limbaigne*, where Doctor *Roger O Shaigne* dwels and pillaged the towne, and killed a great many of the English barborously, ravishing their Wives and Daughters, taking the prey of all the towne, marched away and came to *Macharta Reh* a great Rebell who had 12000 men, joyned their Forces, marched to *Bandbridge*, and there besieged the towne and us in it, threatning to put us all to the sworde if we did not presently render the towne, so these Rebels and their Forces continued before the towne strictly besieging us, and daily shooting at the towne, the space of four dayes, in which time we had dispatched certaine Messengers to my Lord President of *Munster* to *Corke*, who hearing of our distresse, sent Sir *Charles Vansor*, who came in the night with only 500. men and some other English Commanders, and two peeces of Ordnance, who made an affair upon them before it was light (they not expecting any such thing) which being so suddenly performed, did so distract and amaze the Rebels that they seemed to bee men without life, and we hearing this

Alarme

Alarme in the towne, having 2000 men in readinesse under the command of the Right Honourable the Lords of *Cassilmaine* & *Brasil*, both my Lord of *Cork* sonnes (as having beefore had intelligence of the stratagem) did issue out upon them, and valiently assailed them, who at the comming of the worse Forces, they were absolutely routed, and every man began to provide for his safetie by flight, nor could the threats nor perswasions of their Commanders cause them to stay but they all run away, and left their cheife Commander *O Sullivan Beare*, who was there taken prisoner, yet for all their flight there were at this bickering slaine and wounded on the Rebels part to the number of 2000. men wee loosing but twenty men beside some prisoners that were presently conveyed to *Cork* to my Lord Prefident, who presently caused them all to be hanged. Thus wee dayly see by experience how mightily God fighteth for us, to whom be praise and glory for evermore.

On *Wednesday* morning the 17. of *May* they burnt *Rathmore* and so marched to *Lassingstowne* that day being very foule and unfit for a long march, on that day Leive tenant *Colonell Reade*, and Serjeant Major *Kibon* (Maddocks Sonne) who rendred them selves to the Earle of *Ormond*, as did also Mr. *Patrick Barnewall*, (accompanied by the Earle of *Ormond*) in the condition of prisoners with twelue horse to the Lords

Lords

Lords Justices, who denying their accesse to their presence, commanded their committall to the Castle, where now they are and still remaine.

On that day also Captaine Roger Sir *John Barlasse* and Captaine *Bitn* arived from *Drogheda* by Sea and brought us the glad newes of those which were in *Tredah*, Garrisons beating the Rebells from all their quarters round about *Drogheda*, in so much as the Rebells and with them the Arch-rebell Sir *Phelim Oneall* have bin Constrained shamefull to forsake the seige and run away, leaveing not a man about the Towne of Drogheda, and so the Lords and other Rebells of the pale thus abandoned be the Northren Rebells are forced to forsake their owne habitations, and goe along with the Northren Rebells or hide their heads some where else from their owne houses, of which they have mournfully taken their last leave so as many think never to see them or their owne againe. Sir *Henry Tichborne* hath burnt severall Townes about him for three or foure miles and brought to the Towe in abundant store of Corn possessed himselfe of *Bremly* wherby he is Maister of the harbor, and now open Market is kept again in the Towne, so as we have still more cause to joyne in due thankfullnesse to God for his still continued miraculous deliverances of us.

On

On *Thurſday* the 22. of *May* other twelve horſes were returned back to the Earle of *Ormond* in leiu of the twelue he had ſent the day before to guard the priſoners hither, but thoſe twelue horſe obſerveing ſome more ſtrength in the way ſome ſix miles hence then they could ſafely encounter returned back to *Dublin* again.

Therfore on the next morning being *Friday* at foure of the Clock 60 horſe were ſent in their roomes, the Earle wanted not any ſuch acceſſion of ſtrength, to put to paſſe ſtrongly and unreſiſtably in meſſages betwene the *Lords Juſtices*, and the *Earle* whilſt he was doing the worke of burning that part of the Pale.

On *Sunday* the 25. the *Earle* ſent a guard hither with theſe priſoners following, *Edward Dowdall* of *Munckſowne*, *Lawrance Dowdall* his ſon *Nicholas Dowdall* of *Brownſtowne*, *Gerrold Ailmer* the Lawyer *William Mallone* of *Liſſmulen Stephen Dowdall* of *Claſſlowne*.

On *Tueſday* the 27. and *Wedneſday* much pillage vvas ſent home by the Army vvherby the other ſibe are made to ſee that now they have done pillaging as we begin to pillage them

The *Earle* haveing cauſed divers houſes to be burnt and pillaged and amongeſt the reſt ſome of the *Lords* houſes of the pale, he returned to *Dublin* with the Army haveing left 500 men and a Troupe of horſe, which he left with Sir *Henry Tichburne* at *Dragheda* the better to inable

inable him, to burne spoile wast and destroy all the Rebells in the County of *Louth* and the other parts adioyning to *Dreghda*, which Sir *Robert Trevors* hath already begun to doe and, haveing 200 men which he left at garrison at *Mellifont*, Sir *John Netervill* also rendred himselfe in that Iorney to the Earle of *Ormond*.

Since that time *George Drumgh John Talbot* of *Robertstowne* and Sir *Andrew Aylmer* rendred themselves to the *Lords Iustices*, as also did the *Lord Baron* of *Dunsany* on the 27 of *May*, and that Lord and Sir *John Netervill* and all the rest stand Committed to the Castle as Prisoners.

FINIS



15

Horrible Newes from LANCASHIRE.

Declared in a Letter sent from *Lancaster* by one Mr, *Benjamin Williamson* to Mr. *Adam Andrewes* Merchant and Inhabitant in the Burrough of *Southwarke*,

Wherein is related what Tumultuous Vprores the Papists in those parts have lately made to the terror of the Inhabitants of the said County.

Also a true Relation how the Protestants rose in Armes and forced them to flye.

Likewise a large Manifestation of the great care of the Sheriffe of *Lancaster* to disarme the Papists, and to prevent such Vprores and Tumults.

Together with an Order sent from the House of Commons to the High Sheriffe of *Lancaster*, touching the suppressing of the abovesaid Tumults.

John Browne, Cler. Parl.

LONDON.
Printed for *J. Horton*, 1642. *June* 3.

Horrible Newes from LANCASHIRE.

Declared in a Letter sent from Lancaster by one Mr. Benjamin Williamson to Mr. Adam Anderton Merchant and Inhabitant in the Burrough of Southwarke.

Wherein is related what Tumultuous Uproars the Papists in those parts have lately made to the terror of the Inhabitants of the said County.

Also a true Relation how the Protestants role in Armes and forced them to flye.

Likewise a large Manifestation of the great care of the Sheriffe of Lancaster to disturbe the Papists, and to prevent such Uproars and Tumults.

Together with an Order sent from the House of Commons to the High Sheriffe of Lancaster, touching the suppressing of the aforesaid Tumults.

John Browne, Cler. Parl.

LONDON.
Printed for J. Burton, 1642. June 3.

Horrible Newes from Lancashire.

THe troubles and distractions of this Kingdome are great and manifold, are the plots and designes that the Papists have in agitation, both against the King and Parliament, private intentions and publique actions, private designes and cunning Stratagems have been long hatching, and now they see such distractions and disturbances betwixt the King and Parliament, they Parliaments put that in action, which has so long been concealed, by publishing

A large and apparent testimony of this

this late happened in Lancashire in Lancaster, on the 25. day of May within 7. Miles of Lancaster, upon a great Plaine, there assembled a great number of Papists, to the valley of 3 hundred, with Swords by their sides, waiting as it seemes for some more Company, what their councells or determination, were is not yet knowne.

Onely this I am informed that they affrighted the neighbouring Inhabitants so that they gathered together, and put themselves into a Posture of defence, in the best manner that they could, withall sending with their best speed to the high Sheriffe of the said County to give him information of what they had cause to feare, but the high Sheriffe being rode to Lancaster to cause the Order of the houses of Parliament concerning the suppressing such meetings, to be published, by which meanes they were frustrate of their hopes, nevertheleſſe

leſſe they tooke courage, and with unite conſent marcht out upon them, and by the advice of ſome Gentlemen that were there, ſent Meſſages unto them to demand the cauſe of that aſsembly, it being contrary to the Command of the high Court of Parliament, withall deſiring them to depart by faire meanes, (withall giving them this to boot, that if they would not by faire meanes, they would (knowing it to be for the preſervation of his Maieſty, and the good of the Kingdome, to quell ſuch uproares) force their departure, or make their Place of meeting a *terrene Golgotha*, and bury them and their deſignes together, which blunt embaſſage affrighted ſo the Papiſts, that they began apace to take their iourneys each to his habitation, muttering forth words full of deſpight and anger, as that the time ſhould come ere long that they ſhould repent thoſe words, ſpeaking as if they had ſoune plot in agitaton.

This makes the Protestants to keepe a wary Watch and looke precisely on the Catholiques, the high Sheriffes using all speedy meanes for to disarme them and take away their force, hoping by that meanes to hinder any publique outrages, withall promising to studdy and conforme themselves to the Commands of the high Court of Parliament, they being the cheife preservers of the King and Kingdomes peace, whose Counsells God direct for the best, so that true Religion may be stiled, Unity increased, Papistry and Heresie banisht the confines of the Church, and Gods name praised and glorified both in Church and Common Weale, so shall the Kings Honour increase, so shall the Parliaments Counsell prosper, and the Subiects feare be translated into joy, so shall those distractions cease, and unity triumph in his Majesties Dominions.

Die Sabbathi 28. May, 1642.

WHereas it appeares, that the King, seduced by wicked Councell, intends to make Warre against the Parliament, and under the colour of a Guard to secure his Royall Person, doth command troops of Horse and Foote to assemble at Yorke; All which is against the Lawes of the Kingdome, tending to the dissolution of the Parliament, and destruction of his People. It is therefore Ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, that the Sheriffe of the County of Lancaster, and all other Sheriffs of the Kingdome of England and Dominion of Wales, shall by the power of that County, and of their severall Counties, respectively, suppresse the raising or assembling together of any Souldiers Horse or Foote, by any Warrant, Commission, or Order from his Maiesty without the consent of his Parliament, and that all Persons whatsoever

do

we forbeare to execute any such Commission, or warrant for levying Souldiers or gathering them together without consent of the Parliament. And those who shall execute, or obey any such Commission, or warrant are hereby declared to be disturbers of the peace of the Kingdome. And that his Majesties loving Subjects may the better understand what the Law and their owne duty is in this behalfe, the said Sheriffe of Lancashire, and other Sheriffes of the other Counties of this Kingdome respectively shall cause this present Order forthwith to be published in the severall Markets Townes within their said Counties.

Saturday, 18. May. 1642.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that this shall be forthwith Printed and published.

John Browne, Cler. Parl.

FINIS



16

A True Coppie of a Propheſie which was found in old ancient houſe of one Maſter *Truſwell*, ſometime Recorder of a Towne in *Lincolne-ſhire*.

K.

Which in all mens judgements was not unwritten theſe 300 yeares.

And ſuppoſed to be ſeene ſtill in a writing of Parchment, at *Stow* in the aforeſaid Countie, being the mother Church of *Lincolne* Minſter.

Whereunto is added Mother *Shiptons* Propheſies.



LONDON,
Printed for [illegible]. 16[illegible]2.

A Propheſie of a King that ſhall win the *Holy Croſſe*, propheſied by many, and their names as followeth.



Firſt, Saint Thomas *calleth him a virgin King in brightneſſe like an Angell.*

2 Merlin *calleth him a Bull threefold of nature, that is to ſay, true Inheritour of* England, Ireland, *and* Caſtile.

3 John *the Hermit calleth him the King of Hinds, that is to ſay, the King of many Hoaſts and Kingdomes.*

4 Merlin Sylveſter *calleth him the King of Weapons, that is to ſay, there ſhall be ſo much pride, leatherie, ſin and theft, at his beginning, that he ſhall have much work to correct them.*

5 Albion *the Monk of Almaine calleth him a Lyon of the aire, that ſhall take his journey a-foot to Rome, and ſhall be Emperour, and his name ſhall be* Edward.

6 Alp[illegible] *the Prophet calleth him the Weſterne Beaſt, which diſplayeth the black Bull with the golden hornes, firſt in the Eaſt, and in his dayes ſhall be deſtroyed the falſe Preachers for their unrighteouſneſſe, and he ſhall win a great part of the world, and make a free way to the Holy Land, and his name ſhall be* Edward, *and in his dayes*

dayes many tokens of Antechriſt and other marvels ſhall be ſeene.

7 Mallaycus Abbot of Ireland, calleth him the ſixth of Ireland, which will not be governed by no man, but by God and himſelfe, and in his dayes ſhall Friers and Monkes for their pryde and falſhood ſuffer puniſhment, and he ſhall be called Edward.

8 Sybilla the wiſe, calleth him, The ſecond Lyon of all beaſts, which ſhall win the holy Croſſe, and in his yeares ſhall be deſtroyed Friers and Chanons.

9 David in the Pſalme calleth him an Victorious, which ſhall never turne his face from his enemies, nor of any be betrayed.

10 Bannister of England calleth him, a Beare of a cleane veſſell, which ſhall never be defiled, nor of any be betrayed; in his time much of the Church of England ſhall be punished, for their example given.

11 The Doctor Sainct Iacobus calleth him, the true Dragon, which was chriſtened in no ſinne, and he ſhall tread under his feet the King of pride, and then he ſhall take his way to the holy Land.

12 Macchi calleth him to the mindes of the unſtable Roſe of Arimine, and he ſhall be defended of all Maidens, Widdowes, and Orphans, and he ſhall deſtroy all falſhood, and maintaine all truth.

13 Iohn de Rupiſſa calleth him, the unſtable Roſe of Rome and Arimine; and by the counſell of him, the Pope and all his Colledge will Chriſtendome ſhall be brought to the right faith of Chriſt, ſo that they ſhall give back againe all that they have taken from the Church, and money in their purſes; and he ſhall win the holy Croſſe, and bring it into France, he ſhall make peace throughout the whole world, and ſhall be beloved of the three Kings of Colen; and then ſhall there be a great unity among Chriſtian Princes, and Chriſtian brethren ſhall dwell together.

14 Beda the Prieſt calleth him, a Lyon of a cleane veſſell, which by the hands of him, much of the Church of England ſhall be punished for their evill examples given, and he ſhall be a Protector and defender of the Chriſtian Faith.

A Propheſie of a King that ſhall win the *Holy Croſſe*, propheſied by many, and their names as followeth.



Firſt, Saint Thomas *calleth him a virgin King in brightneſſe like an Angell.*

2 Merlin *calleth him a Bull threefold of nature, that is to ſay, true Inheritour of* England, Ireland, *and* Caſtile.

3 John *the Hermit calleth him the King of Herds, that is to ſay, the King of many Hoaſts and Kingdomes.*

4 Merlin Sylveſter *calleth him the King of Weapones, that is to ſay, there ſhall be ſo much pride, leatherie, ſin and theft, at his beginning, that he ſhall have much work to correct them.*

5 Albion *the Monk of Almaine calleth him a Lyon of the aire, that ſhall take his wings and flye to Rome, and ſhall be Emperour, and his name ſhall be* Edward.

6 Alphon *the Prophet calleth him the Weſterne Beaſt, which diſplayeth the black Bull with the golden hornes, firſt in the Eaſt, and in his dayes ſhall be deſtroyed the falſe Preachers for their unfaith, and he ſhall win a great part of the world, and make a free way to the Holy Land, and his name ſhall be* Edward, *and in his dayes*

dayes many tokens of Antechriſt and other marvels ſhall be ſeene.

7 Mallaycus [illegible] of Ireland, calleth him the ſixth of Ireland, which will not be governed by no man, but by God and himſelfe, and in his dayes ſhall Friers and Monkes for their hypocriſie and falſhood ſuffer puniſhment, and he ſhall be called Edward.

8 Sybilla the wiſe calleth him, The ſecond Eyen of all beaſts, which ſhall win the holy Croſſe, and in his yeares ſhall be deſtroyed Errors and Chartres.

9 David in the Pſalmes calleth him an Unicorne, which ſhall never turne his face from his enemies, nor of any be betrayed.

10 Banniſter of England calleth him, a Beame of a cleane veſſell, which ſhall never be defiled, nor of any betrayed; in his time much of the Church of England ſhall be puniſhed, for their example given.

11 The Doctor Saint Jerome calleth him, the true Dragon, which no thing ſhall eſtrange in no ſuns; and his ſhall tread under his feet the Kings of pride; and then he ſhall take his way to the holy Land.

12 Maconit calleth him in the miniſter of the billable Roſe of Jeruſalem, and he ſhall be defended of all Maidens, widdowes, and Orphans, and he ſhall deſtroy all falſhood, and maintaine all truth.

13 Iohn de Rupiſſa calleth him, the laſt white Roſe of Rome and Arimine; and by the hands of him the Pope and all his College ſhall be diſcipled after the life of Chriſt; ſo that they ſhall goe barefoot and have [illegible] with them ſhall be ſtaffe in their backs, and money in their purſes; and he ſhall win the holy Croſſe, and bring it into France, he ſhall make peace throughout the whole world, and ſhall be [illegible] the three Kings of Colen; and whether it be [illegible] Lye further my Chriſtian brethren I will ſay no more thereof.

14 Sybilla Bede the Prieſt calleth him, a Lyne of a cleane veſſell, which by the hands of him, much of the Church of England ſhall be puniſhed for their examples given, and he ſhall be Protector and defender of all Chriſtendome.

This

The Propheſie followeth.

THe Lilly ſhall remaine in a merry world, and hee ſhall be moved againſt the ſeed of the Lyon, and hee ſhall ſtand on one ſide amongſt thrones of his Kingdome and Countrey: And there ſhall come the Son of man bearing three wild beaſts in his Armes, which Kingdome is the Land of the Moone, which is to be dread thorowout all the world, with a company of people he ſhall paſſe many waters, and hee ſhall come to the Land of the Lyon, looking for help, with the beaſts of his owne Countrey: And in that yeare there ſhall come an Eagle out of the Eaſt, and his wings ſpred with the beames of the ſon of man; and that yeare ſhall be deſtroyed Caſtles upon Thames, and there ſhall be great feare over the whole world; and in a part of the Land there ſhall be great battels amongſt many Kingdomes: That day ſhall be the bloudy field, and the Lilly ſhall loſe his Crowne, and therewith ſhall be crowned the Son of man. And in the fourth yeere, many battels ſhall be for the faith, and moſt of the world ſhall be ſtopen, but the Son of man with the Eagle ſhall be preferred; and there ſhall be univerſall peace over the whole world, then ſhall the Son of man receive a marvellous token, and there ſhall bee great plentie of all manner of fruits, and then ſhall hee goe to the Land of the Croſſe.

The Son of man is the King of England, the Lilly is the French King, the Lyon is Flanders, *alias* Scotland, the Moone is England and Wales, the Son is France, the Eagle is the Emperour; the Seed, *alias* Head of the world is the Pope; the marvellous token is the Holy Croſſe.

And the Coppie of this Propheſie was found in an old antient houſe of one Maſter Trulwell, *Recorder of a certaine Towne, and by all mens judgements was not newritten theſe* 300 *yeares.*

This

This first Prophesie of Mother *Shipton* was in the raigne of *Edward* the fourth.

If Eighteen eight be past, then thou
Thou mayst, till thirtie foure, [illegible]
After the E is dead, a Scot
Shall govern there: and if a plot
Prevent him not, sure then his sway
Continue shall till many a day.
The North shall dye young, and the first
Perhaps shall reigne; but (ah) accurst
Shall be the time, when thou shalt see
To fifteen hundred twentie three;
For then the Eagle shall have help
By craft to catch the Lyon who is,
And hurt him sore, except the same
Be cured by the Maidens name.
In July month of the same yeere
Saturne conjoynes with Jupiter.
Perhaps (alas) Prophets shall arise,
And Mahomet shall have his prize.
And sure such alteration
Shall happen in Religion.
Believe this truly, if then you see
A Spaniard a Protestant to be.

The lines (I confesse impartially) are very mysterious, and withall they are involved in a stupendious obscuritie. They seeme as enigmaticall, as *Sphynxes* hidden Riddle, yet I doubt not, but that your judicious minds will prove as auspitious unto this, as *Oedipus* did to his.

You may enucleate the genuine sense and signification of the words, if you doe but seriously revolve them.

The second Prophesie of Mother Shipton, *found in* Henry the eight his dayes.

WHen shee heard King *Henry* the Eighth should be King, and Cardinall *Wolsey* should be at York, shee said that Cardinall *Wolsey* should never come to York with the King, and the Cardinall hearing being angry, sent the Duke of Suffolk and the Lord *Darcie* to her, who came with their men disguised to the Kings House neere York, where leaving their men, they went to Master *Besley* to York, and desired him to goe with them to Mother *Shiptons* house, where when they came they knocked at the doore, she said, Come in Master *Besley*, and those honourable Lords with you, and Master *Besley* would have put in the Lords before him; but she said, Come in Master *Besley* you know the way, but they doe not. This they thought strange, that shee should know them, and never saw them; then they went into the house, where there was a great fire, and she bade them welcome, calling them all by their names, and sent for some Cakes and Ale, and they drunk and were very merry. Mother

Sir [illegible] the Duke, if you knew what we come to tell you, you would not make us so welcome; and she said, the Messenger should not be hanged: Mother *Shipton*, said the Duke, you said the Cardinall should never see York, yea, said she, I said he should see York, but never come at it; But said the Duke, when he comes to York he shall be buried. We shall see that, said she, and plucking her Handkerchief off her head, she threw it into the fire, and it would not burn; then she took her staffe and threw it into the fire, and it would not burne, then she took it and put it on againe: Now (said she) I might have burned Mother *Shipton* (quoth the Duke) what think you of me? My Love, said she, the time will come you will be as low as I am, and that is a low one indeed. My Lord *Percie* said, What say you of me? My Lord (said she) shooe your horse in the quick, and you shall doe well, but your body shall be buried in York pavement, and your head shall be stolne from thence by Boy, and carried into *Scotland*. Then said the Lord *Darcie*, And what think you of me? She said, you have made a great Gun, shoot it off, for it will doe you no good, you are going to war, you will paine many a man, but you will kill none; so they went away.

Not long after the Cardinall came to *Cawood*, and going to the top of the Tower, hee asked where York was, and how far it was thither, and said, that one had told him he should never see York: Nay, said one, shee said you might see York, but never come at it. He vowed to burne her when he came to York. Then they shewed him York, and told him it was but eight miles thence. He said that he would be soone there: but being sent for by the King, he died in the way to *London*, at *Leicester*, of a Lask. And *Shipton*'s Wife said to Master *Bestley*, yonder is a fine Hall built for the Cardinall in the Minster, of Gold, Pearle, and precious stones, goe and pricke out of the Pillars to King *Henry*, and he did so.

Master *Bystey*, seeing these things fall out as shee had foretold, desired her to tell him some more of her Prophesies. Master said shee, before that *Ouse* Bridge and Trinitie Church meet, they shall build on the day, and it shall fall in the night, untill they get the highest stone in Trinitie Church, to be the lowest stone of *Ouse* Bridge; then the day will come when the North shall rue it worse then ever, but the South shall rue it for evermore. When Hares kindle on cold hearth stones, and Lads shall marry Ladies, and bring them home, then shall you have a yeare of pining hunger, and

and then a dearth without Corne. A woful day shall be seene in England, a King and Queene, the first comming of the King of Scots shall be at Holgate Towne; but hee shall not come thorow the Bar, and when the King of the North shall be at London Bridge, his Taile shall bee at Bamborough. After this shall waters come over *Ouse* Bridge, and a Windmill shall be set on a Towre, and an Elm-tree shall tye at every mans doore, at that time women shall weare great Hats and great Bands, and when there is a Lord Mayor at York let him beware of a stab. When two Knights shall fall out in the Castle yard, they shall never be kindly till the liver after. When all Christendome hath borne crops of Corne, seven yeares after you shall be in unrest, there shall be two Judges goe in and out at Mulgate Bar.

Thou warre shall begin in the Spring,
Much woe to England it shall bring.
Then shall the Ladies goe all gay,
That ever we lived to see this day.

Then best for them that have the least, and worst for them that have the most, you shall not know of the War over night, yet you shall have it in the morning, and when it comes it shall last three yeares, betweene *Calais* and *Aire* shall be great warfare, when all the world is at a losse, it shall be called Christs croft, when the battell begins, it shall bee where Crook-back *Richard* made his fray, they shall say, To warfare for your King for halfe a Crowne a day, but (sir not I) will say) to warfare for your King, on paine of hanging, but sir no, for hee that goes to complaine, shall not come back againe. The time will come when England shall tremble and quake for feare of a dead man that shall be heard to speake, then will the Dragon give the Bull a great snap, and when the one is downe they will goe to London Towne; Then there will bee a great battell betweene England and Scotland, and they will be pacified for a time, and when they come to Braunmore, they fight and are againe pacified for a time: then there will be a great battell between England and Scotland at Stokemore: Then will Ravens sit on the Crotle, and drink as much blood of Nobles, as of the Commons, then woe is me, for London shall bee destroyed for ever after: Then there will come a woman with one eye, and she shall tread in many mens blood to the knee, and a man leaning on a staffe by her, and she shall say to him, What art thou? and he shall say, I am the King of Scots, and shee shall say, Get with me to my house, for there are three Knights; and he will goe with her, and stay there three dayes and three nights; then will England bee

lost,

loſt, and they will cry twice a day, England is loſt: Then there will be three Knights in *Petergate* in York, and the one ſhall not know of the other: There ſhall be a Child borne in Pomfret with three thumbs, and thoſe three Knights will give him three horſes to hold, while they win England, and all noble bloud ſhall be gone but one, and they ſhall carry him to Sheriffe *Huttons* Caſtle ſix miles from York, and hee ſhall dye there, and they ſhall chuſe there an Earle in the field, and hanging their horſes on a thorne, and rue the time that ever they were borne, to ſee ſo much bloud ſhed. Then they will come to York to beſiege it, and they ſhall keep them out three dayes and three nights, and a penny Loafe ſhall be within the Bar at halfe a Crowne, and without the Bar at a penny: And they will ſweare, if they will not yeeld, to blow up the Towne walls. Then they will let them in, and they will hang up the Mayer, Sheriffe and Aldermen, and they will goe into Crouch Church, there will three Knights goe in, and but one come out againe, and hee will cauſe Proclamation to be made, that any man may take Houſe, Tower, or Bower for twentie one yeares, and whilſt the world endureth, there ſhall never be warfare againe, nor any more Kings or Queenes, but the Kingdome ſhall be governed by three Lords, and then ſhall York be London. And after this ſhall be a white Harveſt of Corne gotten in by women. Then ſhall be in the North, that one woman ſhall ſay unto another, Mother I have ſeene a man to day, and for one man there ſhall be a thouſand women, there ſhall be a man ſitting upon Saint *Iames* Church hill weeping his fill: And after that a ſhip come ſailing up the *Thames* till it come againſt London, and the Maſter of the ſhip ſhall weep, and the Mariners ſhall aſk him why he weepeth, being he hath made ſo good a voyage: and he ſhall ſay, Ah what a goodly Citie this was, none in the world comparable to it, and now there is ſcarce left any houſe that can let us have drink for our money.

Vnhappie he that lives to ſee theſe dayes,
But happie are the dead, Shiptons *wife ſayes.*

In th'worlds old age, this woman did foretell
Strange things ſhould hap, whereof our times have felt.

FINIS.



17

A DECLARTION OF THE HEADS OF SEVERALL LETTERS,

SENT FROM THE COMMITTEE at YORK, UNTO THE HOVSE OF

PARLIAMENT:

RELATING

All the Chiefe Paſſages and Proceedings at YORK and HULL, the laſt WEEKE.

Likewiſe, a Letter from Sir *John Hotham* to the Houſe of Commons, concerning a dangerous Plot againſt the Town of Hull, and how it was diſcovered.

With the Names of thoſe Lords that came to the King from the Parliament.

Alſo his Majeſties Proclamation to the Sheriffes of ſeverall Counties.

London, Printed for *I. T.* June 3. 1642.

A

DECLARATION

OF THE

HEADS

OR SEVERAL

LETTERS

SENT FROM THE

COMMITTEE at YORK,

UNTO THE HOUSE OF

PARLIAMENT:

RELATING

All the Chiefe Pafſages and Proce-

dings at YORK and HULL,

the laſt WEEKE.

Likewiſe, a Letter from Sir John Hotham to

the Lords and Commons, concerning a diſpo-

ſition Plot againſt the Town of Hull,

and how it was diſcovered.

With the Names of thoſe Lords that came to

the King from the Parliament.

Alſo his Majeſties Proclamation to the Sheriffes

of ſeverall Counties.

London, Printed for I. T. June 5. 1642.

A Letter sent from the Committees at York, to the House of Parliament, dated the 25 of May, 1642.

WHerein they declared, That betweene one or two hundred Horse appeared before his Majesty on Thursday last, being the 19 of *May*; out of which he chose fifty to attend his Person, and dismissed the rest. There also appeared six hundred Foot, but they were all of Sir *Robert Swirkelands* Regiment; they likewise were dismissed.

In the *Letter* sent from the Committee, there was a Paper from the High Sheriffe of Yorke, wherein he shewed, That he had received a Warrant and Charge from His Majesty, to forbeare the putting in Execution the Order of Parliament concerning the *Militia*; and that he returned this answer, That to the best that possibly he could, he would apply himselfe to do faithfull service, according to his Oath, both to King and Parliament.

The King hath appointed, That on Fryday next, Horse and Foot appeare again before Him.

Captain *Dunkin*, was reported in the House to be at York, a very stirring Man in all the matters of the King, concerning the Parliament.

May the 26. a Report was made to the House, That the Lord Keeper was suddenly gone away from *London*, and that it was thought to York to the King, and that he carried the broad Seale with him. There-

upon, the House appointed Messengers to go in Post after him, and if they could overtake him, to bring him back again.

There was also another report made from Sir *John Hotham*, that the Ships wherein the Ordinance and Ammunition that was brought out of the Tower of *London* to *Hull*, was Shipped; were under saile and gone out of the River; withall, that Sir *John Hotham* desired that more Committees might be sent to *Hull*, because those that were there last being gone, the whole burthen lay upon him only and his Sonne? which was too heavy for them to beare. That also he desired 6. Canoneers, & one Engineere to be sent that if so be the Castle should be besieged; they might have some that had skill to use the Ordinance that are there, that they might the better defend the place; also he desired Money to pay the Souldiers that were there, and that allowance might be given for keeping Horses to send out for Scouts from time to time; and in particular he desired Sir *John Meldrum* by name to be sent thither as a Committee.

May the 26. a Letter came from *York*, dated the 24. of *May*, which did signifie that the meeting of that County appointed by his Majestie, is put off till the third of *June*, and the Messenger who brought the letter from the Committees who came from *York* hither in 24. houres, relates a dangerous Plot against *Hull*, which was this: one that got into the Towne having put himselfe into the Habit of a Souldier, did solicite divers Souldiers to stand for the King, and promised them, that they should have such and such rewards: and in particular he signified, that

on the 27 of *May*, two Lords would be at the back-side of the Towne with some Souldiers, ready to enter at a Postern gate, if it might be opened unto them: he prevailed with many, but before the time came, the Plot was discovered, and so disappointed.

The same Messenger declared, That he met the Lord Keeper at York on *Tuesday* night, and that sundry other Lords were come to the King; as namely, the Earle of Salisbury, the Earle of Northampton, the Earle of Southampton, the Earle of Davonshire, the Lord of Dover, the Lord Coventry, the Lord Capell, and others.

There was a Relation made to the House, that Sir *Thomas Littleton*, had sent three pieces of Ordinance to his House; which passing by Alisbury at the time of the Fast, were notwithstanding there staied by the Constable, and the Carr that brought them sent away, the Ordinance being there detained. And an Order was made, to prevent Ammunition from going to York.

Another Letter from Sir *John Hotham* was read, which punctually declared the Plot against Hull, which was thus, one *Becket*, whose Daughter was married to *Foots* a Souldier, sent for the said *Foots* his Sonne in Law, and offered him a very large reward, if so be he would betray Hull: *Foots* discovered the matter to Sir *John Hotham*, who advised him to hearken unto *Becket*, and so he did, accepting the conditions; but propounding means for the performance thereof, he giving him satisfaction thereabouts; *Foots* willed him, to declare what it was that he expected from him? *Becket* answered, to let in some Lords

with

with their Troops to a back Here, which particular project *Foots* Related to Sir *John Hotham*.

Sir *John Hotham* wrote to His Majesty a Letter, wherein he gave him notice of the severall particulars, and that it was discovered, and humbly intreated His Majesty, that care might be taken thereabouts, least dammage and dishonour might accrue to His Majesty.

The Letter which *Beckett* sent to *Foots* is sent to the Parliament, who have sent for the said *Beckett* a Delinquent.

A Letter from the Major of *Beverly* to Sir *John Hotham* was read, which certifieth the care and diligence of the Major in maintaining a Watch, and thereby they observed sundry comeing in at unseasonable houres, and amongst others some Recusants.

Sir *William Strickland*, is one of the new Committees appointed to goe to *Hull*, and Instructions for the Committees were sent with him. A Letter was sent to the Speaker from Sir *Francis Worthley* and others, which the Speaker makeing knowne to the House, and asking whether he should reade it, it was refused by the whole House to be read, because they were Delinquents. Committees also were sent to *Lincolnshire* with Instructions to looke well to that County.

An information was brought to the House of Commons of 2. Cart-loads of great Saddles that were carried to the Water-side to be Shipped for *Yorke*.

A PROCLAMATION BY THE KING.

OVr will and pleasure is, That the Ministers, Freeholders, Farmers, and substantiall Copy-holders of this our county of York, doe Assemble and meete together at Heworth Moor, neer Our City of York, upon Friday in Whitson week according to former summons by nine of the clock in the Morning. For that we are informed there are divers Fayrs to be keep in this Our County the day following, at which time many of them may have necessary occasions to be absent: and therefore, out of Our tenderness and care of Our good Subjects,

We

We have thought fit to give this early notice, to the end the said Inhabitants may be put to as little prejudice as may be. And this Our pleasure We require to be forthwith Printed, And Copies thereof to be speedily published and dispersed by the SHERIFF of this County. For which this shall be sufficient Warrant.

Given at Our Court at YORK.

FINIS.

[illegible]

18

A ZEALOVS

SERMON,

Preached at

AMSTERDAM,

By a Jew,

Whose Name is NOT-RVB,

It being a Hebrew Word, yet must read his Name backward.

Caueros Imitare Legendo:

Text, Hee that hath Eares to heare, let him heare.

By Iohn Austin.

Printed at *Amsterdam*. Anno Dom. 1642.

A SERMON,

Preached at

AMSTERDAM,

By one

Whose Name is NOT-RYB,

In being a Hebrew Word, which in English is
Name backward.

Concord. Printed Dogwise.

1642. Hic qui habet Aurem Audiendi Audeat, let him hear.

By John Aulin.

Printed at Amsterdam. Anno Dom. 1642.

ZEALOVS SERMON

PREAEHED AT AMSTERdam bya Ieu whose name is Nerah.

Text, *He that hath eares to heare let him heare.*

DEarly beloved not to make any long preamble, or to vse many circumlocutions but to fall aboard with my text, thes words are not litterally to be vnderstood but typically for this is a propheriqus saying of our Mr. that their shall be many in the latter dayes that shall have no eares but loose them for the testimony of a good conscience, and for the Gospels sake, of which sort I and my other brethren which suffered with me are three, distempred and dismembred members. Yet beloved sister mistake me not I doe not mean dismembred in my principall member, the virge of generation, no this might well have gotten a loathing in you toward me, but is the losse of the tips of my eares.

There are many have eares to heare beastly and prophaine tailes, songs, and ballads with a great deale of contentation, and think not this time long or ill spent, but they have no eares to heare of piety and godlinesse, they thinke an houre a day, and a day 7 yeares, yea they lock vp the doores of their eares, you may see their long locke hang over them, they have no eares to heare of the foure Cardinall virtues.

And

And here I cry the Lord heartie mercy, and it shall have made my eares to tingle (if I had them) that I should so farre over-shoot my self, to approve vertues to be Cardinalls, when I will by no meanes allow men to be Bishops, as Fortitude, Temperance, &c. And heere again I cry the Lord heartie mercy, that I should once name or mention that brand of the Beast on the neere Buttock, that &c. which wee so solemnly condemned, and damned with their new Synodoklal Canons by the Common hang-man; but here wee see, though the spirit is willing, the flesh is weake.

Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare, is meant by the eares of the new man, for there are many walke altogether after the flesh, the new man is hardly yet in the Embrio, it hath neither forme nor eares, to these as yet it is not given to heare or understand the hid mysteries, &c. and here also Idolatry is utterly abolished; Those must be prayed unto, that have eares to heare our prayers, but Idolls have no eares to heare, *ergo* they must not be prayed unto, the Minor is proved by another infallible and undeniable text, they have eares, and heare not, eyes and see not, and these Glosses I take to be the true and genuine sence of the text.

1 *Vse*. From whence I may raise many uses of Comfort and Consolation, of Comfort, Dearly beloved, is this, I take and reape a great deale of Contentation, that when I preach, you (I say) dearly beloved Brethren and Sisters will come 5. or 10. miles to lend me your eares, thus as the lopping off the top of a tree, the cutting off of one head begets many, even so, not only the

the Saints themselves, but their very limbes also doe increase by losse.

3 *Vse.* Of Comfort, dearly beloved brethren and sisters, that I reape from hence, is this, That although I have lost my eares, yet through your bountifull liberality, as pledges of your most affectionate love towards me, I have their weight in gold, yea doubled and trebled, that if my adversaries knew all, they would loose their's for halfe the moneys, this then in the second place must needs be a great reioycing to my heart to have my eares tipped with gold, and both my pockets lined with the same.

3 *Vse.* Of Comfort that I raise is this, from the mildnesse of my censure and punishment, for these wolves in Sheeps clouthing, these fat bulls of *Basan*, might as well have plucked out my tongue by the roots, as to have cropped my eares for when the staffe was in their owne hand, they wanted not ability to doe it, but my God would not suffer it, but mollified the hearts of the Lions, that they should not thereby stop my mouth for ever, and to have made me, as I often called them, a dumb dogge.

4 *Vse.* Of comfort, dearely beloved, that I make, is this, from the not making away, or burying of my eares (and indeed I had intreted them, but that the wicked should not thinke I did mourne and make a funerall for the losse of my eares) and therefore I say, I have preserved them, and have made open reioycing for the losse thereof, and since God hath endowed them with great vertue, that I have miraculously done many

cures

cures with them, specially they are preserued and seasoned with the soueraigne balsome (being imbalmed) for sure then and to tell you the truth truely I am a Iew, a very Sabaterian so that they are perfect Iewes eares and heart in I may glory with the best of the Catholique Reliques.

5. *Vse.* Of comfort deerly beloued brethren and fellers, I reaped from the effusion of my blood on the pillory, that you would not suffer a drop to fall on the ground, but licked it vp with your hand-kerchifs and doe keep it in greater esteeme then Iewels or Diamonds, and I am perswaded that you may find accult vertues even in that blood also if you would make experiments hence I say I haue taken great ioy, that you keep and haue it in so high honour, yet I must needs confesse euer and anon I receiue a check from my conscience that I should so much imeigh against popish Reliques, and yet so contrarily suffer my owne to be kept, here we see how the best of the brethren play ship wrack of saluation on the rocks of vaine glory.

6. *Vse.* Of Comfort, deerly beloued brethren is this, do you remember the humble humble humble Bee (I know you doe) that gaue me a visitation on the pillory, and when the *scoffing Iewes* and *Ismalites* spit their poyson in mocks & scoffs to season their wormwood weed, the sweet hony lin my mouth, and her Bom Bom a little bow bell, yet big enough to ring the passing peale for the little ips of my prick eares, thus you see to our further comfort when men are silent God makes beasts to celebrate the funerall obsequies

of

of his Saints or the losse of any member of them.

5. Vse. Of Comfort that I reaped is this, when I returned from banishment to make amends for my disgracefull departure from this metropolitan City, thousands of you came forth to mete me with rosemary and ribonds in your hats to bring me in with all lollity to my long sequestred and widdowed wife, and gave vs a large offering of three thousand pound as if our nuptuall day were againe to be solemnized neither should I have bin against it to have bin married againe to leave out those superstitions and Idolatrous ceremonies especially these two with this ring I thee wed, and with my body I thee worship. although I love my wife well yet I would be loath to make a God of her, but our alas this our glorious and triumphant returne was much ecclipsed the other day by those Irish Rebels that had 2000 for our one, and thouh they did not goe and ride forth with rosemary in their hats, yet by reason of their forwardnes of the spring, thousands ushered them in with palmes in their hands this I say beloved a great damp to our glory that we should be brought in like men, and such number their Rebels.

Now a word or two of one or two obserue:

1 ob. The losse dearly beloved of our eares is a Infallable symptomy of a true child of God, and I should not be sorry, yea I could heartily wish that every sheep of this fold had thi eare marke, and then the wicked mouths were stop'd to call vs prick-eares.

1 ob.

2. *Object.* This is the shortest and sweetest Sermon that ever I made, but the time was gone when I began, and Mr. Gaudy-dinner in a great fume, that I cannot proceed no application, reason and motives to stir me you up not to be backward to lose for ease for the holy Cause, but if you can relish this, I will proceed with the rest, and for this time, to wind up all in two lines,

Thus, thus you see, for all the wicked fears,
Man may, and no, heare that hath, and hath no ears.

FINIS.

19

The Humble

PETITION
AND
ADVICE
OF

K. England
Lo. & Comons

Both Houſes of PARLIAMENT,

With, XIX
PROPOSITIONS,
And the
CONCLVSION.
Sent unto his MAIESTIE,
the ſecond of *June*, 1642.

H. Elſinge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

Printed for *I. Hunſcott*, and *I. Wright*.
1642.

PETITION
ADVICE
PROPOSITIONS,
CONCLUSION.

The Humble Petition and Advice of Both Houſes of Parliament to the King.

YOur Majeſties moſt humble and faithfull ſubiects, the Lords and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, having nothing in their thoughts or deſires more precious and of higher eſteeme (next to the Honour and immediate ſervice of Almighty God) then the iuſt and faithfull performance of their duty to your Maieſty and this Kingdome, and being very ſenſible of the great diſtractions and diſtempers, and of the imminent dangers and calamities, which thoſe diſtractions and diſtempers are like to bring upon your Maieſty and your Subiects, all which have proceeded from the ſubtile inſinuations, miſchievous practices, and evill counſels of men diſaffected to Gods true Religion, your Maieſties Honour and ſafety, and the publique peace and proſperity of your People, After a ſerious obſervation of the cauſes of thoſe miſchiefes, doe in all humility and ſincerity preſent unto your Maieſty their moſt dutifull petition, and advice, that out of your Princely Wiſedome, for the eſtabliſhing your owne Honour and ſafety, and gracious tenderneſſe of the welfare and ſecurity of your Subiects, and Dominions, you will be pleaſed to grant, and accept theſe their humble deſires, and propoſitions, as the moſt neceſſary effectuall meanes, through Gods bleſſing, of removing thoſe Jealouſies and differences which have unhappily fallen betwixt you and your people, and procuring both your Maieſty and them, a conſtant courſe of their peace and happineſſe.

Propoſitions ſent to his Majeſty.

1. THat the Lords and others of your Majeſties Councell, and ſuch great Officers and Miniſters of State, either at home or beyond the Seas, may be put from your Privy Councell, and from thoſe Offices and imployments, excepting ſuch as ſhall be approved of by both Houſes of Parliament; and that the perſons put into the places and imployments of thoſe that are removed, may be approved of by both Houſes of Parliament, and that al Privy Counſellours ſhall take an oath for the due execution of their places, in ſuch form as ſhall be agreed upon by both Houſes of Parliament.

2. That the great Affaires of the Kingdome, may not be concluded or tranſacted by the advice of private men, or by any unknown or unſworn Counſellours, but that ſuch matters as concerne the publike, and are proper for the High Court of Parliament, which is your Majeſties great and Supreame Councell, may be debated, reſolved, and tranſacted, onely in Parliament, and not elſewhere. And ſuch as ſhall preſume to doe any thing to the contrary, ſhall be reſerved to the Cenſure and judgement of Parliament; and ſuch other matters of State as are proper for your Majeſties Privy Councell, ſhall be debated, and concluded, by ſuch of the Nobility and others, as ſhall from time to time be choſen for that place, by approbation of both Houſes of Parliament, and that no publike Act concerning the Affaires of the Kingdom, which are proper for your Privy Councell, may be eſteemed of any validity as proceeding from the Royall Authority unleſſe it be done by the advice and conſent of the Major part of the Councell atteſted under their hands, and that your Councell may be limited to a certaine number not exceeding twenty five, nor under fifteene, and if any Counſellors place happen to be voyd in the intervals of Parliament, it ſhall not be ſupplyed without the aſſent of the major part of the Councell, which choyſe ſhall be confirmed at the next ſitting of the Parliament, or elſe to be voyd.

3. That the Lord High Steward of *England*, Lord High Conſtable, Lord Chancellor or Lord Keeper of the great Seale, Lord Treaſurer, Lord Privy Seale, Earle Marſhall, Lord Admirall, Warden of the Cinque Ports, Chiefe Governour of *Ireland*, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Maſter of the Wards, Secretaries of the

State,

State, two Chiefe Juſtices, and Chiefe Baron, may alwayes be choſen with the approbation of both Houſes of Parliament, and in the intervals of Parliament by the aſſent of the major part of the Councell, in ſuch manner as is before expreſt in the choyce of Counſellors.

4. That he, or they, unto whom the Government, & Education of the Kings Children, ſhall be committed, ſhall be approved of by both Houſes of Parliament, and in the Intervalls of Parliaments, by the Aſſent of the Major part of the Councell, in ſuch manner as is before expreſt in the choice of Counſellours; And that all ſuch Servants, as are now about them, againſt whom both Houſes ſhall have any juſt exceptions, ſhall be removed.

5. That no marriage ſhall be concluded or treated for any of the Kings Children, with any forraigne Prince, or other perſon whatſoever, abroad or at home, without the conſent of Parliament, under the penalty of a præmunire unto ſuch as ſhall ſo conclude, or treat any marriage, as aforeſaid; and that the ſaid penalty ſhall not be pardoned, or diſpenced with, but by the conſent of both Houſes of Parliament.

6. That the Lawes in force againſt Jeſuites, Prieſts, and Popiſh Recuſants, be ſtrictly put in execution, without any Toleration, or Diſpenſation to the contrary; and that ſome more effectuall courſe may be enacted by Authority of Parliament, to diſable them from making any diſturbance in the State, or eluding the Law by truſts or otherwiſe.

7. That the Votes of Popiſh Lords in the Houſe of Peers may be taken away, ſo long as they continue Papiſts, and that your Majeſty will conſent to ſuch a Bill as ſhall be drawne, for the education of the Children of Papiſts by Proteſtants in the Proteſtant Religion.

8. That Your Majeſty will be pleaſed to conſent that ſuch a Reformation be made of the Church-Government and Liturgy as both Houſes of Parliament ſhall adviſe; wherein they intend to have Conſultation with Divines, as is expreſſed in their Declaration to that purpoſe: and that your Majeſty will contribute your beſt Aſſiſtance to them, for the raiſing of a ſufficient maintenance for preaching Miniſters thorow the Kingdom; and that your Majeſty will be pleaſed to give your conſent to Lawes for the taking away of Innovations and Superſtition, and of Pluralities, and againſt ſcan-

ſcandalous Miniſters.

9. That your Maj ſty will be pleaſed to reſt ſatisfied with that Courſe that the *Lords* and *Commons* have appoynted for ordering of the Militia, untill the ſame ſhall be further ſetled by a Bill: And that your Majeſty will recall your Declarations and *Proclamations* againſt the Ordinance made by the Lords and Commons concerning it.

10. That ſuch Members of either Houſe of *Parliament* as have during this preſent *Parliament*, beene put out of any place and Office, may either be reſtored to that place and Office, or otherwiſe have ſatisfaction for the ſame, upon the Petition of that Houſe whereof he or they are Members.

11. That all *Privy* Counſellors and Judges may take an Oath, the Form whereof to be agreed on, and ſetled by Act of *Parliament*, for the maintaining of the *Petition* of Right, and of certaine Statutes made by this *Parliament*, which ſhall be mentioned by both Houſes of *Parliament*, And that an inquiry of all the breaches and violations of thoſe Lawes may be given in charge by the Juſtices of the Kings Bench every Term, and by the Judges of Aſſize in their Circuits, and Juſtices of the *Peace* at the Seſſions, to be preſented and puniſhed according to *Law*.

12. That all the Iudges, and all the Officers placed by approbation of both Houſes of *Parliament* may hold their places *quam diu bene ſe geſſerint*.

13. That the Iuſtice of *Parliament* may paſſe upon all delinquents, whether they be within the Kingdome or fled out of it: & that all perſons cited by either Houſe of *Parliament*, may appear and abide the cenſure of *Parliament*.

XIV. That the generall pardon offered by your Maieſty, may be granted with ſuch exceptions as ſhall be adviſed by both Houſes of Parliament.

XV. That the Forts and Caſtles of this Kingdome may be put under the command and cuſtody of ſuch perſons as your Maieſty ſhall appoint, with the approbation of your Parliament, and in the intervals of *Parliament*, with approbation of the Maior part of the Councell, in ſuch manner as is before expreſſed in the choice of Counſellors.

XVI. That the extraordinary guards, and Military Forces now attending Your Maieſty, may be removed and diſcharged, and that

for

for the future You will raiſe no ſuch guards or extraordinary forces, but according to the Law, in caſe of actuall Rebellion or Invaſion.

XVII. That your Majeſty will be pleaſed to enter into a more ſtrict Allegiance with the States of the Vnited Provinces, and other neighbour Princes and States of the Proteſtant Religion, for the defence and maintenance thereof, againſt all deſignes and Attempts of the Pope and his Adherents, to ſubvert and ſuppreſſe it, wherby your Majeſty will obtaine a great acceſſe of ſtrength and reputation, and your ſubiects be much encouraged and enabled in a Parliamentary way for your aid and aſſiſtance in reſtoring your Royall Siſter, and her Princely Iſſue, to thoſe Dignities and Dominions which belong unto them, and relieving the other diſtreſſed Proteſtant Princes, who have ſuffered in the ſame cauſe.

XVIII. That Your Majeſty will be pleaſed by Act of Parliament, to cleer the Lord *Kimbolton* and the five Members of the Houſe of Commons in ſuch manner, that future Parliaments may be ſecured from the conſequence of that evill preſident.

XIX. That Your Majeſty will be graciouſly pleaſed to paſſe a Bill for reſtraynhing Peers made hereafter, from ſitting or voting in Parliament, unleſſe they be admitted thereunto with the conſent of both Houſes of Parliament.

FINIS.

And

AND these our Humble desires being granted by your Maiesty, we shall forthwith apply our selvs to regulate your present Revenue, in such sort as may be for your best advantage, and likewise to settle such an ordinary, and constant encrease of it, as shall be sufficient to support your Royall Dignity in Honour and plenty, beyond the proportion of any former grants of the Subiects of this Kingdome to your Maiesties Royall Predecessors. We shall likewise put the Towne of Hull into such hands, as your Maiesty shall appoint, with the consent and approbation of Parliament, and deliver up a iust accompt of all the Magazine, and cheerefully imploy the uttermost of our Power and endeavours in the reall expression and performance of our most dutifull and Loyall Affections, to the preserving and maintaining the Royall Honour, Greatnesse, and safety of your Maiesty, and your posterity.

FINIS.

ed
ly
ch
ke
en-
ott
nd
ub-
rall
of
ap-
ti-
the
moſt
ref-
and
ta-
ry of

PROPOSITIONS

Made by both Houſes of

PARLIAMENT,

TO THE

KINGS MAIESTY,

England. Parliament

FOR K.

A Reconciliation of the differences betweene His MAJESTY, and the ſaid Houſes.

Whereunto is added two Orders ſet fourth by the Houſe of Commons *Die Iovis 2 Iunii*, 1642.

Die Iovis 2, die Iunii. 1642.

ORdered by the Lords in Parliament, that theſe Propoſitions ſhall bee forthwith printed and publiſhed.

Jo. Brown Cleric. Parliamentorum.

LONDON

Printed by *Edward Griffin* for *Chriſtopher Latham*. 1642.

PROPOSITIONS

Made by both Houses of

PARLIAMENT,

TO THE

KINGS MAJESTY,

FOR

A Reconciliation of the differences

between His MAJESTY, and

the said Houses.

Whereto is added two Orders for Print by the House of Commons Die Jovis 23 Junii, 1642.

Die Jovis 23, die Junii. 1642.

Ordered by the Lord in Parliament, that these Propositions shall be forthwith printed and published.

Jo. Brown Cleric. Parliamentorum.

LONDON

Printed by [illegible] for [illegible] 1642.

YOur Majesties most humble and faithfull Subjects, the Lords & Commons in Parliament, having nothing in their thoughts and desires more precious, & of higher esteeme (next to the honour and immediate service of God) then the just and faithfull performance of their duty to Your Majesty and this Kingdome; And being very sensible of the great distractions, and distempers, and of the imminent dangers and calamities which those distractions, and distempers are like to bring upon Your Majesty and your Subjects, all which have proceeded from the subtill insinuations, mischievous practices, and evill Counsels of men disaffected to Gods true Religion, Your Majesties honour and safety, and the publike peace and prosperity of your people, After a serious observation of the causes of those mischiefes, doe in all humility and sincerity present to your Majesty their most dutifull Petition and advise: that out of your Princely wisdome for the establishing your owne honour and safety, and gracious tendernesse of the welfare and security of your Subjects, and Dominions, you will be pleased to grant and accept these their humble desires and propositions, as the most necessary effectuall meanes, through Gods blessing, of removing those jealousies and differences which have unhappily fallen betwixt you and your people, and procuring both your Majesty, and them a constant course of honour, peace and happinesse.

1. That the Lords and others of your Majesties Privy Councell, and such great Officers and Ministers of State, either at home or beyond the Seas, may be put from your Privy Councell, and from those Offices and Imployments, excepting such as shall be approved of by both Houses of Parliament. And that the Persons put into the places and imployments of those that are removed, may be approved of by both Houses of Parliament: And that all Privy Counsellors shall take an oath for the due execution of their places, in such Forme as shall be agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament.

2. That the great affaires of this Kingdome may not be concluded or transacted by the advise of private men, or by any unknowne or

without Counsell [illegible] and [illegible] publique affaires of the Kingdome, and are proper for the high Court of Parliament, or [illegible] Majesties great and greater Councell, may be debated, resolved and transacted only in Parliament, and not elsewhere. And that no shall presume to do any thing to the contrary, shall be referred to the censure and judgment of Parliament. And that in other matters of State, as are proper to your Majesties privy Councell shall be debated and concluded by such of the Nobility and others as shall from time to time be chosen for that place by approbation of both Houses of Parliament; And that no publique Act concerning the affaires of the Kingdom, which are proper for your privy Councell, may be deemed of any validity as proceeding from the Royall Authority, unlesse it be done by the advise and consent of the major part of your Councell attested under their hands. And that your Councell may be limitted to a certaine number, not exceeding twenty five, nor under fifteene. And if any Counsellors place happen to be void in the Intervals of Parliament, it shall not be supplyed without the assent of the major part of the Councell, which choice shall be confirmed at the next sitting of the Parliament, or else to be void.

3. That the Lord high Steward of England, Lord high Constable, Lord Chancellor or Lord Keeper of the great Seale, Lord Treasurer, Lord privy Seale, Earle Marshall, Lord Admirall, Warden of the Cinque Ports, cheife Governour of Ireland, Chauncellor of the Exchequer, Master of the wards, Secretaries of State, two cheife Justices and cheife Baron, may alwayes be chosen with the approbation of both houses of Parliament; And in the intervalls of Parliament by assent of the major part of the Councell, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice of Counsellors.

4. That he, or they unto whom the government and education of the kings Children shall be committed, shall be approved of by both Houses of Parliament, and in the Intervals of Parliaments, by the assent of the major part of the Counsell, in such manner as is before expresst in the choise of Counsellors; and that all such servants as are now about them, against whom both Houses shall have any just exception, be removed.

5. That no Marriage shall be concluded, or treated for any of the King Children with any forren Prince, or other person whatsoever abroad or at home, without the consent of Parliament, under the Penalty of a præmunire in such as shall so conclude, or treate any Marriage. And the said penalty shall not be pardoned or dispenced with but by the consent of both houses of Parliament.

6. That the Lawes in force against Jesuites, Priests, and popish Recusants, be strictly put in execution, without any toleration, or dispensation to the contrary; And that some more effectuall course may be enacted by authoritie of Parliament, to disable them from making any disturbance in the state, or eluding the Law by cruits or otherwise,

7. That the Votes of Popish Lords in the House of Peeres may be taken away, so long as they continue Papists. And that his Majestie would consent to such a bill, as shall be drawne for the education of the children of Papists by protestants, in the protestant Religion.

8. That your Majestie will be pleased to consent that such a reformation be made of the Church government, and Liturgie, as both Houses of Parliament shall advise, wherein they intend to have consultations with Divines as is expressed in their Declaration to that purpose. And that your Majestie will contribute your best assistance to them, for the raising of a sufficient maintainance for preaching Ministers through the Kingdome. And that your Majestie will be pleased to give your consent to lawes, for the taking away of innovations, and superstition, and of pluralities, and against scandalous Ministers.

9. That your Majestie will bee pleased to rest satisfied with that course that the Lords and Commons have appointed for ordering the *Militia*, untill the same shall be further setled by a Bill, and that your Majestie will recall your Declarations, and Proclamations against the Ordinance made by the Lords and Commons concerning it.

10. That such members of either house of Parliament, as have during this present Parliament beene put out of any place and office, may either be restored to that place and office, or otherwise have satisfaction for the same, upon the petition of that house whereof he or they are members.

11. That all Privie Counsellors and Judges may take an oath, the form whereof to be agreed on and setled by act of Parliament, for the maintaining of the petition of Right, and of certain Statutes made by this Parliament which shall be mentioned by both Houses of Parliament, And that an inquiry of all the breaches and violations of these lawes may bee given in charge, by the Justices of the Kings Bench every Terme, and by the Judges of Assize in their circuits, and Justices of Peace at the Sessions, to be presented and punished according to Law.

12. That all the Judges and all Officers placed by approbation of both Houses of *Parliament*, may hold their places *Quam diu bene se gesserint*.

13. That the Justice of parliament may passe upon all delinquents

whether they be within the kingdome, or fled out of it. And that all persons cited by either House of parliament, may appeare and abide the censure of parliament.

14. That the generall pardon offered by your Majestie may be granted with such exceptions as shall be advised by both Houses of parliament.

15. That the Forts and Castles of this Kingdome may be put under the command and custodie of such persons as your Majestie shall appoint with the approbation of your parliament. And in the intervals of parliament with the approbation of the Major part of the councell in such manner as is before expressed in the choise of Counsellors.

16. That the extraordinary Guards and Military forces now attending your Majestie may be removed and discharged. And that for the future you will raise no such guards or extraordinary forces, but according to law, in case of actuall rebellion or invasion.

17. That your Majestie will be pleased to enter into a more strict allyance with the States of the united Provinces and other neighbour *Princes* and States of the protestant religion for the defence and maintainance thereof against all designes and attempts of the *Pope* and his adherents to subvert and suppresse it, whereby your *Majestie* will obtaine a great accesse of strength and reputation, and your subjects be much encouraged and enabled in a parliamentary way for your aide and assistance, in restoring your royall sister, and her princely issue, to those dignities and dominions which belong unto them, and relieving the other distressed protestant *Princes*, who have suffered in the same cause.

18 That your Majestie will be pleased by act of *Parliament*, to cleer the Lord *Kimbolton*, and the five members of the house of Commons, in such manner, that future *Parliaments* may be secured from the Consequence of that evill president.

19 That your *Majestie* will be graciously pleased, to passe a Bill for restraining *Peeres* made hereafter, from sitting or voting in *Parliament*, unlesse they be admitted thereunto with the consent of both houses of *Parliament*.

And these our humble desires, being granted by your *Majestie*, we shall forthwith apply our selves to regulate your present revenew in such sort as may be for your best advantage, and likewise to settle such an ordinary and constant increase of it, as shall be sufficient to support your Royall dignity, in honor and plenty, beyond the proportion of any former grants of the subiects of this Kingdom to your Maiesties Royal predecessors. We shall likewise put the Towne of *Hull* into such hands

as your Majeſtie ſhall thinke meet, with the conſent and approbation of Parliament, to deliver the poſſeſſion of all the Magazine; and cheerefully employ the uttermoſt of our power and endeavour, in the reall expreſſion and performance of our moſt dutifull and Loyall affections, to the preſerving and maintaining the Royall Honour, Greatneſſe, and ſafety of your Majeſtie and your Poſterity.

FINIS.

Die Iovis 2 Iunii, 1642.

IT is this day Ordered by the Commons now aſſembled in Parliament, That the ſeverall Members of this Houſe, do forthwith give their Attendance upon the publick Service of this Commonwealth with which they are entruſted by their Countries. And the Sheriffes of the ſeverall Counties of this Kingdome of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, are required to give notice of this Order unto all ſuch Members of the Houſe of Commons as are within their reſpective Counties; and ſpeedily to make returne of ſuch their doings, unto the *Speaker* of that Houſe: And all ſuch as ſhall not make their perſonall appearance by the ſixteenth day of this inſtant *June*, in the Houſe of Commons, ſhall each one forfeit One hundred pounds, to be diſpoſed of to the Warres in *Ireland*, and undergoe ſuch further cenſure and puniſhment as the ſaid Houſe ſhall think fit for ſo great neglect of their duty in a time that ſo neceſſarily requires their aſsiſtance.

Provided alwayes, That all ſuch as are ſpecially imployed by this Houſe, are to remaine in ſuch imployments, untill they ſhall have particular Directions for their returne.

H. Elſynge Cler. Parl. D. Com.

Die Iovis 2 Junii. 1642.

WHereas it doth appeare to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the King, seduced by wicked Counsell, doth intend to levy Warre against his Parliament, and whereas information hath beene given; That the Iewels of the Crowne (which by the law of the land ought not to be alienated) are either pawned or sold in Amsterdam, or some other parts beyond the Sea, and thereby great Sums of money provided to be returned to York, or to some of his Majesties Servants or Agents for His Majesties use: And whereas tis more then probable, That this great Provision of Money in such an extraordinary way, is to maintaine this intended Warre, and thereby to bring the whole Kingdome into utter ruine and confusion, It is therefore declared by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That whosoever hath beene, or shall be an Actor in the selling or pawning of any of the Iewels of the Crowne, or hath, or shall pay, lend, send, or bring any Money in Specie into this Kingdome, for, or upon any of those Iewels; Or whosoever hath or shall accept of any Bill from beyond the Seas, for the payment of any summe of money for, or upon any of those Iewels, and shall passe any summe accordingly on such Bill, after notice of this Order, without acquainting this House with the receipt of such Bill before he enjoy the same; Or if he have already accepted any such Bill, when with the conveniencie thereof before the payment of the money. Every such person shall be held and accounted a promoter of this intended Warre, an enemy to the State, and ought to give satisfaction for this publick detriment out of his owne Estate.

H. Elsynge Clerk. Parl. D. Com.

21

ARTICLES OF PEACE and COMMERCE,

Between the High and Mighty Kings, CHARLES, by the grace of God, King of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c.

And JOHN the 4th King of *Portugal, Algarves, &c.* And their SUBJECTS,

Concluded at London the nine and twentieth day of January, in the yeer of our Lord 1642. *Stilo novo.*

Translated out of Latin into English.

LONDON:
Printed by ROBERT BARKER, Printer to the Kings most Excellent Majestie: And by the Assignes of JOHN BILL. 1642.

K. Engl. Brit. Scotl.
Charles I. King


C R
DIEV·ET·MON·DROIT

¶ By the King.

Whereas the High and Mighty Prince, John the fourth, King of Portugall, &c. hath lately sent his Ambassadours to the Kings most Excellent Majestie, declaring his desire to renew the ancient Confederation and Amity between their Royall Predecessours, Crowns and Subjects; His Majestie out of his royall Care of the Peace and Tranquillity of his Kingdoms, and the freedom of Trade and Commerce of his loving Subjects, By the advice of his Privie Councell, hath been pleased to yeeld

thereunto, and doth make known to his loving people, That the said Peace and Confederation is concluded and established between the said Kings, their Crowns, Kingdoms, Territories and Subjects: And the Kings most Excellent Majestie, for the direction of his Merchants in their Trade and Commerce, hath given Command, That the Articles of this Treatie of Peace shall be published, strictly charging and commanding all his Subjects of whatsoever degree and estate to observe the same.

Given at the Court at York the two and twentieth day of May, in the eighteenth yeer of His Majesties Reign. 1642.

God save the King.

ARTICLES OF THE TREATTE.

I.

FIrſt, it is concluded and accorded, that there is and ſhall be for ever a good, true, and firm Peace and Amitie between the moſt renowned Kings, CHARLES, King of Great *Britain*, and JOHN the fourth, King of *Portugall*, their Heirs and Succeſſors, and their Kingdoms, Countries, Dominions, Lands, Peoples, Liegemen, Vaſſalls and Subjects whomſoever, preſent, and to come, of whatſoever Condition, Dignity & Degree they may be, as well by Land

as by Sea, and Freſh-waters, ſo as the ſaid Vaſſalls and Subjects are each of them to favour other, and to uſe one and other with friendly offices and true affection; And that neither of the ſaid moſt renowned Kings, their Heirs and Succeſſors, by himſelf or by any other, ſhall do or attempt any thing againſt each other, or their Kingdoms, by Land or by Sea, nor ſhall conſent nor adhere unto any War, Counſell, or Treatie in prejudice of the other.

II.

That between the moſt renowned Kings aforeſaid, and the Vaſſalls, Inhabitants, and Subjects of each of them, as well by Land, as by Sea and Freſh-waters, in all and ſingular their Kingdoms, Dominions, Iſlands, and other Lands, Cities, Towns, Villages, Havens, and Territories of the ſaid Kingdoms and Dominions, there is and ſhall be free Commerce (in which there was in the time of the Kings of *Caſteele*, or hitherto hath been Commerce) ſo that without any Safe-Conduct, or other Licence generall or ſpeciall, as well by Land, as by Sea and Freſh-waters, the Subjects and Vaſſalls of each King may and ſhall

go,

go, enter, and ſail, in and to the Kingdoms and Dominions aforeſaid, and the Cities, Towns, Havens, Shores, Sea-Rodes, and Territories of the ſame, and with Carriages, Horſes, Burdens, Ships loaden or to be loaden, to bring in Merchandizes, to buy or ſell, as much as they will, Victuals, and upon juſt Prices to make proviſion of things neceſſary for their ſuſtenance and Voyages, and to repair their Shipping and Carriages of their own propertie, or hired, or borrowed by them, and from thence alſo with the ſame freedom to depart with their Merchandizes, Goods, and things whatſoever, having paid onely ſuch Cuſtomes and Tolles, as according to the Ordinances of each place are at that time rated, and may thence go without let or impediment unto their own Countries, or any other places where and how they pleaſe.

III.

And that the Subjects of each of the moſt renowned Kings before named, in the Dominions and Territories of the other, ſhall not be worſe dealt withall then the naturall Subjects in their Sales and Contracts for their Merchandizes,

zes, as well for Price as otherwise, but that the condition of Forreigners and naturall Subjects shall be equall and alike as aforesaid, according to the practice of ancient Treaties made between the most renowned Kings of Great *Britain* and *Castelle*.

IV.

That the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain* shall at their own free will and pleasure use and enjoy any kinde of Merchandizes and Trading in Merchandize, in the Kingdoms, Provinces, Territories and Islands of the most renowned King of *Portugall*, in *Europe*; and that they shall as freely and in the same manner exercise their Trade of Merchandizes in the places aforesaid, as is permitted to the Subjects of other Princes and States in League with the King of *Portugall*; neither shall they be more burdened with Customs, Impositions, or other Taxes, then the Inhabitants and Subjects of the said Lands, or other Subjects of any Nation whatsoever in League with the Portugalls, and they shall enjoy the same Priviledges which were granted to the English before *Portugall* was united to *Castelle*.

V. That

V.

That whensoever the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain* shall with their Ships arrive at the Havens of the most renowned King of *Portugall* in his Kingdoms and Dominions, they shall not be constrained by the Ministers, Officers, and Subjects of the King of *Portugall*, to put or load into their ships any other kinde or quantities of goods and merchandizes, then it shall please and seem good unto the said Subjects of the King of Great *Britain*: And that the Subjects of the King of *Portugall* shall enjoy the same freedome in the Havens and Dominions of the King of Great *Britain*.

VI.

That if it shall happen that the Subjects of the most renowned King of *Portugall*, or any other within his Kingdoms and Dominions, or their merchandizes and goods shall be taken, seised or arrested by the Office of the Court of Inquisition, or the Judges, or Ministers thereof, which have been or shall be ingaged or indebted to the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain*, the said debts shall be fully paid

out of the ſaid goods and merchandizes, within the yeer immediately following the ſaid arreſt, without any hinderance or trouble of the ſaid Court, or the Judges and Miniſters of the ſame whoſoever: And if any of the goods and merchandizes of the ſaid Subjects of the King of Great *Britain*, ſhall remain *in ſpecie* among the ſaid goods and merchandizes ſo ſeized and arreſted, the ſame ſhall be immediately reſtored unto them.

VII.

That the Captains, Maſters, Officers, and Mariners of the ſhips of the moſt renowned King of Great *Britain*, or his Subjects, ſhall not commence any Actions, nor procure any trouble againſt the ſaid ſhips, or any the Subjects of the ſaid King, within the Kingdoms and Dominions of the King of *Portugall*, for their wages or ſalaries, under colour or pretext that they profeſſe the Roman Religion, or ſhall have put themſelves into the ſervice of the moſt renowned King of *Portugall*.

VIII.

VIII.

That the Conſuls named and appointed by the moſt renowned King of Great *Britain*, for the aid and protection of his Subjects, remaining within the Kingdoms and Dominions of the moſt renowned King of *Portugall*, ſhall fully and freely exerciſe the power and authority of Conſuls within the ſaid Kingdoms and Dominions, although they ſhall not profeſſe the Roman Religion.

IX.

That if any Subjects of the moſt renowned King of Great *Britain* ſhall depart this life within the Kingdoms and Dominions of the moſt renowned King of *Portugall*, the books, accounts, merchandizes and goods of them, or of any other Subjects of the ſaid King of Great *Britain*, ſhall not from henceforth be taken or ſeized by the Judges of Orphans and Abſents, or their Miniſters, or Officers, neither ſhall they be ſubject to their Juriſdiction; but the ſame goods, merchandizes and accounts, ſhall be delivered, by the poſſeſſors of them, to Engliſh Agents, or Fa-

ctors residing in that City, named and appointed by the said Deceased: And if he shall have named none while he lived, they shall be delivered to one or two English Merchants, (provided they be Bachelors) by authority of the Conservator of the English, having first given Caution with good Sureties to be allowed by the said Conservator, to restore the said Goods & Merchandizes to the true Owners thereof, or their lawfull Creditors: And those Goods which shall appear to belong to the Deceased, shall be delivered to his Heirs, Executors, or Creditors.

X.

That the most renowned King of *Portugall*, or his Ministers within his Kingdoms and Dominions, shall not arrest, or withhold the Ships of the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain*, or his Subjects, without his knowledge and consent, for his services of War, or any other services whatsoever; But that the said Ships and Subjects may freely, and at their own pleasure depart out of the Ports and Dominions of the said King, without any hinderance of the said King of *Portugall*, or his Ministers: And that the

the Goods and Merchandizes of the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain* shall not be taken for the service of the King of *Portugall*, but for the just and common price thereof, to be paid within two Moneths following, unlesse some other time of paiment shall be agreed on by both parts.

XI.

That the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain* shall freely carry in their Ships all things, Goods and Merchandizes, of what kinde soever they be, even Arms, Victuals, or any other of the like kinde out of the Ports and Dominions of the said King, or of any Ports and Dominions whatsoever, (so that they be not immediately carried out of the Ports of *Portugall*, or the Dominions thereof) to be transported to any Ports and Territories of the most renowned King of *Castecle*; And that the most renowned King of *Portugall*, or his Subjects, shall not by Seizures, Reprizalls, or any other means hinder the said Ships, Goods and Persons of the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain*, but that they may safely sail to the Ports and Territories of the said King of *Castecle*, and

there exercise their Merchandize and Trade; And that the Subjects of the Kings of Great *Britain* and *Portugall* shall on both parts have the same Power, if hereafter it shall happen that either of the said Kings shall have War with the Friend of the other, and the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain* shall carry all kinde of Merchandize, even Arms, Victualls, or any other of the like kinde, with the same Freedom into the Kingdoms and Dominions of the King of *Portugall*, and shall there sell the same at their own pleasure, in publike Market, or privately, without any hinderance of the most renowned King of *Portugall*, or his Ministers.

XII.

Item, That the convention of Truce made between *D. Michael de Loronha*, *Conde de Linhares* Vice-Roy of *Goa*, and *William Methwold* President of the English in *East India*, the 20th of January 1635. *Stilo novo*, shall be continued and kept between the Subjects of both Kings in *East India*, and in all the Dominions of the most renowned King of *Portugall* beyond *Cape Bona Esperance*; And that the Commissioners to be

nam'd

named by the ſaid Kings, ſhall in *Eaſt India* take Cognizance within three yeers of the Demands which have been or ſhall be made by the Subjects and Vaſſalls of both Kings, for their Commerce in *India* aforeſaid, that ſo a perpetuall Peace and Confederation may be confirmed and eſtabliſhed by the ſaid Kings, between their Subjects on both parts.

XIII.

And becauſe the Commerce and free coming of the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain* to the Coaſts and parts of *Africa*, the Iſland of S. *Thome*, and other Iſlands comprehended under them, could not yet be agreed on by reaſon of the defect of the Powers ſent by the moſt renowned King of *Portugall* to his Ambaſſadors, that by this debate this preſent Treatie of Peace and Amitie between both Kings and their Subjects be not delayed, it is on both parts concluded on, That in the Lands, Places, Caſtles, Ports, and Coaſts of *Africa, Guyne, Binc, &c.* the Iſland of S. *Thome*, and other Iſlands comprehended under them, wherein it ſhall appear that the Subjects of Great *Britain* have dwelt for Trade

of

of Merchandize, or have had Trade or Commerce there in the time of the Kings of *Castile*, or hitherto, there shall be no alteration or change, neither shall they have any trouble or injury done them by the Portugalls for that cause. And if any Customes be to be demanded from the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain*, on any cause, in the Castles, Islands, and Places aforesaid, they shall not be greater or more grievous then those which shall be demanded from other Nations in League with the King of *Portugall*: And the Subjects of the King of *Portugall* wanting Forreign Ships for their Navigation and Commerce to the Coasts and Islands aforesaid, may freely at their own pleasure hire the Ships of the Subjects of the King of Great *Britain*: And that Commissioners and Ambassadors shall be named by both Kings, who shall Treat and Conclude concerning the Commerce and free coming to the Coasts, Islands, and Places aforesaid, which hath been demanded by the Commissioners of the King of Great *Britain*, for the Subjects of their King, being perswaded out of the confidence of the ancient amity which hath been between the Predecessors of the same Kings, that

the

the moſt renowned King of *Portugall* will grant to no Nation more ample Rights, Immunities and Priviledges, then he will grant unto the Subjects of the King of *Great Britain*.

XIV.

And forasmuch as the moſt renowned King of *Portugall* by his Grant, confirmed by his Seal, dated in *Lisbone* the 21. day of January, in the yeer of the birth of Our Lord, 1642. hath given free power to the Inhabitants of the Lands subject to the Dominions of the States of *Holland*, &c. to bring in, and to export all kinde of Merchandizes out of his Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, That the Subjects of the King of *Great Britain* shall have, and enjoy the same Power in the Kingdoms and Dominions of the said moſt renowned King of *Portugall*, according to the Tenour of the said Grant.

XV.

And that the English Merchants, and other Subjects of the King of *Great Britain*, shall enjoy as great, and the same Immunities from being Imprisoned, Arrested, or any other way troubled

in their Persons, Houses, Books of Accompts, and Accompts, Merchandizes and Goods within the Dominions of the most renowned King of *Portugall*, as hath been granted, or shall be hereafter granted to any other Prince, or People in league with the King of *Portugall*.

XVI.

And because there is yet no agreement made concerning Fraighting of the Ships of the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain* by the *Portugalls*, for their Commerce and Navigation into *Brasil*, it hath pleased both Parties, that Commissioners or Ambassadours shall be appointed, and sent by the said Kings within two yeers, who shall have power to treat and agree concerning this Article.

XVII.

And because the Rights of Commerce and Peace shall be made unprofitable, if the Subjects of the most renowned King of Great *Britain* shall be troubled for their consciences, while they go to and from the Kingdoms and Dominions of the most renowned King of *Portugall*, or reside

reſide there for Commerce or Buſineſſe; Therefore that their Commerce be ſafe and ſecure, as well on Land as on Sea, the moſt renowned King of *Portugall* ſhall take care, and provide that they ſhall not be moleſted or diſturbed for the ſaid Caſe of Conſcience, ſo as they give not ſcandall unto others. And although the moſt renowned King of *Portugall* do acknowledge that he hath not power to determine and diſpoſe of Faith and Religion, yet out of his love and great affection to the moſt renowned King of Great *Britain*, and the Engliſh Nation, he ſhall take care that the Engliſh, and other Subjects of the ſaid King, ſhall have and enjoy as great Liberty in the practice and exerciſe of their Religion within the Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories of the King of *Portugall*, as ſhall be permitted to the Subjects of any other Prince, or Common-wealth whatſoever.

XVIII.

If it ſhall happen hereafter (which God forbid) that any controverſies and doubts ſhall ariſe between the ſaid moſt renowned Kings, whereby there may be danger of the interruption

of Commerce and Intercourse between their Subjects, there shall be publike Monition given to the Subjects on both parts, in all and singular the Kingdoms and Provinces of each King, and effect such Monition they shall have two yeers on both parts to transport their Merchandizes and Goods, and that no trouble, impediment, or hurt shall be done in the mean time either to Things or Persons on either part.

XIX.

And if during this Peace and Amitie any thing shall be attempted, committed, or done against the force and effect thereof by Land, Sea, or Fresh-waters, by any of the said Kings, their Heirs and Successors, their Vassalls, or Subjects, yet notwithstanding this Peace and Amitie shall remain in strength and vertue, and the attempters and offenders onely, and none others, shall be punished for such their attempts.

XX.

Item, It is concluded and accorded that the present Peace and Confederation shall not derogate from the Leagues and Confederations here-

to

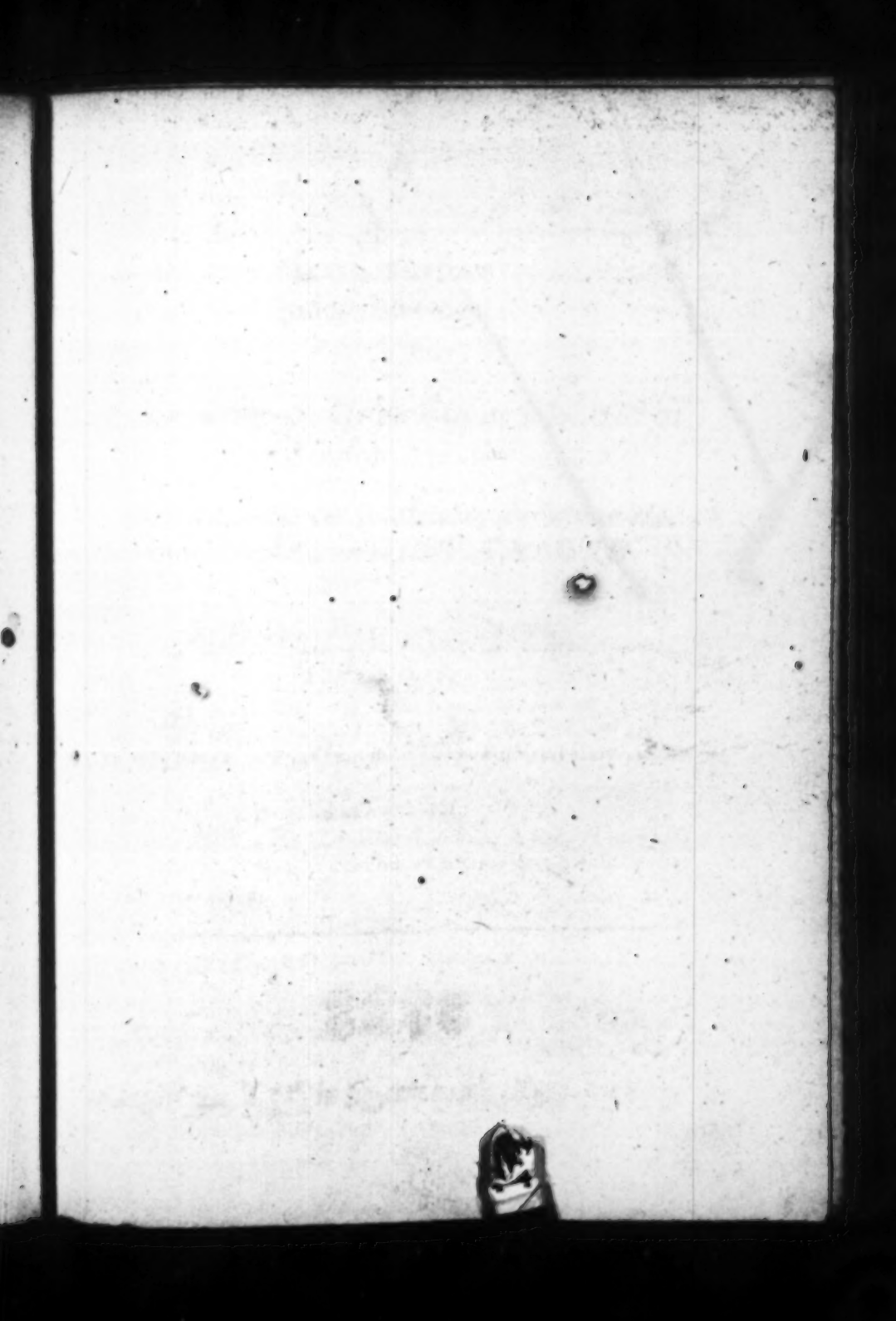
before made and contracted between the most renowned King of Great BRITAIN, and other Kings, Princes, and Common-wealths, but that the ſaid Leagues and Confederations ſhall be firmly kept, and ſhall hereafter remain in full ſtrength, notwithſtanding this Treaty of Peace.

XXI.

Finally, It is Concluded that the ſaid moſt renowned Kings, CHARLES, King of Great BRITAIN, &c. and JOHN the fourth, King of PORTUGALL, &c. ſhall ſincerely and faithfully obſerve and keep, and cauſe to be obſerved by their Subjects and Inhabitants, all and ſingular the Capitulations concluded and accorded in this preſent Treatie, and that they ſhall not, directly or indirectly, do contrary to the ſame: And that they ſhall confirm and ratifie all and ſingular the Conventions aforeſaid, by their Letters Patents, ſubſcribed with their Royall Hands, and with their Great Seals, in good and due form, and upon the firſt occaſion ſhall deliver, or cauſe to be delivered the ſame, faithfully, really, and effectually: And they ſhall mutually binde themſelves by promiſe, in the

Word of a King, that they ſhall obſerve and keep all and ſingular the Premiſſes, whenſoever they ſhall be thereunto required by either part; And they ſhall cauſe this preſent Peace and Amitie, in manner accuſtomed, to be publiſhed, ſoſoon as the ſame conveniently may be done.

FINIS.





22

A Fresh Bit of Mutton, for those Fleshy minded Canibals that cannot endure Pottadge.

OR

A Defence of *Giles Calfine's* Messe of Pottadge well seasoned and well crummed.

Against the idle yet insolent exceptions of his monstrous Adversary *MI.ST.RA.IS.PH.*

By *Drupheyra Thexylvenio : Cosmopolites*

IOEL 2.17.

Let the Priests the Ministers of the Lord weep betweene the Porch and the Altar and let them say, Spare thy people, O Lord, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the Heathen should rule over them, &c.

ECCLESIAST. 5.2.

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God; for God is in Heaven and thou upon Earth, therefore let thy words be few.

Printed for T. P. in Queens heads Alley, 1642.

A

Fresh Bit of Mutton, for the ole Fleshy minded Canibals that cannot endure Pottadge.

OR

A Defence of Giles Gaffney's Medle of Pottadge well seasoned and well crummed.

Against the idle yet insolent exceptions of his monstrous Adversary MISTRESS PH.

By Theophrastus Eutrapelus Cosmopolites

Printed for T. T. in Queens head-Alley, 1646.

A Fresh bit of Mutton for those fleshy minded Cannibals that cannot endure Pottadge.

OVr blessed Saviour himselfe, and also *John* the Baptist justly called the Phatises of their times, *a Generation of Vipers and Hypocrites*; And certainly the new refined Pharisees of our dayes are just the same, professing all good, yet practising nothing but what is evill and destructive to the peace of the Church. The old Pharisees said of *John Baptist*, who came neither eating or drinking, that *he had a Devill*; of our Saviour (who came both eating and drinking) that *he was a Glutton and Winebiber*, &c. and that he also had a Devill: Of the same humour are our new nice Pharisees, if fasting at Church like honest Christians, or full fed in a Conventicle amongst their own licentious Libertines, they are still the same, still going contrary to the the Orders of the Church, fasting when they are allowed to feast, and feasting when fasts are enjoyned. But these men go beyond the old Pharisees in this, that they are not content to deny obedience to Church Orders, but revile the Church as adulterous, for not conforming her selfe to their giddy devises. They are never so happy in their own opinions, as when they are casting foule indignities & aspersions on those whom Christ hath chosen, and his Church ordained to be the faithful dispensors of his word & Sacraments. Hence proceeds those scandalous reproachs against that sacred government, which Christ instituted in his Church. It is true, as Christ said to his Apostles, *Men shal think they do God good service when they revile and persecute you*. It appeares nowby these mens practises, who think themselves almost capable of Heaven, if they can but raile at Gods faithfull Ministers and Ambassadors. Traducing their calling as diabolicall and Antichristian, prophaning

ning their practise and worship as Idolatrous and Superstitious, blasting their good names as odious and scandalous, and calumniating their lives as lewd and licentious; but why do I rake in this dunghill of blasphemies and reproaches? For what good language can Christs Messengers expect from such incendiaries, whose tongues are set on fire from Hell? What calamities this viperous generation hath brought on poore *Germany* is known to all, and what it may bring on us is very much to be feared, by the monstrous encrease of these pestilent sects of late in this Kingdom? We see how they resist the Orders of our Church in troupes, and labour by their multitudes to effect that, which by plaine arguments and reason they cannot accomplish.

The patient and pious humble Remonstrance met with a plural adversary, a five headed monster, stiled *Smectymnuus*; Out of the same sea was revealed the second Beast with 7 heads, in armes against our *Liturgy*, (*known by the name of Dunalphustrapie*) but that the mystery of iniquity may appeare every day more abominable, *Giles Calfines* answers are discovered under this heathenish name, *MAT. STEARNES. PH.* And now that you may know him to be a true viper, you may see he hath eaten his way through the belly of his dammer, Impudently proclaiming in his Title and Book, that the *Liturgy* of our Church is no better than *Popish Porradge*, &c. Making the Church (too good a mother for such a bastard) no better than an harlot. He says he hath such arguments against it, as are unanswerable. A bold speech of an unregenerate *Philistim*: Yet in the name of God I will throw one stone out of *Davids* sling at this *Goliah*, though I cannot put on *Sauls* armour, nor was ever wrapped in *Samuels* mantle. And now Sir, I must a little reason with you, if you will allow of any reason.

This you say, It is no indignity to call the Service Book Porradge, by a metaphor, because fat Cooks cast of the *Popes* Kitchin compoted it. I had though (my unlettered many lettered brethren) that Cooks did make Porradge within, not out of the Kitchin, and if it had been compoted by the *Popes* Cooks, it would never have had so many arguments against Popery, as may with small paines be deduced from thence. If it be Porradge it is milk Porradge made of the sincere milk of the word, and boyled before the *Pope* had either Cook or Kitchin, at least allow it to be as *Giles Calfine* affirmes good wholsome Porradge well reasoned and well crummed, &c. If there be any thing that doth not agree with your nice pallate, it is hearb of Grace, whereof there is good store; an ingredient which you cannot abide, because it will vex your fleshly desires. But if the whore of *Babylon* did chop into it (as you say) weeds of Idolatry, to poyson the children of Grace; The blessed Reformers did by their Porradge as *Elisha* did by theirs (whereof the

lons

tons of the Prophets cry'd out, *Saying, there is death in the pot*, that is, not throw them away, but cure them, by putting therin the fine flower of Gods Word, and making them comfortable to the truth. So that there is now nothing in them, but that which is for our nourishment and comfort; and I dare confidently affirme that never any child of Grace perished by any night-shade or *Colloquintida* in the Porradge. But you say, the name *Lyturgy* and *Masse* are used promiscuously by *Papists*, and therfore the *Lyturgy* is unlawful. A pretty formal argument, the word *Communion* and *Sacrament* are used promiscuously by us and the Papists by the same argument we should not receive the Lords Supper, because Papists agree with us in the names. By this you may behold on what slender argument your found opinions are grounded. But, you say, Names are the Images of things, and therfore the *Lyturgy* is either a Lethargy of Will-worship, or a Mask of Idolatry. Well towrd Brother *Nicholas* but that one is too wide, & the other too narrow. *Tenterden Steeple* is the cause of *Goodwin Sands*, the more Logical argument of the two; if the Name be always the Image of a thing, then every one that is named *John* must be as good as S. *John*, and he that is called *Peter* as S. *Peter*. I warrant that is the matter that S *Paul* was so wicked before his name was altered, because he was King *Sauls* name sake. By this can be the reason why you delight to give Scripture names to your children, because you thinke their names will make them good; when as wee see these poore children, being misled by their parents & separating from Gods Church into Conventicles, loose all Religion & God too, while they run a whoring after their own inventions, and worship the Calves of their own imaginations. But again the name being the image of a thing, you hence affirme that bowing to a name is bowing to an Image, *Ergo*, it is Idolatry to bow to the name of Jesus. If this be your Logicke, God keep me from your conclusions. You have I believe forgot how a worthy *Gentleman* did of late vindicate this part of worship; but I will beare with your short memory seeing you have almost spoyled it by hearing long winded Sermons. But now comes another of your great arguments, that the *Lyturgy* is taken out of the Popish Breviary, and therefore it is unlawfull. I can tell you that the Lords prayer is taken from thence, will you therefore say it is unlawfull? Your Brethren do as good, for many of them will not use it; the Apostles Creed is there too, but those Articles are now no part of your faith; *Turner* is your Apostle, (but I am sure his Creed will never save your soules) the ten Commandements are there too, but the World, the Flesh and the Devill are so potent in your affections, that you will not keepe them, and therefore desire not to heare them. But if the Papists mix with our Prayers their superstitious ones, must not we therefore use the good ones? The Divell confessed Christ to be the Son of God, so did *Peter*, yet our Saviour never blamed *Peter* for using the Divells confes-

tion. Next you find fault with the translation of the Psalmes in the *Liturgie*; for answer to this, pray understand (if you can) that the Psalmes in the Service booke were never yet allowed of by any Papists, but were one of the first translations since our blessed Reformation, and authorized by Act of Parliament for publike Service. This last which is the best translation, was done by King *Edwes* his Command, and by him appoynted to be read in Churches; and if they were (as I wish they might) be enjoyned by Parliament to that use, I dare say, none would refuse to read them instead of the old. Next you find fault that we use *Gloria Patri*, instead of praise the Lord: It seemes you thinke holy duties enjoyned are unlawfull to be performed, for what is *Gloria Patri*, but praise be to the Lord?

Another frivolous Cavill you have against reading parts of Chapters, as in the Epistles and Gospels; he is a foole they say, that can say nothing, and rather than you will have nothing to say, you will talke like a foole; for tell me (good Sir) is it not lawfull nor commendable on such occasions to take those parts of holy Writ only, as are agreeable and pertinent to the time and occasion? If you will not allow a part of a Chapter, do not allow a Chapter of a Booke; for the division of bookes into Chapters was not originall, but of latter times, done few ages ago. I will give you one instance more delightfull to your fleshly desires; Why is your Mutton your own deare dish, brought to your table by the joynt, and not by the whole sheep? and why do you eate but part of that joynt only, such as you best like, and not all of it; you cannot give me a reason of one, but I can returne it to you in behalfe of the other, only this one excepted: that this your trade of Pampheting will not maintaine so great a table, as a whole sheep every meale, and two legged Mutton into the bargaine.

Your last and worst argument is against the *Letany*, which (you say) is not the stumpe or limbe of *Dagon*, but the head of the Masse booke, in which you say are nothing but repetitions, and a multitude of words, as *Good Lord deliver us, heare us*, &c. ridiculous invocations, Magick spels, and no better than conjuring. Oh horrid Prophanation of true zealous devotions! stop thy mouth audatious Blasphemer, and blush for the abuse of those cries for mercy, and short ejaculations for audience at the Throne of grace.

Looke on *Psal.* 136. and see if there be not more repetitions in these very words, *for his mercy endures for ever*: See also our Saviours practise, *Matth.* 26. praying three times the very same words, *Father if it be possible let this cup passe from me*: Can you teach *David* and our Saviour? will you charge them with vaine repetitions? He that is wise in his owne conceit is a foole; but take heed, pride goeth before a fall, and an high mind before destruction. You have great need to say one part of the *Letany*, *from all blindnesse of heart, from pride, vaine glory,*

and hypocrisie, from envy hatred and malice, and all uncharitablenesse, &c. Lookt I beseech you to an extemporary prayer of one of your own tub, how many vaine and impious Tautologes have you there, a dozen expressions of one thing; crying good Lord, mercifull Father, gracious Lord, &c. three times in a breath to stop a gap, and keep his tongue in play, propharing the name and attributes of God, to fill up his nonsence, and helpe out his dull invention. Lastly tell me, do you ever thinke to come to heaven by conjuring? Can you come thither without the Incarnation, Nativity, Circumcision, Temptation and Agony, the death and buriall, the glorious Resurrection and Assention of Christ? This it is to cast most glorious pearles before Swine, who will be sure to trample them in the mire. You need no other answer but the whipping post or gallowes, that dare defame the mysteries of Salvation. But though you will call it conjuring, it shall ever bee the chiefe part of my publike devotions, and I will adde this to my private *Letany*.

From the numerous generation of Smells.
From viperous tub Preachers and their giddy Sects,
From those who holy prayers of our Church neglect,
Good Lord deliver us.

And now Sir, having in some measure layed open the invalidity of your arguments, I crave leave a little to rub you by the elbow for your jeering; I perceive you are a carnall man fleshly minded, you love Mutton well, but cannot away with Porridge: Take heed you do not surfet your selfe, too much of your straight-laced Mutton it will bring you to a Consumption, and then good Porridge well seasoned and well boyled, will prove the best nourishing dyet to restore your decayed nature.

You are I perceive a Cook too, but no ordinary Cook, for you never would dresse Porridge.

One of the *Popes* fat Cooks you are not, for they put poyson in the Porridge, You are then a leane Cook, & for your leanesse you may thank your *Mutton*. You are no ignorant Cook, but one that is well experienced, one that knowes the whore of *Babilon* well, and cannot abide her, because shee is out of your reach. For if shee were neare you would be one of her best customers, having as good a desire to the flesh as the best. Experience is gained by old age, so it seems you are an old Cook; and then (if the name be the image of a thing) you are a Cook-old. But will nothing down with you but *Mutton*, sure your stomach is very strong. Your extemporary exercises are but raw meats full of crudities, but you know where to vent them, and no carryon will kill an old Crow. The learned Clergy you wil not heare, for they

are

are *Baals* Priests you say. But you love strong backed men, as [illegible] and Carmen, inspired Weavers, and Sooth-saying Cobblers, such as were *Ieroboams* Priests made of the lowest of the people. I see you hope to gaine something by their Calves. But to return to the matter in hand, and come to a Conclusion; since I perceive you are such a great *Mutton* monger, pray what part of the *Mutton* shall I assigne. If I allot you the head, you may thinke I account you a Sheepe-head. (blow your Rams Horne, and assemble your tribe to a consultation.) If the neck, you will say, I jeere your stiffe neckednesse. The shoulder you are content to keep for Fryday nights supper, with the helpe of a good fat Coney for your digestion. The breast and loynes you and your Brethren love dearely. But above all, I commend unto you the rumpe, and least you should blend legs with your sisters, I will take the legs and begone.

Psalm. 78.30,31.

They were not estranged of their lusts. But while their meat was yet in their mouths, The wrath of God came upon them, and slew the fattest of them and smote down the chosen men of Israel.

Levit. 19.27.

You shall not round the corners of your heads, neither shalt thou marre the corners of thy beard.

FINIS.



THE OATH

Of the

Kings of England,

Taken out of the Parliament Rolle,

1. *H.* 4. *N.* 17.

Likewise

PROPOSITIONS

Made by both Houses of Parliament, to the Kings Majesty, for a Reconciliation of the differences betweene his Majesty, and the said Houses.

Die Veneris 2. die Junii, 1642.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that these Propositions shall be forthwith printed and published.

Jo. Brooke Cleric. Parliamentorum.

Whereunto is annexed two Orders of Parliament, the one concerning the Jewels of the Crowne: The other for the speedy returne of the Members of the Honourable House of Commons by the 16. of this Moneth of June, 1642.

Printed at London for *T. Bates* and *F. Coules*, June 4. 1642.

THE OATH

of the

King of England,

Taken out of the Parliament Rolle,

and

PROPOSITIONS

Made by both Houses of Parliament, to the

King, very lately, for a Reconciliation of the diffe-

rences between him and

his People.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled,

That the said Propositions be forthwith printed and published.

Henry Elsynge Cler. Parl. D. Com.

Printed at London for T. Bates and E. Gyles,

Jan. 4. 1642.

The Oath of the Kings of ENGLAND, taken out of the Parliament Roll, 1. H. 4. N. 17.

The forme of the Oath wont and accustomed to be taken upon their Coronation.

YOu shall keepe the Church of God, the Clergy and people, entirely in peace and concord in God, according to your power,

He shall answer, I will keepe them.

You shall cause equall and right justice in all your judgements and discretion, in mercy and truth, according to your power,

He shall answer, I will doe it.

You shall grant just Lawes and Customes to be kept, and you shall promise that those shall bee protected by you, and to the honour of God to bee strengthened, which the common people shall chuse, according to your power.

He shall answer, I grant and promise it.

Our Majesties most humble and faithfull Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament [illegible] and this Kingdome: And being very sensible of the great distractions and distempers, and of the imminent dangers and calamities which these distractions and distempers are like to bring upon your Majesty and your Subjects; All which have proceeded from the subtill insinuations, mischievous practices, and evill counsels of men disaffected to Gods true Religion, your Majesties honour and safety, and the publicke peace and prosperity of your people. After serious consideration of the causes of those evill chiefes, doe in all humility and sincerity present to your Majesty their most dutifull petition and advice. That out of your Princely wisdome for the establishing your owne honour and safety, and gracious tendernesse of the welfare and security of your [illegible] and [illegible] us, you will be pleased to grant and accept these their humble desires and propositions, as [illegible] and effectuall meanes, through blessing, of removing those jealousies and differences which have fallen betwixt you and your people, and procuring both your Majesty and them a constant course of honour, peace and happinesse.

1. That the Lords and others of your Majesties privie Councell, and such great Officers and Ministers of State, either at home or beyond the Seas, may be put from your privie Councell, and from those Offices and imployments, according to such [illegible] be approved of by both Houses of Parliament. And that the persons put into the places and imployments of those that are removed, may be approved of by both Houses of Parliament: And that all privie Councellors shall take an Oath for the due execution of their places in such forme as shall be agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament.

2. That the great affaires of this Kingdome may not be concluded or transacted by the advice of private Counsell, by any [illegible] Counsellors; but that such matters as concerne the publicke, and are proper to be [illegible] Court of Parliament, which is your Majesties great and supreame Councell, may be debated, resolved, and transacted onely in Parliament, and not elsewhere. And such [illegible] doubting or arguing to the contrary, shall be referred to the censure and judgement of Parliament; And such other matters of State as are proper for your Majesties privie Councell, shall be debated and concluded by such of the Nobility and others, as shall from time to time bee chosen for that

place by approbation of both Houses of Parliament; That the Princes
being of the age of twenty years, the Bishops of [illegible] be preferr
for [illegible] Counsell, to be assistants of the Nobility in the Councell
from the Royall authority, in the first nomination whereof, and vacancies
of the rest, the Councell of [illegible] shall have their turn. And that
your Councell, may be [illegible] consisting of [illegible]
twenty five persons under fifteen, that if any Councellors place happen to
be void in the recess of Parliament, it shall not be supplied without
the allowance of the major part of the Councell, which choice shall be con-
firmed at the next sitting of the Parliament, [illegible]

4. That the Lord high Steward of England, Lord high Constable,
Lord Marshall, the Lord Keeper of the great Seale, Lord Treasurer,
Lord privie Seale, Earle Marshall, both Admirall, Warden of the Cinque
Ports, the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Ma-
ster of the Wards, Secretaries of State, two chief Justices, and Chiefe
Baron, may be specified in Act of Parliament to be nominated by the
Councell, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice
of Councellors. And that the government and education of the
Kings Children till they be married, shall be approved of by both
Houses of Parliament; And in the Intervalls of Parliament, by the assent
of the major part of the Councell, in such manner as is before exprest in
the choice of Councellors. And that all such servants as are now about
them, against whom both Houses shall have any just exception, shall be
removed.

5. That no Marriage shall be concluded or treated for any of the Kings
Children with any forraigne Prince, or other person whatsoever a-
broad, or in this Realme, without the assent of Parliament, under the penal-
ty of a Premunire to such as shall procure, conclude, or treate any Marriage
as aforesaid. And that the said penalty shall not be pardoned or dispen-
ced with, but by the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

6 That the Laws in force against Iesuites, Priests, and Popish Recu-
sants, be strictly put in execution, without any toleration or dispensation
to the contrary. And that such further effectuall course may be enacted, by
authority of Parliament, to disable them from making any disturbance in
the State, or else [illegible]

7. That the votes of Popish Lords in the House of Peeres may be ta-
ken away, so long as they continue Papists, unless his Majesty shall
consent to the bill, as shall be done for the education of the children

of Papists by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion.

8. That your Majesty will bee pleased to consent that such a reformation be made of the Church government, and Liturgy, as both Houses of Parliament shall advise, wherein they intend to have consultations with Divines as is expressed in their Declaration to that purpose. And that your Majesty will contribute your best assistance to them, for the raising of a sufficient maintenance for preaching Ministers through the Kingdome. And that your Majesty will bee pleased to give your consent to Laws, for the taking away of innovations, and superstition, and of pluralities, and against scandalous Ministers.

9. That your Majesty will bee pleased to rest satisfied with that course that the Lords and Commons have appointed for ordering the Militia, untill the same shall be further settled by a bill, And that your Majesty will recall your Declarations, and Proclamations against the Ordinance made by the Lords and Commons concerning it.

10. That such members of either House of Parliament, as have during this present Parliament beene put out of any place and office, may either be restored to that place and office, or otherwise have satisfaction for the same upon the petition of that house whereof he or they are members.

11. That all Privie Councellors and Judges, may take an oath, the forme whereof to be agreed on and setled by Act of Parliament, for the maintaining of the petition of Right, and of certaine Statutes made by this Parliament which shall be mentioned by both Houses of Parliament. And that an inquiry of all the breaches and violations of these Lawes may be given in charge, by the Justices of the Kings Bench every Terme, and by the Judges of Assize in their Circuits, and Justices of Peace at the Sessions, to be presented and punished according to Law.

12. That all the Judges and all Officers placed by approbation of both Houses of Parliament, may hold their places *Quam diu bene se gesserint.*

13. That the justice of Parliament may passe upon all delinquents whether they bee within the Kingdome, or fled out of it. And that all persons cited by either House of Parliament may appeare and abide the censure of Parliament.

14. That the generall pardon offered by your Majesty may be granted with such exceptions as shall bee advised by both Houses of Parliament.

15. That the Forts and Castles of this Kingdome may be put under the command and custody of such persons as your Majesty shall appoint with the approbation of your Parliament. And in the Intervals of Parliament with the approbation of the major part of the Councell in such manner

ner

ner as is before expressed in the choice of Councellors.

16. That the extraordinary Guardes and Military forces now attending your Majestie may be removed and discharged. And that for the future you will raise no such guards or extraordinary forces, but according to law, in case of actuall rebellion or invasion.

17. That your Majesty will be pleased to enter into a more strict alliance with the States of the united Provinces and other neighbour Princes & States of the Protestant Religion for the defence and maintenance thereof against all designes and attempts of the Pope and his adherents to subvert and suppresse it, whereby your Majesty will obtain a great accesse of strength and reputation, and your subjects be much encouraged and enabled in a Parliamentary way for your aide and assistance, in restoring your royall Sister, and the Princely Issue, to those dignities and dominions which belong unto them, and relieving the other distressed Protestant Princes, who have suffered in the same cause.

18. That your Majesty will be pleased by Act of Parliament, to cleere the Lord *Kimbolton*, and the five members of the House of Commons, in such manner, that future Parliaments may be secured from the Consequence of that evill President.

19. That your Majesty will vouchsafe graciously pleased to passe a Bill for restraining Peeres made hereafter from sitting or voting in Parliament, unlesse they be admitted thereunto with the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

And these our humble desires being granted by your Majesty, we shall forthwith apply our selves to regulate your present revenue in such sort as may be for your best advantage, and likewise to settle such an ordinary and constant increase of it, as shall be sufficient to support your Royall dignity in honor and plenty, beyond the proportion of any former grants of the Subjects of this Kingdome, to your Majesties Royall Predecessors. We shall likewise put the Town of Hull into such hands as your Majesty shall appoint with the consent and approbation of Parliament, and deliver up a full accompt of all the Magazine; and cheerfully imploy the uttermost of our power and endevour, in the reall expression and performance of our most dutifull and loyall affections, to the preserving and maintaining the Royall Honour, Greatnesse and safety of your Majesty and your Posterity.

Die

Die Iovis 2. Iunii, 1642.

WHereas it doth appeare to the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, that the King seduced by wicked Counsell, doth intend to leave the Parliament; and whereas information hath been given, that the Jewels of the Crown (which by the law of the Land ought not to be alienated) are either pawned or sold in Amsterdam, or some other parts beyond the Seas, and that very great summs of money provided to be returned to Yorke, or to some of his Majesties Ports or agents for his Majesties use: and whereas it is more then probable, that this great provision of moneyes in such an extraordinary way, is made for some intended war, and thereby to bring the whole Kingdom into utter ruine and combustion. It is therefore declared by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, whosoever hath beene, or shall be an actor in the selling or pawning of any of the Jewels of the Crown, or hath, or shall pay, send, or bring any money in specie into this Kingdome for, or upon any of those Jewels; or who accept, receive, or shall accept of any Bill from beyond the Seas, for the payment of any summe of money for, or upon any of those Jewels, and shall passe any such according to such Bill, after notice of this Order, without acquainting the House with the receipt of such Bill before he accept the same, Or if he have already accepted any such Bill, before the acceptance thereof before the payment of the money, every such person shall be held and accounted a promoter of this intended war, an enemy to the State, and ought to give satisfaction for this publique damage out of his owne estate.

H: Elsynge Cler: Parl: D: Com.

Die Iovis 2 Iunii, 1642.

IT is this day ordered by the Commons now assembled in Parliament, that the several Members of this House, doe forthwith give their attendance upon the publique service of this Commonwealth with which they are entrusted by this Commission. And the Sheriffs of the several Counties of this Kingdome of England and Dominion of Wales are required to give notice of this Ordinance to such Members of the House of Commons as are within their respective Counties, and speedily to make returne of such their doings, unto the Clerke of this House. And all such as shall not make their personall appearance by the fourteenth of this instant June, in the House of Commons, shall each one forfeit the summe of two hundred pounds to be disposed of to the use of the Army in Ireland. And moreover such further censure and punishment as the said House shall thinke fit for so great a neglect of their duty in a time that so necessarily requires their assistance.

Provided alwayes, That all such as are specially imployed by this House, are to remaine in such imployments, untill they shall have particular Directions for their returne.

Ordered that it be forthwith printed. H: Elsynge Clerr: Parl: D: Com.

FINIS.

K. Mason 24

The English and Scottish Protestants happy Tryumph over the Rebels in *IRELAND*.

Declaring the prosperity of the Protestant Party, and the disastrous Proceedings of the adverse Irish Rebellion.

In the besiege of *Wicklow*.		Sergeant Major *Bromlns*.
The Earle of *Kildare*	Slew	Captaine *Thesby*.
And the Lord *Thomond*.		Captaine *Lethon*.
		The Lord *Plunket* wounded in the left Legg.

In the Siege of *Colerane*.

The Earle of *Betremore*		The Lord *Freeman*
The Lord *Brabeston*,	Slew	and 1300 more Rebels.
And E. of *Eastmeath*.		The L. *Scane* being taken prisoner

In the besiege of *Kingsale*,

The Earle of *Fingale*	By the Earle of *Ormond*.
The Lord *Denbengen*.	The Lord *Pore*
The Lord *Astry*.	Earle of *Valentia*.
were overthrowne,	Earle of *Kildare*.

Being sent in a Letter from *Robert Mason* in *Wicklow*, to *William Francis* in *London*, and brought over by the last Post on Wednesday last, being the 1. of *June*, 1642.

Together with an Order from both Houses of Parliament concerning my Lord *Howard*, and Ordered to be Printed. *John Browne*, Cler. Parl.

London, Printed for *J. Horton*, 1642. *June* 4.

The English and Scot-

tish Protestants happy Triumph o-

ver the Rebels in IRELAND.

Declaring the prosperity of the Protestants there, and the diabolick Proceedings of the adverse Irish Rebellion.

In the siege of Drogheda.

The Earle of Ormond. The Lord Preston.
The Lord Dunsley. Slew and 300 more Rebels.
And 8. of Prisoners. Their Arms being taken away.

In the seidge of Kinsale.

The Earle of Ormonde. By the Earle of Ormond.
The Lord Dunsley. The Lord T...
The Lord Aubry. Earle of K...
were overthrowne. Earle of K...

Being sent in a Letter from Sir Richard ... to ... Parliament, the 21. of October, 1642.

Together with Orders from both Houses of Parliament concerning my Lord Mayor, and Ordered to be Printed.

London, Printed for J. Horton, 1642.

The *English* and *Scottish* Triumph over the Rebels in *Ireland*, being sent in a Letter from *Rob. Mason* of *Wicklow* to *William Francis* in *London*.

Sir,



confesse I have beene silent these many Weeks in not writing unto you the conditionall estate of this Kingdome, but the reason of my silence was this, that I was once intended to have seene you rather in presence there in *England* then to write to you in absence, for the Rebels had in siege us two daies, which might beget in us a sufficient suspition of danger

danger, but we defended our selves very strongly all that time, there being a continuall vigilia appointed, And we sent in the meane time private intelligence to the Earle of *Kildare*, who had pitched his Tents neere *Archlow*, and to the Lord of *Thomond*, neare *Garmaston*, who immediately prepared their Forces and assisted us; there was at the first skirmish some effusion of blood on both sides, and the Lord *Plunket* on the Rebels side had his left Leg; beaten off, and Captaine *Thoseby*, Captain *Lothon* and Sergeant Major *Bromlus* were all slain on their part, whereupon the Souldiers began to recant but being closely followed they fled, and being pursued by the Earle of *Kildare* and the Lord *Thomond*, there were at least seven hundred slaine, the other escaped by flight.

Thus we were delivered from the ravenous intents of those bloody Cannibals the next day, there was a publicke thanksgiving to Almighty God for our deliverance.

There

There were many other terrible Combats between the *English* and the *Irish*, but of late the Protestants have been very Victorious. I will describe the relation of two famous Battails betweene them, that are most memmorable.

Colerane was taken by the Rebels, five Weeks since, and they held it in possession three Weeks and upwards, most inhumanly killing the Protestants, stripping many naked both men and women, and turned them into the fields, whipping them cruelly, but the Earle of *Barramore* and Lord *Brabeston*, Earle of *Est-meath*, united their Forces and came with Fifteene hundred men against the Rebels in *Colerane*, but the first day there was slaine above a thousand Rebels, and the Lord *Brabeston* perceiving them almost tired, followed them very close, and at the first meeting slew the Lord *Freeman* and tooke the Lord *Scane* prisner, then the other fled and left the towne, which is now in the possession of the Protestants.

The last Fight betweene the Protestants and Rebels was at *Kingsale*, the Earle *Pingale*, the Lord *Dunbowne*, and the Lord *Astry*, came with foure thousand against it and had almost (as I might say) taken *Kingsale*, but they did not possesse it long for the Earle of *Ormond*, the Lord *Power* Earle of *Valentia*, and the Earle of *Kildare*, came with three thousand five hundred men, and regained what the other had taken beating them with great violence from the Towne and slew the Lord *Dunbowne* Captaine *Humphry*, and Sir *Patricke Cocksquire*, besides eighteene hundred more, that were slaine by the Protestant party.

Sr, you see how God fighteth for his children, and I hope by his divine providence and all conquering power, we shall overcome them all suddenly, but they have done unknowne mischiefe to our Country, and men that formerly lived in famous reputation, and of great ability are extreamly impoverished by them, they have taken maney Townes, and the Protestants also

have taken many townes from them, but the Citty of *Galway* is beſieged with nigh 1700. men, and in danger to be taken, but withall we heare that the Earle of *Ormond*, and the Earle of *Barramore*, are in preparation to come againſt them.

We have theſe ſtrong Pillars of the Proteſtant Army.

The Lord *Ormond* } Earle of *Eaſt-meath*,
The Lord *Poore*, } Earle of *Barramore*,
Earle of *Valentia*, } Earle of *Kildare*,
The Lord *Brabeſton*, } The Lord *Thomond*,

theſe are thoſe that have ſtrongly and couragiouſly reſiſted the Rebels, otherwiſe *Ireland* had beene ſubdued long ago, but theſe have magnanimouſly oppoſed them, the Lord *Antrim* is ſlaine by the Rebels, who was a Newtrall. the Lord *Macquire* is taken priſner, and the lord *Scane* alſo by the Proteſtants, many other remarkeable paſsages I could relate unto you, but partly time and convenience doe not give me leave, and partly I beleeve you have heard of them already, but I hope I ſhall have

greater

greater opportunity to send you shortly very ioyfull and delectable Newes for I see that God doth greately prosper the proceedings of the Protestants, and confoundeth the strength of his and our Enemies, for which wee praise and Magnifie his holy and omnipotent Name, and doe hearely beseech him in our supplications, that he would grant us Peace in this World, and eternall happinesse in the World to come.

Your Friend in all things to his power, *Robert Maxe.*

From *Wicklow, May,* 26. 1642.

IT is Ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in this present Parliament, that the Lord *Howard* of *Escrick* shall attend his Majesty and present to be read to him.

John Browne Cler. Parl.

FINIS.

N

S

DISC
take

With t

Mr. C
Mr. H
Willi
Georg
Thom
Henry

Jun



STRANGE NEWES FROM STAFFORD-SHIRE.

OF THE

DISCOVERY OF MANY PAPISTS

taken and apprehended and examined before Justice *Bidulph*.

With the Names of the chiefest of them, being discovered by a Shepheard.

Mr. Cristopher Lownes.
Mr. Hugh Mosse.
William Gravenor.
George Gatewell.
Thomas Moore.
Henry Pymrose.
Mr. Caps and his wife Elenor.
Henry Turner.
William Ball.
Edward Payne.

The Names of their two Jesuites.
John Kilsole and *Arthur Roeley.*

Hen. Elsing. Cler. Parl.

LONDON,
Jun. 4. Printed for *J. Tomson*, and *A. Coe.* 1642.

Die Jovis 2. Junii, 1642.

WHereas it doth appeare to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the King, ſeduced by wicked by wicked Counſell, doth intend to levie warre againſt his Parliament: And whereas Information hath been given, That the Iewels of the Crowne (which by the Law of the Land ought not to be alienated) are either pawned or ſold in *Amſterdam*, or ſome other parts beyond the Seas, and thereby great ſums of Money provided to be returned to *York* or to ſome of his Maieſties Servants or Agents for his Maieſties uſe: And whereas 'tis more then probable, That this great Proviſion of Monies in ſuch an extraordinary way, is to maintain this intended warre, and thereby to bring the whole Kingdome into utter ruine and combuſtion. It is therefore declared by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That whoſoever hath beene, or ſhall be an Actor in the ſelling or pawning of any of the Iewels of the Crowne, or hath, or ſhall pay, lend, ſend, or bring any Money in *Specie* into this Kingdom, for, or upon any of thoſe Iewels; Or whoſoeoever hath, or ſhall accept of any Bill from beyond the Seas, for the payment of any ſum of Money for, or upon any of thoſe Iewels, and ſhall paſſe any ſum according to ſuch Bill, after notice of this Order, without acquainting this Houſe with the receipt of ſuch Bill, before he accept the ſame; Or if he have already accepted any ſuch Money, Every ſuch perſon ſhall be held and accounted a promoter of this intended Warre, an enemy to the State, and ought to give ſatisfaction for this publique dammage out of His own Eſtate.

H: Elſynge Cler: Parl: D, Com

Newes from Staffordſhire *of a ſtrange diſcovery of many Papiſts.*

AT a place neer the common great road betwixt *London* and *Manchester* in *Staffordſhire*, is a very high Hill, called *Moule Cop* in the Engliſh Maps, but in the old *Saxon* Language *Hiperbolian Talke*, which is a large Hill in *Engliſh*, as *talke* of the Hill which ſignifies a buſh on the Hill: Now this *Moule Cop* Hill is a vaſt ſublime place very mountanous and devious no common paſſage over it, but what Carriages have happened to come thither for Milſtones, which have formerly been gotten there, ſerving all thoſe parts with Milſtones and grinding ſtones, which now are not there not there to be gotten, by reaſon two Lords of that ſoyle are at

ſtrife and variance there, about conteſting for the Seigniory.

This Hill is foure or five miles from the top to the bottome, and on the top is a large Plain, wherin thoſe Milſtones have beene gotten out; And the place where the great Querries were, are in depth in the hill top foureſcore yards, and in length and latitude a hundred yards round each way; And over the top of that Hill goeth a ſtraight line which divideth *Staffordſhire* and *Cheſhire* aſunder.

In this devious deſart place divers Papiſts have met at their Popiſh Maſſe and other common prayers in Latin; And as it is knowne now, they have during this Parliament by ſtealth frequented this place, and ſome other like Deſarts (which are common in that Countrey) by reaſon (as they confeſſed before Juſtice *Bidulph* upon their ſeverall Examinati-

nations) that the Parliament putting the Lawes in execution againſt them, and impoſing the poll Bil double upon them they ſay they may be compared to the Children of *Iſrael*, who were forced by their Taskmaſters both to ſeek ſtraw and yet to make their whole tale of Bricks to the full, for ſeeing they had their land charged before by former Statutes to the value of the third part, & yet to pay the poll Bill double to any Proteſtant in their degrees; and that they did uſe that place to ſave their *Lands*, becauſe of the Statute that makes them Traytors frr entertaining of Jeſuites within their houſes (and ſo they ſay they doe that to avoid that premunire) averring they may be as lawfully excuſed in that as any of the ſeparatiſts about *London* or the welſh preaching in Woods, as it is commonly knowne; declaring further, that if they had power as they have will, they would fight for a tolleration in their Reli-

gion

Religion, as they ſay, other Kings allow Proteſtants (*Spain* only excepted.) And they much inveigh againſt the Parliament for the making of the late Proteſtation, and ſay it is worſe then the *Scots* Covenant, for it hath divided the Kings Subjects in *Ireland*, and ſo it might doe them, had they not been diſarmed within theſe two yeers, and uttering divers ſuch like words: To whom Juſtice *Bidulph* replyed, I am much ſorry for you (all Countrymen) in two reſpects; firſt that you ſhould be ſo led away in blindneſſe, for your Religion: Secondly, that you obey not the Lawes of the Realme, being brought before me in ſo great a number: All the favor I can ſhew you, is this, That you ſhall ſome of you have baile, as many as can obtain Sabſedy baile, to appeare the next Quarter Seſſions before the Bench, holden under our gracious Soveraigne Lord K. *Charles*, by the Grace of God, King of *England*, &c. And for you who have not that Baile, I muſt commit you to Priſon, then and there to anſwer

their

their miſdemeanors objected againſt you and to have ſentence there by his Majeſties Commiſſioners of the peace, for your offences.

To the Keeper of his Majeſties Goale at Stafford.

I ſend you here with all the bodies, whoſe names are here-under written, who are brought before mee for aſſembling themſelves together in an unlawfull way, contrary to his Majeſties Laws, and are convict Recuſants by the Lawes of the Realme, commanding you in his Majeſties Name to take them into ſafe Cuſtody, and there to remaine till they ſhall be delivered thence by due courſe of Law, and this ſhall be your ſufficient warrant in this behalfe.

The manner of their Apprehenſion was by a certaine poore man, that had loſt ſome ſheepe, who wandring up and downe two or three dayes to find them, he hearing the tinkling of a Bell, went towards that place and lookt about him, and eſpied a great number of people knee-

kneeling downe, and he obſerved one a-bove the reſt, which he conceived to bee their Miniſter, ſtanding up towards an Altar, offering up his hands and croſſing himſelfe, and all the people did the like, and knocked themſelves on the breaſt, ſpeaking words in a ſtrange language, and being much agaſt to ſee ſuch a ſtrange ſight, ran and informed the Towns therabonts, who came well armed and apprehended moſt of them, the names are as followeth:

Mr. Chriſtopher Lownes, Mr. Hugh Moſe William Gravenor, George Gatewel, Thomas Moore, Henry Pymroſe, Mr. Caps and his wife Elinor, Henry Turner, William Ball, Edward Payne, and the names of their two Jeſuites, *John Kirkſoule, Arthur Roely.*

FINIS.

26.

GOOD COVRAGE DISCOVERED, AND ENCOVRAGED:

IN

A SERMON preached before the Commanders of the Military Forces, of the Renowned Citie of *London*.

In the Parish Church of Great S^t. *Helens*. *May* the 17. 1642.

By SIMEON ASH, Preacher in London.

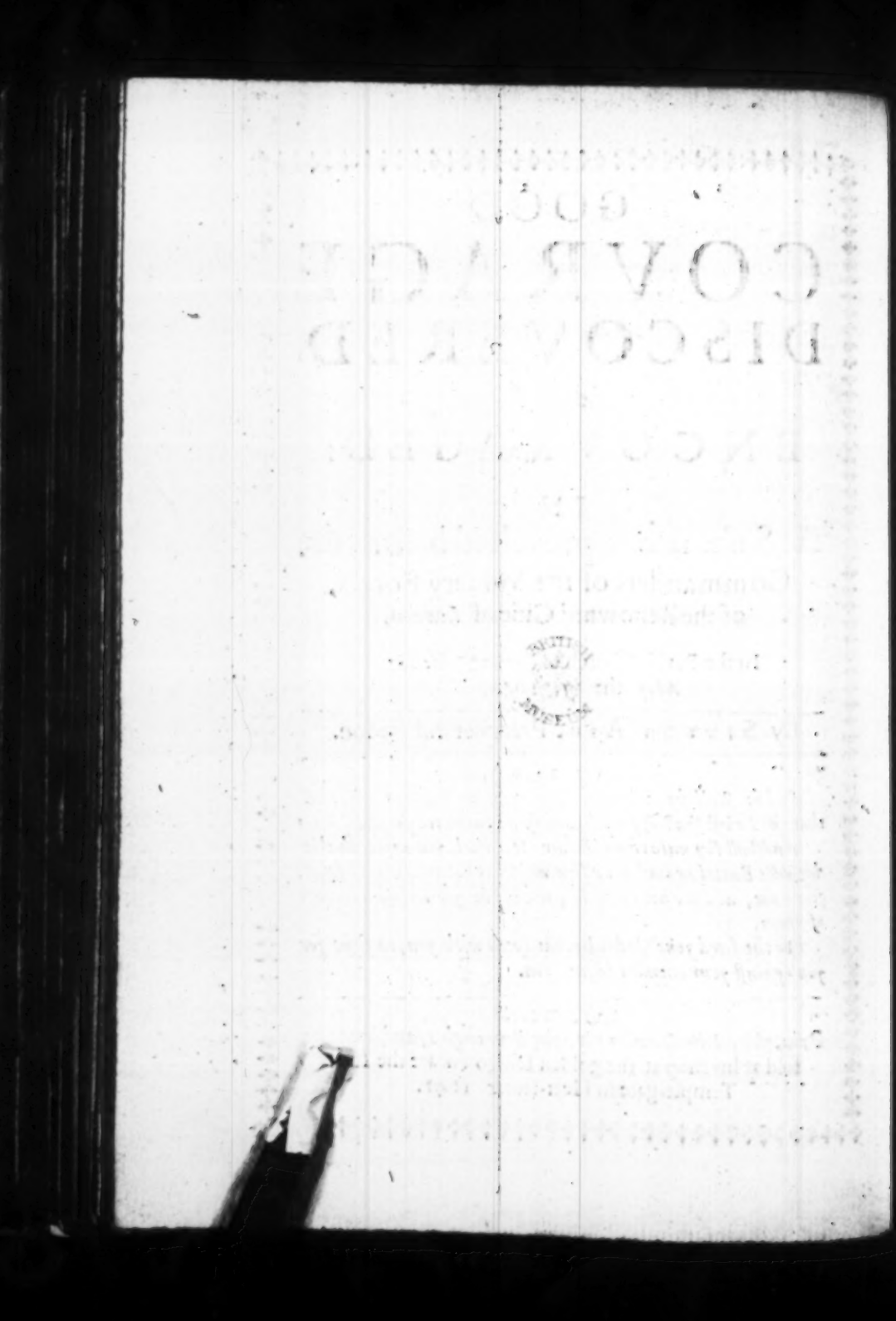
DEVT. 20. 2, 3, 4.

And it shall be, when yee are come nigh unto the Battell that the Priest shall approach, and speake unto the people.

And shall say unto them, Heare O Israel, you approach this day unto Battel against your Enemies: Let not your hearts faint, feare not, and doe not tremble, neither be yee terrified because of them.

For the Lord your God is he that goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies, to save you.

LONDON.
Printed by *John Dawson* for *John Burroughs*, and are to be sold at his shop at the golden Dragon neare the Inner Temple-gate in Fleet-street. 1642.



TO

THE RIGHT WORSHIPFVLL,

the Aldermen, and Commoners,

unto whom the *Militia* of the Citie of *London* is committed, the Serjeant Major Generall, the Colonels, the Lieutenant Colonels, Serjeant Majors, Captaines, and other officers of the trained Bands of the said *Citie*.

Right Worshipfull,



Ornelius, *Centurion of the Italian Band is thus commended by the Holy Ghost, that* hee was a devout man, and one that feared God. *And I may report thus much to your honour and to move others to make imitation; that you have begun, and hitherto carried on your* Martiall *affairs religiously. For having put the City into a posture of defence; before the execution of the* Militia; *you joyntly sought God by Prayer for good successe.*

The Lord heard your Prayers, for you went forth, and returned home, without the leaſt touch of danger to your ſelves, or your Companies. This remarkeable Providence called you againe together, to praiſe the God of ſalvations, the God of your mercies.

Hereupon you were pleaſed to appoint me (very unworthy) to aſſiſt you in the ſervice of Thankeſgiving: A ſervice not unſeemly for the Hoaſt of Heaven.

This Sermon, which upon that occaſion I preached, through the Conſtructions of your Love found ſuch acceptance, that you commanded it to come abroad to doe you further ſervice.

And ſeeing you gave it good entertainment, as it was firſt preſented, it makes bold to waite upon you without change of habit, expecting your Protection.

Although I ſomewhat ſuſpect that ſundry amplifications in the Sermon which affected the Auditors, may not be ſo pleaſing to the Iudicious Reader, yet your deſires to have it printed, as it was preached, makes me to runne that adventure.

The Lord of Hoſts guide, guard, and encourage you in all your good undertakings for peace and truth, and make you carefull to put Chriſtian references upon all your ſervices, for the honour and ſafety of our King, the welfare of his Kingdomes, and the continued Proſperity of this famous Citie. This your prudent and pious perſeverance in the worke ſo well begun, will draw forth many prayſes to God, many prayers for you, and much rejoycing in the hearts of all them, who ſincerely affect you; of which number, I beſeech you account him one who is

Your Servant, in, and for Chriſt,

SIMEON ASH.

GOOD COURAGE DISCOVERED, AND INCOVRAGED.

PSAL. 31. 24.

Be of good Courage.

RIght worshipfull, and worthy Gentlemen, (whose desires, and whose service of thanksgiving, I am now attending,) I hope you are come hither with an intention;

First, to honour God for preservation enjoyed, through his providence, to whom you prayed. My Text lookes back unto such a businesse; *The Lord preserveth the faithfull*; therefore let Verse 23.

the faithfull upon such experiences in way of prayse, in way of requitall learne to bee of good courage.

Secondly, I believe you are come together in expectation for the future, to receive further favours from the God of your present prayses; and my Text lookes forward to that, *Bee of good courage, and hee shall strengthen thine heart, and wait I say on the Lord.*

My Text is short, the words in our translation are not many, in the originall, there is but one word, חִזְקוּ, The Septuagint renders the Hebrew word, ἀνδρίζεσθε, Quit your selves like men; *Viriliter agite*, play the men, *Roboramini*, bee yee strong.

The Counsell here given is for all Christians, at all times needfull, but for you, and at this time, most seasonable.

Bee yee couragious. First, The Counsellour was, a Worthy, a Souldier, a Warriour, a Commander, a King: *David*, as the title tels you, Hee cals for courage.

Secondly, The Persons counselled, they are Saints, faithfull ones: O yee Saints love him, his manner is by his speciall providence to preserve you; Therefore bee yee of good courage. The point lies faire, which I conceive pertinent, and now purpose to prosecute.

Doctr. *Gods people must bee of good courage.*

I shall briefly suggest the Scriptures proofe, in a threefold gradation, wherein good courage is called for:

First, Saint *Paul* an Apostle with Apostolicall authority, perswades to it; 2 *Cor.* 16. 13. *Quit your like men.*

Secondly, *Iehoshaphat* a King, with regall authority commands it, 2 *Chron.* 19. *ult. Deale courageously.*

Thirdly, The great God of Heaven and Earth, putting himselfe under a warlike notion, as the Lord Generall of all the forces in the World, the Lord of *Hosts*. He peremptorily presseth it; *Haggai.* 2. 4. *Now bee strong O Zorobabel saith the Lord, and bee strong O Ioshua, the Sonne of Iozedek the High Priest, and bee strong the people of the Land saith*

the

the Lord, and worke, for I am with you saith the Lord of Hosts.

Three things there be, that I shall speake to, in the prosecution of this point.

First, The explication of the vertue, the grace called for, wherein I will endeavour to discover what this courage is.

Secondly, The confirmation of this truth by reasons, from which this Doctrine may undeniably bee concluded, and by which you may all bee fully convinced, that there is aboundant cause, why all Gods people should bee courageous.

Thirdly, The application of all, by way of use, that my Sermon may be the more serviceable.

A Description of good Courage.

Christian courage may thus bee described, It is the undaunted audacity of a sanctified heart in adventuring upon difficulties, and undergoing hardships for a good cause upon the call of God.

There are six things considerable in the description that I have given, which I will particularly point at, and prove.

First, the *Genus*, the common nature of it: it is an undaunted audacity. This Animosity (as some phrase it,) it is common both unto men, and to some brutes. The Lion, *Prov.* 30. 30. is said, to bee *the strongest among beasts, that turneth not away from any.*

And there is an elegant description of the warre horse, in regard of boldnesse, *Job* 39. 19. &c. *Hast thou given the horse strength? hast thou cloathed his neck with thunder? Canst thou make him afraid as a grasshopper? the glory of his nostrils is terrible, hee paweth in the valley, and rejoyceth in his strength, hee goeth out to meet the armed men. He mocketh at feare, and is not affrighted, neither turneth he back from the sword. The Quiver rattleth against him, the glittering speare and the shield, hee swalloweth the ground with fiercenesse and rage, neither believeth hee, that it is the sound of the Trumpet.*

And this boldnesse that is in bruits, it is spoken of, as a piece of this same courage that God is pleased to give to men; *Ezek.* 3. 9. this is the Lords promise. *As an Adamant, harder then the flint, have I made thy forehead.*

The word *Harder*, is the same in the Hebrew, that is here in my Text, *Fortiorem petra*; The Rock, that is not afraid of any weather, Summer, or Winter, Sunne, and Showres, Heat, and Cold, Frost, and Snow, it blusheth not, shrinketh not, it changeth not in's complexion, it is still the same; Such alike thing is courage, in the common nature of it.

Secondly, Consider the subject, it is the Heart, the Castle where Courage commands, and exerciseth Military Discipline; (shall I so say,) its within the bosome, it is the Soule of a valiant Souldier.

Some conceive, our *English* word Courage, to bee derived from *Cordis actio*, the very acting of the heart.

A valiant man is described, 2 *Sam.* 17. 10. for to bee a man, whose heart, is as the heart of a Lyon. And sometime, the originall translated, Couragious, as *Amos* 2. 16. may most properly bee rendred, *a Man of heart.*

Beloved, valour doth not consist in a piercing eye, in a terrible looke, in bigge words, but it consists in the mettall, the vigour that is within the bosome. Sometimes, a Coward may dwell at the signe of a roaring voyce, and of a sterne countenance: whereas true fortitude may bee found within his breast, whose outward deportment promiseth little, or nothing in that kind.

Thirdly, Note the qualification of this same subject; I said a sanctified heart: for I am not now speaking of fortitude, as a morall vertue, whereof Heathens, that have not God, are capable; and for which many among them, that are not Christians, have beene worthily commended.

But I am now discoursing of Courage, as a vertue Theologicall, as a gracious qualification, put upon the people of

of God by speciall covenant. And there are three things that doe characterize it, and which doe distinguish it from the morall vertue of fortitude.

The Roote, *whence it ariseth;*
The Rule, *whereby it is directed;*
The End, *to which it is referred.*

The Roote, whence it riseth, is love to God; All the Saints of God that love the Lord, bee of good Courage. The love of Christ constraineth mee to make these bold, and brave adventures, saith the Apostle, 2 *Cor.* 5. 14.

The Rule whereby it is directed, is the word of God: what the Lord hath pleased to leave on record for a Christians guidance in holy pages, 1 *Chron.* 22. 12, 13. *The Lord give thee wisdome and understanding, that thou maist keepe the law. If thou take heed to the statutes, and judgements, which the Lord charged* Moses *with concerning* Israel: *be strong and of good courage, dread not, nor be dismai'd.* Bee a man of mettall, but let thy mettall bee according to my mind, according to this rule.

And the End, to which it referres, is God. For every sanctified man, being a selfe-denying, and a God-advancing man; his God is his Center, wherein his actings, his undertakings rest, and his Soule is not, yea it cannot bee satisfied but in God.

The fourth thing considerable in the Description is, the naturall, the formall, the immediate operations, that doe flow from this gracious, audacious frame of heart, they are two:

There is an adventuring upon difficulties;
And there is an undergoing of hardships.

First, There is an adventuring upon hard services; It is said, 1 *Sam.* 31. 12. *The valiant men rose and went all night, and tooke the body of Saul, and the bodies of his Sonnes from the wale of* Bethshan, *and came to Gabesh, and burnt them there.* When the *Philistins* had taken their bodies and were gone away Conquerours, and fastened them there,

as Ensignes of victory, brave blades, well mettalled men, went by night, and fetched them back againe: an hard, and a brave service.

And by reason hereof there is an enduring of hardships: Those Worthies of whom the world was not worthy, who are said to be *men valiant in fight*, Heb. 11. 34. This, testimony is given of them, that *They endured torturings, the tryall of mockings, or cruell mockings, of scourgings, of bonds, and imprisonment, of stoning, of being sawne asunder, of being slaine with the sword, of wandring up and downe in sheepe skins, and goats skins, being men destitute, afflicted, and tormented.*

Fiftly, in my description, I cast in the cause, which true courage undertakes to doe, and suffer for, the object it workes upon, the prize it adventures for, it is a good cause, 1 Cor. 16. 13 Matters of faith, *stand ye fast in the faith, quit ye like men.* It is a Gospel peice for which I am to jeopard a joynt, to hazard alimbe, to adventure life, 1 *Cor.* 6. 13. or matters of fact: I must be of good courage for my conscience, that I may maintaine an evenneſſe of spirit in reference to my rule, in relation to my God, 1 *Pet.* 3. 14. *If yee suffer for righteousnesse sake happy are yee, be not afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled.* It is a noble, a Christian resolution in any man, if hee thus determine, rather then I will make a wound upon my conscience, a breach betweene God and my soul; rather then I will violate a sacred vow, and transgresse the command of my God, I will run the greatest hazards in outward regards that can be imagined.

The goodnesse of the cause (Divines say) for which a man suffers, makes the Martyr: In like manner, it is the warrantableneſſe of the worke, wherein the souldier, the man of mettall appeares, that gives him the credit, the honour of this title, to be accounted a valiant man.

Ios. 1. 9. Sixtly and lastly, I added that good courage makes the fore said adventures upon the call of God. *Have not I commanded thee, be strong and of a good courage:* If the Lord

please to beat up the Drum; If the Lord please to bid them arme, and come abroad, his call is sufficient, Now God cals either by his precept, or by his providence. Either God cals his Champions for to undertake dangers, or hee commands dangers to over-take them; and hereupon being led forth by the Lord of hosts, they expresse their valour: For this they know, that whether it be estate, or peace, or life, or liberty, or Religion, or whatsoever else they hope to defend, they are all tallants that God hath entrusted them with, and that therefore only upon his Commission signed, and sealed by his own hand they may come forth, and must come forth bravely, and shew themselves couragious in reference thereto.

Now for a man in an impetuous, giddy, neady way, to breake himselfe unwisely in his reputation, liberty, estate, and himselfe knowes no other reason: but because his spirit moves him, and his humours stirre in him, or some passionat inconsiderate persons provoke him, this (my beloved) is not to be couragious. Wee reade in the Gospel, of a man possessed with an evil spirit, that did often cast himself into the water, and into the fire to destroy himself. And truly it nearely concernes many men of daring spirits, to consider seriously what spirit it is that acts in them: These things we must marke, that the true nature of courage may bee understood. Mark 9. 22.

This description of good courage I judged meet to premise and to explain briefly, that we may understand the duty in the text, the duty, the seasonable duty, which God calls for, and I plead for.

Bee of good Courage.

The second thing I propounded in the prosecution of this point, is the reasons wherefore a Christian should bee couragious: And my doctrine is built upon a fourefold ground.

First, Gods people should be of good courage, in re-

spect

rence unto the condition, unto which God hath called them. God hath appoynted all Christians to be souldiers. A Sacrament is a souldiers oath, when we were baptized we tooke presse money, and vowed to serve under the colours of Christ, and as manfull souldiers to fight against the world, the flesh, and the Devill: and as oft as wee have beene at the Sacrament of the body and blood of our Lord, wee have renewed our solomne, and sacred obligation in that kind, in reference to Christ, who is called *The Captaine of the Lords host*. Ios.5.16. and *the Captaine of our salvation Heb.* 2.10. *In sure hardnesse* (saith the Apostle) *as a good soldier of Christ*, 2 Tim.2.4. *Epaphroditus my fellow souldier*, Phil.2.25. Beloved, wisdome is not more necessary for a Counsellor, nor eloquence for an Orator, then courage for a souldier. Souldiers we are, wee must therefore, *Be of good courage.*

Secondly, the weighty services wherein the Lord of Hosts is pleased to imploy us. Men imployed in peculiar services are commanded to put on fortitude: As *Iosua* who was a Commander to guide, and governe the host, the armies of the Israelites in their passage to *Canaan*, *Be thou strong and very courageous, that thou maist observe to doe according to all the Law, which Moses my servant commanded thee, turne not from it, to the right hand or to the left.* And *Ezra*, in regard of his office, is thus spoken unto: *Arise, for the matter belongeth unto thee, be of good courage, and doe it*: and common Christians, in respect of services required of them, are to be couragious in their places, *Ios.*23.6. *Be yee therefore very couragious to keepe, and to doe all that is written in the booke of the law of* Moses, *that yee turne not aside therefrom, to the right hand or to the left.*

Ios.1.7.

Shall I hint some services that are charged upon all our consciences

The worke of mortification, to pick out our eyes, to chop off our hands, to cut off our feet; doe you thinke that a milke sop, a man that is not a man of a stout spirit will

will doe this. Novv to massacre fleshly lusts, is (as it vvere) for a man to mangle, and dismember his owne body, it is a worke painefull and grievous, as for a man to cut off his owne feet, to chop off his owne hands, and to pick out his owne eyes, as Christ and the Apostle *Paul* doe expresse it.

Besides this, there are in Christians bosomes, strong holds to be battered, fortifications to be demolished: there are high hils and mountaines, that must be levelled with the ground ther are trenches to be made, vallies to be filled. O beloved, I may not mention the hils that lye before us in Heaven way, which we must climbe up, and craggy rocks that we must get over: and without courage certainly the service put upon our hands will not be discharged.

Ther are also the wals of *Jerusalem* to be repaired, and the Temple to be reedefied: If *Nehemiah* had not beene a man of a brave spirit, hee would never have gone through stitch with that Church worke, those weighty services which hee did undertake. How this is appliable to us for the present time, the time of our begun reformation, I speake not; but rather doe referre it to your considerations; I beseech you to reade *Neh.*4 17, 18. They which builded on the wall, and they that did beare burthens, with those that laded: Every one with one of his hands wrought in the work, and with the other hand held a weapon. For the Builders every one had a sword girded by his side, and so builded, and he that sounded the Trumpet was by us. While they were at worke they were all ready for warre.

Thirdly, Christians must bee couragious, in reference to the 3. huge Armies, with which they are assaulted.

There are armies { Of Devils. Of Lusts. Of men and women in the world,

that doe wage warre with every Christian, that in good earnest makes out after his God in heaven way.

For the Devils, it is the argument of the Apostle, and from thence I tooke it, *Ephes.* 6. 10. *Brethren, be strong* (saith hee,) *for we wrestle not against flesh, and blood, but against principalities, and powers, against the Rulers of the darknesse of this World, against Spirituall wickednesses in the heights.* Marke for the number they are many, *Our name is legion, for wee are many:* How many thousands, neither you nor I know. There is strength in them, they are Powers, Principalities, and they are Rulers, they have very great authority in the Darknesse of the World; in Midnight men, Darke men, Men who love not Sunne-shine light, but rather delight to lye in holes and caves.

I meane, in regard of the Darknesse of their minds, and their wilfull ignorance of the things of God. And they are in the height; they fight with much advantage (as some observe,) being over our heads. And they are Spirits, they worke invisibly, and they fight against our Soules, they labour to keepe our hearts in thraldome, they seeke to beggar and to undoe us in regard of our grace, and Spirituall joyes.

The Holy Apostle *Peter* sayeth, The Divell your adversary, goeth about like a roaring Lyon, seeking whom hee may devoure. An Adversary, and a Devill, and a strong one, as a Lyon roaring, and then hee is active, hee walkes about, and hee is full of malice, ready to devoure: These things touched upon, doe tell us, that wee, who are alwayes surrounded, besieged by such enemies, have need of courage.

1 Pet. 2. 11. There are armies of lusts, I know not how many. The Apostle saith, *Fleshly lusts that fight against the Soule.* These foes lye within us, and they strike at the head, and the heart, endeavouring to let out the precious life of our immortall soules.

1 King 22. 31. As the Captaines of the King of *Syria*, had a command to fight against, neither small nor great, but the King of *Israel*. And the Apostle saith, that lusts in his bosome were such

such enemies, as still carried him captive, and haled him as a prisoner. (You know the expression, *Rom.* 7. 23.) Beloved, doth not experience oftentimes prove thus much, that pride, passions, unbeliefe, hypocrisie, earthly mindednesse, creature confidence, sensuality, doe take up armes against our precious Soules. Alas, alas lusts, deceitfull lusts, many deceitfull lusts, are still, still tyrannizing in our bosomes, which of us hath not cause to complaine with the Apostle, when I would doe good, they are at hand present with mee: strong in mee, ever stabbing, and striking, and poysoning, and wounding; if I would but pray, or weepe, or amend. These Rebels raise their strengths, and combine their forces to hinder me: and no sooner can Sathan hold up finger, and temptation shew it selfe; But they are ready furiously to march out against Christ, his government, graces, glory. Beloved, I appeale to your consciences, whether in regard of this black guard, maintained within us, wee have not need to bee of good courage.

Thirdly, the armies of people: The Apostle *Paul* saith, hee fought with men who were as beasts, *Beasts after the manner of men*, 1 *Cor.* 15. 32. *David* tels you they were Dogges, and they were Tygers, and Wolves, and Beares, and Buls, and Lyons, so in the Psalmes hee phraseth them. I promise you, a man that is so beset, thus assaulted, if hee bee not a man of courage what will become of him? There are *Sanballets* and *Tobiah's*, men of malignant, mischievous Spirits, to doe us mischiefe in Heaven way, had wee not need in that regard to bee couragious? And truly, women if they cannot use weapons, they will cast, and fling stones, shoote their arrowes even bitter words. *David* met with opposition in that kind, from one that was neare, and should have beene better. *Michol* shee jeared him in his righteous, and holy zeale, in reference to God; you know the story, and therefore I report it not. And doubtlesse, had not hee beene a man of an

Heroick Spirit, hee might have beene dasht out of countenance and baffled and cooled in his zeale, because of her reproachfull language.

There are those that are ready to performe ill offices, *Sheba*-like, to blow a Trumpet of sedition, of contention, to cast coales, and kindle strife betweene the head and the members, the King, and his Subjects; to set all on a flame in the Kingdome. In this regard, wee had need to bee steele to the back, that wee bee not disheartned. From all these three particulars, I might apply that passage, 2 *Sam.* 10. 9. 11. When *Ioab saw the front of the battaile against him before and behind; hee sayed hee of good courage, and let us play the men:* His speeches did sparkle Spirits, he herein proved himselfe a man meete to bee a warlike Commander, for danger and difficulties did adde heart and heate.

My Masters, you see our case, let us play the men for our people, and for the Cities of our God. Beloved, you perceive by that which I have pointed at, that our enemies are more and worse, we are beset before, and behind, above, and below, without and within; not onely our Cities, but our Soules are opposed, endangered. Hell and Earth, Men and Devils, yea and our selves are Adversaries to our selves. Therefore there is good reason, why wee should put on Courage.

Fourthly and lastly, Wee have need of Courage, because of the various afflictions to bee expected. For ought wee know, heavy things may befall us, and must bee borne by head, and shoulders by us, before wee get to our Castle, our place of refuge, our rest in Heaven; how stony, how thorny, how deepe, and how dangerous our wayes may prove, before wee get to our journeyes end, wee cannot tell. It may bee, wee must travaile through blood, through our owne blood, and therefore wee need Courage.

After our Saviour had suggested to his Disciples, *Mat.* 10. 21. *Brother shall deliver brother to death; the Father the Child, and the Child shall raise against the Parents, and*

cause

cause them to be put to death, and you shall be hated of all men for my names sake; Hereupon hee adds, verse 26. *Feare not*, 32. *Feare not*. Beloved, we know not what may be our portion here on earth, before we come perfectly to enjoy God our portion, and be happy in enjoying of him for ever. Wee may live to see the Citie fired, our estates wasted, our wives abused, our children torne in peices lin be-meale, peice-meale before our eyes: beleeve mee without courage, these sights will be hard and heavy to be beheld, such like sights will cause us to sownd away, to sinck into the dust, if wee provide not courage. Thus have I run over my reasons, and now I request you all, seriously to consider, whether in all the fore-mentioned regards, we have not abundant cause to endeavour, to get the grace the text commends, and to doe the duty that in the text God cals for, *Be of good courage*.

I come now to the application of all that hath beene delivered by way of use. The uses of this poynt that I shall speake to, they are but two.

The first Reproofe,
The second Exhortation.

For Reproofe, hence I have occasion for to blame both unworthy cowardlinesse in some, and wicked audaciousnesse in others: both vices contrary to this vertue, both extreames, opposed by this practize of Christian fortitude, which my text perswades.

First I must check an unworthy dastardlinesse, which discovers it selfe three wayes in the bosomes of men.

First, when men by reason of pusillanimity, & lownesse of spirit, dare not appeare in the cause that they are convinced, to be the cause of God. There ware some, *Joh.* 12, 43. who, though they beleeved on Christ, yet they durst not professe him for feare of the Pharisees, lest they should bee excommunicated. The consciences of many tell them,

that such a way is the way of God, doubtlesse this is heaven road; surely these are the courses to be taken to enjoy God, and communion with him, and yet for feare of I know not what, scornes, mocks, losse of friends, or the like; they dare not be seene. It may be they will goe to Christ with *Nicodemus* in the night, for feare too many eyes observe them, and take notice of them in such unwounted paths, exercises which seeme to proclaime strictnesse and precisenesse. You see I am in haste, and therfore cannot instance in particulars.

Secondly, others by reason of cowardlinesse soone grow discouraged in sad and weighty undertakings, because they find the way to heaven craggy, the duties difficult, the services something hard; and because they have not expected successe on a suddaine; here upon their spirits shrinke up; I have reference in this expression to the original word used to this very purpose, in *Num.* 21. 4. *And the soul of the people was much discouraged, because of the way.* Their spirits were shortned (as it is in the Hebrew) they run up by reason of distres, and al vigour gave in. As a Crevant begins to looke pale through feare; his spirits fly to the heart, you shall see no blood in his face: O did he think to be mocked, and to be pursevanted? and did he expect to be imprisoned? and did he conceive to bee put on such a dead taske, and to worke himselfe downe in his strength, respects amongst men, and other outward comforts, and reape nothing but the wind. Much hath beene done, and much hath beene endured, many weeks, moneths, yeares, are run up, since hee expected a good crop, of increase and comfort: but hopes being frustrated, and expectations disappoynted; hee sits downe dejected: Because Reformation is driven on heavily, things stick in the birth, therefore many are disheartned.

Thirdly, those that under darke clouds and showres of sufferings lye grovelling on the ground, through disconsolatenesse: *He that faints in the evill day, his strength is small,* Prov.

*Prov.*24.10. There is mention of ſome, *Iſa.* 2. 11. when the wind and tyde were againſt them; when the victory was carried on the other ſide, it is ſaid, *their hearts melted, there was no more courage in them*: The melting of the wax is the ſevering of part from part: The confirming of the parts together, is the ſtrength of it, the looſening of the parts weakens it: a mans ſoule runs out through fainting feares, as water; whereas it ſhould be confirmed, as a peice of ſteele. Chriſtians ſhould be magnanimous, and Fortitude will fortifie, and corroborate the ſoule. As the originall word ſuggeſts thus much, ſo the conjunction of ſtrength, and valour in the holy Scriptures doth import it: *Be ſtrong and of good courage.* Thinke of this, and take heed I pray you of daſtardly dejected neſſe, and diſmaying feares, in ſad, ſuffering times, becauſe thereby both ſoule and body are much feebled, and much prejudiced.

The ſecond thing reproved, is wicked audacious neſſe: This branch of the reprehenſion is needfull, for certainely, there is in ſome men a kind of fire, that riſeth out of hell, or rather ſome mettall, which is digged out of the bottomleſſe pit, which is called Courage, and ſo accounted in the world. My meaning is, that there is a devilliſh, wretched reſoluteneſſe in the boſomes of ſome to hold on in ſinne; notwithſtanding divine reprehenſions, convictions, threatnings, and executions; which is as much oppoſite to true courage, as the greateſt cowardlineſs in the world. I told you before, that true courage is for good, upon a Command from God. The Apoſtle checks the *Corinthians*, becauſe they had ſo much boldneſs, as that they did dare to doe that which was offenſive, *viz.* to goe to law one with another, and that before Infidels, you dare doe it ſaith he, you have ſo much boldneſs, 1 *Cor.* 6. & the Apoſtle *Peter* checks ſmen, *They are not afraid to ſpeak evil of Dignities.* The Pſalmiſt brings in bad men thus reſolving, *Our* Pſal. 12. 4. *tongues are our own, and we will ſpeak, and who is Lord over us.*

Some there be, who though the Miniſter flaſh the very fire

fire of hell in their faces, discovering the danger of their evill courses; yet like unto the warre-horse, they will adventure further, let the consequence prove what it may: yea, although God be on them in wayes of heavy affliction, with one rod after another, and one blow bigger then another, though his providence pinch them in their persons, impoverish them in their estates, crush them in their credit; and it may be they suffer much in their yoak-fellowes, Children and neere allies; yea, though the often recoyling of their consciences, cause earth-quakes in their owne bosomes, yet on they will still to doe wickedly. These are the men of whom the Prophet complaines, Ier. 5. 3. *Who make their faces harder then the Rock*, and refuse to returne. Men of this make are common in every place, and their way of living is much to be bewayled: and now I am necessitated to speake unto them, because their sturdinesse in refusing to stoope unto God in reformation, is reputed courage.

To crush these wretched conceits, I heartily wish that the Scriptures may be perused; where you shall find, that those who are commended for the most valiant Champions, and the stoutest souldiers in the Campe of Christ, that they were the most timorous in matter of sinne, and most cautious in references to God, that they might not in any kind offend His Majesty. *David*, that durst take a Lyon by the beard, and durst adventure upon a Duell, a single combat with *Goliah*, yet thus hee expresseth himselfe to God, Psal. 119. 120. *My flesh trembleth for feare of thee, and I am afraid of thy judgements.* And *Nehemiah*, who had many wayes worthily expressed his magnanimity for God and his cause, yet no man was ever more awed with the feare of God. Hee perswaded himselfe, and others thereunto. *Ought not we* Neh. 5. 9. 15. *so walke in the feare of God?* And againe complayning of the governours, who were his Predecessors, that they were injurious, and very injurious in their places; hee addeth but so, *Did not I (I durst not) because of the feare of*

of the Lord my God. I am confident, that this poſition is full of truth, you may truſt to it, as ſound and orthodox: That there is no more Chriſtian courage, then there is Chriſtian feare in our hearts. There is no more true valour in Gods account, in conflicting with difficulties, and ſtout ſtanding under heavy preſſures, then there is a cautious, and timorous circumſpection, leſt ſinne of any kind ſhould be committed to the diſhonour, and provocation of God. Shall I thinke that a man that will ſweare, and roare, and curſe, and pox, and plague (I ſhould not have defiled my mouth with theſe words) ſhall I thinke that this man of Beliall hath Chriſtian courage? Hee may have morall magnanimity, as an heathen, as a Romane, but he wants the courage of a Saint, that courage which my Text cals for. Beloved, I pray you beleeve it, (I ſpeake as a Scripture man; and I ſpeake to men that muſt labour to be men valiant, as becommeth Saints) *hee that rules his owne ſpirit,* Prov. 16. 32. *doth more then hee that overcomes a Citie.* That man who takes downe his untamed luſts; and that man who bridles the unruly member the tongue Hee who conquers the rebellious mutinies in his owne boſome, and who notwithſtanding all avocaſions, is carefull ſtill to keepe cloſe to God, this is the valiant man indeed, God himſelfe, by *Solomons* pen, gives ſuch a one his Letters teſtimoniall to be magnanimous. And for my part I will adventer that which is deareſt unto my ſelfe in this world, in the hands of this man, if in the hand of any, in regard of valour, and holy, hearty, heroick reſolution. But I put off from this reproofe, wherein my zeale hath made mee bold, to ſpeake my mind: For I had rather counſell then reprehend: and before I goe forward, I wiſh that my checks lighting on ungracious hearts may make kindly and deepe impreſſions on them, for their amendment. And God grant that you that come to prayſe God, as becommeth Saints this day, may learne alſo hereafter to be valiant as it becommeth Saints, according to the directions of ſacred Scripture.

The last use, is an use of exhortation; (I feare, I have more to say then my time, and your occasions will suffer mee to deliver.) It is onely this, to perswade you all (my beloved,) I say all, without exception, Colonels, Captaines, other Officers, Souldiers, yea all the Servants of the Lord, to yeild to the word of exhortation, and in your places to endeavour Christian courage; This use most usefull my heart desires to enlarge, wherein I faine would,

1. *By Arguments perswade it,*
2. *By Directions helpe you in it.*

I have Arguments of two kinds, God grant they may come with some strength upon your hearts, to move you to endeavour to bee truly valorous.

First, From the consideration of the rich commodities, that are the undoubted consequences of Religious fortitude. O the booties, ô the boones, ô the benefits, that Christians may enjoy in the way of Christian valour! I will point at 6. and I shall doe little more then point at them.

First, It will wind, and worke you into the bosome, and favour of God; *Be of good Courage, and hee shall strengthen thy heart.* Put thou thy selfe forth in a way of bold adventure for him, and his providence shall bee sweetly exercised for thy good. A worthy Commander, how carefull is hee of a brave blade, a man that will fight at a Cannons mouth. Doth hee heare from him, that a bone is broken? Send for the Bone-setter: Is hee like to bleed to death? call for the Surgeon, let him post away to prevent that perill; Doth hee grow weaker and weaker? Is there any thing in the Campe, that may restore his Spirits, withhold nothing; nothing is too good, too costly, would hee eate gold, hee should have it.

Thus it is with God, O what letters of commendation doth hee give in manifestation of his owne love to them in

in *Pergamus*, upon this very ground: *Thou, ſaith the Lord,* Rev. 2. 13. *thou haſt held forth my name, and not denyed it even in thoſe dayes, when* Antipas *my faithfull Martyr was ſlaine, even where Sathan dwelleth.* Thou didſt fight for CHRIST in the Cave, where the Devill commanded, thou didſt ſtand and appeare for him, when other men did loſe life, and bloud. Here is a man that God will owne, ſuch a one, ſhall have Gods heart and hand to doe him honour, to yeild him comfort. And therefore I appeale to your conſciences, is not this Courage worth the having? worth the ſeeking?

Secondly, Your Courage will hearten you in the weighteſt and difficulteſt adventures, which the cauſe and glory of God, the welfaire of his Church, the honour of the King, the peace and proſperity of the Kingdome may put you upon. *Heſter* was a woman, yet valiant. Muſt I to the King for my people; *If I periſh, I periſh.* I will take my life in my hand and adventure: *Nehemiah*, had a hard taske to undertake, truly a dead peice of ſervice to ſet upon, yet notwithſtanding being a couragious man, hee will hazard his All, to obey the command of his God, and to ſerve the neceſſities of his brethren. This is recorded for the everlaſting credit of ſome of the Servants of God, tho Prieſts, 2 *Chron.* 26. 17. 18. *And* Azariah *the Prieſt went in after him and with him* 4. *ſcore Prieſts of the Lord that were valiant men; and they withſtood* Vzziah *the King, and ſaid unto him, it pertaineth not unto thee* Vzziah *to burne incenſe to the Lord.*

Men of brave Noble Spirits will ſpeake, whatſoever it coſt them, upon a call from God, men of valour will appeare according to Gods command in ſervices ſad, and heavy. Wee ſay, that a well metled horſe, will take forward, and draw at a ſtanding tree, but that I ſhall ſpeake of in the next.

Thirdly, It will make us unwearied in our workes, though deſired, and expected ſucceſſe bee denied. You ſee

it some time; (My similitude is a plaine one, but beloved, it fully evidenceth the thing I speake to,) A Carre-horse of good mettall, will plucke, and fall on his knees, and up, and take forty pluckes at a sticking load, whereas a *Jade*, if it come not at the first twitch, goes back, back, and you cannot get him forward. Iust thus is it with a Coward, if hee have not victory at the first skirmish, hee will hardly make a second assault; if hee bee knocked downe, once, twice, or thrice, hee gives up all as lost, and is ready to runne away; but a man of a stout Spirit in such a case, will pluckt up heart, fight againe, so long as hee can either stand or stirre. Thus *Moses* hee goes, the first, and second, and third, and tenth time to *Pharoah*, notwithstanding brow-beatings, repulses, threatnings. *Thus saith the Lord, let my people goe.* That was his message, either it must bee granted, or hee will not cease his importunity. *Israel* hee comes for, and *Israel* hee will have with him, or else, hee will not leave *Egypt*.

My beloved, let us bring this downe to our selves: Many prayers wee have made, and many fasts wee have kept for *Sion*: and before our deliverance bee compleat, wee know not, how many plucks wee must yet have, and how many shall wee take to repaire the walles, and to reedifie the House of God, in case, God give us this mettall, which I am commending.

Fourthly, Courage will bee a meanes to keepe us from conscience-wasting, and scandalous miscarriages. What had become (thinke you) of *Shidrack*, *Meshech*, and *Abednego*? or what had become of *Daniel*, if they had not beene men of undaunted hearts? The one had given off doing his duty, presenting his indebted homage to his God, hee must not pray for the space of thirty dayes to his God. The other three must bow downe in way of Idolatry to an Idoll. But marke the Sparkling of their Spirits; *Bee it knowne unto thee ô King, wee know God can deliver us, but if hee will not, wee will not fall downe, nor worship that Image*

Image which thou hast set up. They were by Courage kept out of the briers, and off the Rock, which might otherwise have torne and broken them wofully. And *Daniel* was preserved from the neglect of his devotion to his God, by the same meanes.

Fiftly, Believe it, that our Courage will daunt our Adversaries, and drive them away; The Captaine of that black guard, (the Devill I meane) will give back, if stoutly withstood: *Resist him, and hee will flee: stand to it, and hee will runne away.* In like manner, will those, who march under his colours against Gods people. It is said expresly 1 *Sam.* 4. 5. 7. when the *Philistines* heard the *Israelites* shout, O say they their God is among them, wo unto us. Without doubt, the very valour of Protestants will bee the daunting of the Papists. Let those who appeare for Reformation, maintaine their ground, and the enemies thereof, will bee discouraged, vanquished. Iam. 4. 7.

Lastly, I might adde, that our Courage will incourage, I know not how many, One bold leader, will hearten hundreds. O saith *Paul*, my bonds, and sufferings are famous, they are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places; and many of the Brethren by reason of my bonds Wax bold, and speake the word without feare, *Phil.* 1. 12. 13. 14. If you would know what word? It was the word of CHRIST, who was denyed, derided. Now to speake for a Christ when *Paul* is in prison, and in bolts, and fetters for the word of CHRIST, was an act of Manhood. And *Pauls* valour made them thus bold. The Cities Courage will make the Countrey couragious.

This true valour that I speake for, may have influence I know not how farre, through the Kingdome in way of benefit, and advantage. Therefore looke you to it, *Quit yourselves like men, Be of good Courage.*

The second motive, is taken from the consideration of the sad consequences of cowardlinesse.

First, A mans personall discredit, call a Souldier a cra-

vant, and how doe you disgrace him? They would faine, (saith *Nehemiah*,) *Put mee in feare, that they might have had somewhat to reproach mee*; *Nehem.* 6. 13. A Captaine, and a Coward, what a shame is it? If you desire to maintaine your honour and reputation, in City and Countrey, hold up your hearts, *Be men of valour.*

Secondly, This is another a sad consequence of cowardlinesse, it may tend to make us unprofitable, and unserviceable in our places; *I was afraid, and hid my talant, for I thought, thou wast a hard master.* You know whose speech it was. When a man hath both oportunities and abilities to doe, God and the King, the Parliament and Kingdome, good service. God hath bestowed a good head-piece, much wisedome, an able body and healthfull, a strong arme, a vast estate, a great command; and yet notwithstanding, when the welfare of Church and Common-wealth, call him to make appearance, hee drawes back, dares not bee seene, all his talents are tied in a napkin, there is nothing traded for God, because hee is a Coward, and dares not looke out of dores. There will bee a heavy reckoning for that man, *Take him, bind him hand and foote.* Cowardlinesse makes men, though able, yet unprofitable, therefore take heed of it. Matth. 25. 25.

Thirdly, The good causes, which men owne and favour, may receive a great deale of dammage, and prejudice by the pusillanimity, the pooreneſse of the Spirits of them, that appeare therein. There was a notable piece of policy, in the endeavour of the raying wretch *Rabshecah*, to affright the Souldiers of *Hezekiah*, 2 *Chr.* 32. 18. *This they did, that they might make us afraid and take our City.* Cowardlineſse ties a mans hands behind him, that hee can doe nothing in the World, hee cannot keepe his ranck, and place, hee neither knowes when to charge, or discharge; his hands quake, his eyes cannot see, hee cries where am I? and what must I doe? Thus all is lost, because of cowardlineſse, it is a mighty disadvantage to bee a dastard. Certainely,

tainely a man under the power of diſmaying, in feares is ſcarſe a man in the uſe of his intellectuals.

Fourthly, What ſad breaches cowardlineſſe, may make upon us, both in regard of ſinne, and judgements. I know not. The ſad example of Saint *Peter* is here conſiderable, O what a wound did hee receive, by reaſon of his unworthy fearefulneſſe; It coſt him deare before the cut was cured. You know his threefold deniall of his Maſter, with the black aggravations thereof; O I know him not, I am not any of them, you are miſtaken in mee, &c. But before that breach was, made up, it coſt him hot water, *Hee wept bitterly.*

Beloved, beloved, conſider what I ſay, many a man doth that under the command of cowardlineſſe, which is paine and anguiſh in his heart to his dying day. God is wonderfully incenſed, when men ſhrinke from him, becauſe of difficulties and dangers, *Feare not leaſt I ſlay thee.* Bee not diſmayed at their faces (ſaith God to *Jeremiah*,) leſt I confound thee before them, *Ier.* 1. 17. When God cals often, and cals loude upon men to take part with him, and yet they ſhrinke and draw back, believe it, the danger is not little. You know whoſe ſpeech it is; *If you will deny mee before men, I will deny you before my Father, which is in heaven.* Marke 8. 38.

A valiant Captaine, when the field is fought, and the victory is got, bids, bring in that cravant, that milke-ſop, who did runne away: Hiſſe him, turne him out of doores, as the ſhame of his Countrey; when Chriſt ſhall come and call, and ſay to ſome White-livered men, you were aſhamed to appeare for the ſtrict obſervation of the Lords-day, and you would not bee ſeene to favour the Reformation, which by *Englands* Parliament, at ſuch a time was endeavoured, and you would not labour to have the ſanctuary ſwept from all pollutions, and you would bee at no coſt, to have Chriſts-coine, bear his ſtamp alone, to have his ordinances pure without mixtures, but you would rather

ther *Issachar*-like, lye under burthens, then struggle for deliverance. You were afraid what might bee the issue of your boldnesse in such businesses, if the times should turn, and the tyde run another way, and matters change in such and such a manner. And hereupon you sneakingly left me, and my cause and glory in the open fields. Beloved, this will be an heavy hearing to the cowardly Apostate at the last day, when the fearefull, and the unbeleeving must be sent into the lake which burneth with fire & brimstone. Therefore I intreat you againe, and againe, to consider well of this matter.

Revel. 2. 8.

Lastly, how farre cowardlinesse may tend to discourage others: I wish you to consider: I here remember, that when *Israel* of old, was to goe forth unto battaile, God commanded the officers to speake thus unto the people, *What man is there, that is fearefull, and faint hearted, let him goe and returne unto his house, lest his brethrens hearts faint (or melt) as well as his heart.*

Gentlemen, God forbid that you who are come hither to day, to acknowledge your selves bound to God for your estates, lives, and liberties, & to have the word of truth, preached and pressed upon you for your soules good. God forbid (I say) that you who give good examples in many other kinds, should doe any thing which may tend to weaken the spirits, and to dampe the courage of any, who shall enquire, what doe they in *London?*

Having thus farre perswaded you, to pluck up your hearts, as it becommeth Saints: I now intreat you, to give me leave to counsell you, what course to take, that you may be couragious, and I promise to doe it, as with sincere reference to God, whose servant I am, so with unfained faithfulnesse to you whom I now serve.

What shall wee doe, that wee may bee couragious?

My directions are in number ten, I will not be long in any one of them, because I would not be tedious, I humbly beg your best attention, desiring to speake to your soules

ſoules, and I beſeech the Lord to ſpeake to my heart, and yours.

The firſt helpe to Chriſtian courage (which makes way for all the reſt) is this: Labour clearly from Scripture grounds to evidence your propriety in God.

When *David* was utterly undone in outward appearance at *Ziklag*, being ſtript of all outward comforts, and expected that his brains ſhould be beaten out with ſtones, (*They talked of ſtoning him*) *David incouraged himſelfe* (hee confirmed and ſtrengthened his heart) as the originall expreſſeth it, *in the Lord his God*: Is there not more in God, My beloved, I pray you put this queſtion upon ſerious debate in your owne boſomes, my God to hearten mee, then in mine enemies my greateſt, my worſt enemies to diſmay mee? Take the improvement of this point in two particulars. 1 Sam. 30. 6.

1 Gods omnipotency.

2 Gods Omnipreſence.

Is there not more ability in God, then power in all the world, if combined together. *Bee ſtrong, and couragious,* (ſaith *Hezekiah*) *Be not afraid, nor diſmayed, for the King of* Aſſyria, *nor for all the multitude, that is with him, for there be more with us, then with him: with him is an arme of fleſh, but with us is the Lord our God to helpe us, and to fight our battailes.* *And the people reſted themſelves upon the words of Hezekiah, King of Iudah.* At this time *Senacherib* had rayſed a very great Army, as holy Hiſtory reports: And rayling *Rabſhekah* was confident, that Iſraels God could not deliver; yet you ſee, that this thought. The Lord our God to helpe us, did ſteele and ſtrengthen their hearts. 2 Chro. 32. 8.

The knowledge of Dietie, and Proprietie, will increaſe magnanimity in a fearefull heart, what are huge armies, ſtrong fortifications, weapons of war, the ſtrength, ſtoutneſſe, skill, or experience of common ſouldiers, or warlike Commanders againſt the Lord Almighty? look back to the hiſtory laſt mentioned, where we read, that one angel in one

night killed five thousand men in the host of the King of
Esa.37.36. *Assyria*. By this example, guesse at the ability of your God, having made sure your interest in him; and from thence gather courage.

Iosh 1.9. 2 As the ability, so the presence of God by the efficacy of his all-ordering providence, may hearten all them, whose God hee is by speciall Covenant; *Have not I commanded thee, be strong, and of a good courage, be not afrayd, neither be thou dismayed, for the Lord thy God is with thee whither soever thou goest.* The Lord is with us, by the presence of his speciall favour, in all our good undertakings whethersoever wee goe. The Christian carries his commander, his refuge, his Castle, his God along with him, whether hee keepe in the Citie, or goe forth into the countrey; whether hee serve by land, or by sea, his God is still at hand. Assurance therefore, that the al-sufficient, al-prepresent God is ours, will lay a good foundation for good courage: Those who adventure upon any service without God going along with them, may expect defeats; notwithstanding all meanes of defence: and therefore no marvell, if they tremble: But God taking part with his people, they may confidently from his presence expect deliverance. *If it had not been the Lord who was on our side,*
Psal.124.6. *they had swallowed us up quicke, &c. but blessed be the Lord, who hath not given us, as a prey to their teeth.* God and his people make one side; and because *their helpe standeth in the name of the Lord,* who made heaven and earth; therefore they have aboundant cause *to be of good courage.*

Secondly, make sure, that the cause you appeare in, is the cause of God. If a man marching to looke his enemies in the face, and being about to begin the battaile, should feele the earth to shake under him, and the ground to sink, every foot hee set forward: O how would this daunt him, and how would his heart recoyle, and give in within him? Obeloved, I beseech you, be you well confirmed in your owne hearts, that you doe serve for God. It is that

which

which was added to give Courage to them in *Iehoſaphats* time, when they were ſurrounded, with *Ammon*, and *Moab*, and Mount *Seir*, as if wee ſhould ſay, with *Denmarke* and *France*, and Papiſts at home. Well, ſaith the man of God, Hearken yee all *Iudah*, and yee Inhabitants of *Ieruſalem*, and thou King *Iehoſaphat*; Thus ſaith the Lord unto you: *Bee not afraid nor diſmaid, by reaſon of the great multitude for the battaile is not yours but Gods.* 2 Chron. 20. 15. &c.

Beloved, hee that hath a bad conſcience, and a bad cauſe, ever fights as a Coward, and is ready at every ſtroke to lay downe his weapons and runne away. A true man will ſtand to it, come who may come, for his cauſe is juſtifiable, and hee may with boldneſſe owne it; but theives, if they heare any noiſe, any whiſpering, they cry one to another, let us haſt and bee gone, for they know, their adventure's unwarrantable. When a man thus thinkes with himſelfe, being beſet with dangers and difficulties, what if I ſhould dye in this buſineſſe? could I with confidence owne it, at the Barre of IESUS CHRIST? The incouragement of his owne conſcience, will much imbolden him. But if a mans owne heart tell him; that adventuring and dying in a ſuch cauſe, e ſhall ſinck into Hell, becauſe he oppoſeth the Commands and Government of IESUS CHRIST; the liberties, the comforts, the prayers of Gods people, how is it poſſible, that hee ſhould play the man, and bee truly couragious?

Thirdly, Conſider ſeriouſly, the many weighty conſequences of the good cauſe, which from good grounds, you undertake to maintaine. Sit downe and ſadly thinke what will the iſſue bee, if you deſert your Proteſtation, whereby you bound your ſelves, to ſtand for the true Proteſtant Religion, the honour of our King, the Priviledges of Parliament, the Lawes of the Land, and welfare of the Kingdome. Here it is notable, how the *Philiſtines* heartened one another, in the day of their deepe danger, 1 *Sam.* 4. 9. *Be ſtrong, quit your ſelves like men* O Philiſtins, *that*

you bee not Servants to the Hebrewes; *Quit your selves like men and fight*; Either pluck up your hearts, and fight now, or bee slaves for ever; that is the argument.

And I pray you, observe how *Ioab* pleads, *When hee saw the battell before and behind.* 2 Sam. 10. 12. *Be of good Courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the Cities of our God.* And that passage, *Nehem.* 4. 14. It is considerable, as either of the former; *Bee not afraid remember the Lord which is great and terrible, and fight for your Brethren, for your Sons, for your Daughters, for your Wives, and for your Houses.*

Marke it, my beloved, and make application, what if the Papists should get the upper hand? What if the Parliament should bee dissolved? What if the malignant party should effect their mischievous desires? Oh how darke and dolefull, how black and bloudy, would our times prove, we are all, many wayes obliged to stand for the government and worship of the Lord Christ: for the safety, and honour of our King, for the welfare of his three Kingdomes, for the Priviledges of our Parliament, and for our rights by Law; All these are to bee prized at an exceeding high rate: our happinesse will bee great in the enjoying of them, and our misery not small, in the want of them. Every man according to his Relations and engagements, should season the case with himselfe. What adventures should I make, and what hazard should I runne, that my selfe may not bee enslaved, that my Wife may not bee abused, my Children massacred, and (which is above all,) that Christs holy Religion may not bee corrupted, and that Popery may not bee introduced and established in *England*. Thus meditation upon the worth of the things to bee maintained, will bee a speciall meanes to quicken and to augment Courage.

Fourthly, Keepe Christ your Captaine in your eye. For true valour, there never was, nor ever shall bee any like unto him. *Gird thy sword upon thy thigh, O most mighty, with*

thy

thy glory and Majeſty; and in thy Majeſty ride proſperouſly, and thy right hand ſhall teach thee terrible things, Pſalme 45. 3. 4 How valiant a Champion was the Lord Iesus! *Hee endured the Croſſe, and deſpiſed the ſhame*; Hee went on, Heb. 12, 2. though dogges did barke, and Lyons did roare, though men reproachfully reviled him, and the Devils endeavoured to devoure him; though the earth (as it were) did ſhake under his feete, and the Heavens were black and thundring over his head. Although when his profeſſed enemies had conſpired his death, *Iudas* did betray him, and his other Diſciples did forſake him, yea although his God and Father did hide his face from him, when hee anſwered Divine Iuſtice for our ſinnes, yet hee ſhrunke not, hee drew not back, from the glorious worke undertaken. When outward dangers encompaſſed him, and the ſorrowes of Hell tooke hold upon his Soule, though hee was apprehenſive, and ſenſible of all, unto the utmoſt, and therefore both complained and prayed to his Father, yet was he not diſcouraged. Hee did not ſound, when hee ſaw his own bloud, yea although his body was wet all over with a bloudy ſweat, but he worthily did wade through the flood of his appointed paſſions.

Conſider him, conſider him, (beloved,) that you may not faint in your minds; when a ſouldier ſees his Captaine content to take up with poore proviſions and undaunted, though hee meet with hard ſervices, harſh uſages, ſore affronts, hee thereupon growes the more reſolute. For thus hee reaſons within himſelfe. My worthy Commander, for his diet, takes up with a cruſt of courſe bread and a little water, hee hath not beene in bed theſe many nights, but ſtill, either watcheth, or elſe, hee lies upon the ground, the cold ground, no wayes, no weather diſcourages him, Winter, Summer, wet, or dry, ſcorching heate, the pinching froſt, are alike unto him: Bullets, blowes wounds, bruiſes, broken bones, doe not cauſe him to ſound a retreat, to give back, and ſhall I ſhrinke? Beloved, if

Christ had shrunke when Heaven frowned, and men deserted, and Devils opposed him, what had become of you, and mee? Is this Christ my Captaine? and hath hee Captaine-like, Champion-like for mee both done and suffered thus worthily, thus incomparably, and shall not I put on Courage, and shew my selfe a man, a valiant man for him? I beseech you, consider this frequently and affectionately.

Fiftly, I commend unto you, mutuall Christian communion, as a speciall meanes of Christian Courage. In the Prophet *Malachy* his times, when wickednesse was
Mal. 3. 16. growen to a great head, and the power of godlinesse was discountenanced in them, then *those that feared God, spake often one to another.*

Act. 28. 15. When *Paul* after shiprack, *saw the brethren, who came*
Act. 18. 5. *to meete him, hee tooke Courage.* And also, upon a strong dispute with some who opposed Christ, *when* Silas *and* Timotheus *were come,* Paul *was pressed in Spirit.* God bee thanked for that unity and love which is amongst you, amongst you, the Aldermen and Commons of this City, unto whom the Militia is committed; God continue it, God knit your hearts together more fast, and firme from day to day: God give you when you meete to consider seriously what may heat, and hearten your Spirits in the way of Christian valour, according to that which this day I have preached, and according to that, which this day wee all need.

Wee read in *Isay* 41. 6. of a Company of Idolaters, animating each other, in promoting Idoll-worship. *They helped every one his Neighbour, and every one sayd to his brother,* Bee of good Courage. *So the Carpenter encouraged the Gold smith, and hee that smoothetb with the hammer, him that smiteth with the anvill, &c.*

Doubtlesse, at this day, those who envy our hopes, and oppose our peace, doe meete and hearten one another, both by words and actions. God forbid therefore, that wee

should

ſhould bee more regardleſſe of one another, having a better cauſe, and more incouragements.

Sixtly, ſet faith on worke in the promiſes of the Goſpell. The worthies in the primitive times, waxed valiant by meanes of faith; *Hebr.* 11. 34. You may doe well to informe your ſelves, what the Lord is pleaſed to ſpeake in the word of truth for your comfort. By the bond of his owne rich unchangeable grace, he is become your debtour to doe more then I can poſſibly expreſſe. Three things I thought to have ſpoken unto, under this direction.

Firſt, The promiſe of Gods aſſiſtance, *Bee of good Courage*, and *hee will ſtrengthen thine heart.* The ſweet *Pſalmiſt* ſaw much ſweetneſſe in this, and therefore doth mention it, once and againe when the Soule ſaith, I am ready to fall downe, yet taking courage, to march forward, it ſhall renew ſtrength, it ſhall receive an addition of new ſtrength, *Eſa.* 40. 31. And that ſpeech of *Solomon*, *Prov.* 10. 29. is very remarkeable. *The way of the Lord is ſtrength to the upright.* They goe on and gather ſtrength in going, *they walke from ſtrength to ſtrength*, *Pſalm.* 84. 7. Truly this is an heartening conſideration. Pſal. 27. 14.

Secondly, The promiſe of good ſucceſſe. Beloved, Chriſtians maintaining the cauſe and minding the glory of God, are as ſure of victory as if now they were ſinging the triumph, and going away as Conquerours. This is moſt certaine, for truth it ſelfe hath ſpoken it; *In the World yee ſhall have affliction; bee of good cheere, or bee bold, I have overcome the World.* The Devill hath his deaths wound, Corruption hath (as it were) the knife at the heart of it and the power of wicked men is broken, they are but ſprunting and ſtriving for life. Ioh. 16. 33.

By this argument, the Lord heartened his ſervant *Ioſhua*; *Bee ſtrong and of a good Courage, for unto this people ſhalt thou divide for an inheritance, the land which I ſware unto their Fathers to give them*; *Joſh.* 1. 6. As though

though the Lord had thus spoken; although thou mayest fight many battailes, receive many foyles, loose many of thy souldiers, yet bee not dismayed, for certainely as a Conquerour, thou shalt bring the people to *Canaan*.

Thirdly, Then the recompence assured upon all them, who stoutly stand to the cause of God, is more rich and large, then I can relate. *To him that overcommeth, will I grant to sit with mee in my Throne.* And from this assurance, the Apostle *Paul* incourageth the *Corinthians*. Therefore my beloved Brethren, *Bee yee stedfast, and unmoveable always abounding in the worke of the Lord, for as much, as yee know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.* God will requite all paines taken, all sorrowes suffered, and you *that have lost houses, or land, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, for Christ, and his cause*, besides that inward peace, and tranquilitie and ioy, which an hundred fold exceed all sublunary contents, to bee enioyed here, you shall inherit hereafter everlasting life. And againe, feare none of those things which thou shalt suffer. *Behold the Devill shall cast some of you into prison, &c. Be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a Crowne of life.* Feed on these promises, for Cordials flow from them to cheere your drooping hearts, and to strengthen courage.

Rev. 3. 21.

1 Cor. 15 58.

Mat. 19. 29.

Seventhly inlarge your loue. If those hearts which now doe but drop love, might flow forth streames of love upon Gods cause, our Kings honour, and the Kingdomes welfare how wonderfully would our courage be increased. Both reason and religion, wil give in manifold strong arguments to augment our love to our Prince, our Parliament, our peace, our priviledges, our posterity: and doubtlesse our love and valour, will grow together.

Love will adventure farre: Women are the more feeble, the more fearefull Sexe, and yet love in a tender mother will produce bold adventures to save the babe of her wombe. The timorous mother, who is wont to tremble at the report of a Musket, will almost come to a Cannons

nons mouth to ſave her Child from being broken in pee-ces: Love doth it.

Have you not in the countrey ſometimes ſeene an Ewe, in defence of her lambe, to turne head upon a maſtive dog, and to ſtampe, although at other times, the barking of a little whelpe, will make a whole flocke of them to runne away. O, love doth it. And the poore Hen, ſhee will fly at the Kite to ſave her brood; Love doth it. O that you and I had this Love; Love to *Zion*, to the Goſpel of peace, Love to Chriſt, and the pure ordinances of grace: Love will make brave and bold adventures.

And as it will adventure farre, ſo it will endure much, and long. The Apoſtle ſaith, Charity beareth all things, endureth all things, *Iacob* though he had tedious dayes, and weary nights, a ſore ſervice under a ſowre Vncle, a churliſh Maſter, yet he *ſerved ſeven yeares for Rachell, and they ſeemed unto him, but a few dayes, for the love he had to her.* *Love is ſtrong as death, many waters cannot quench love, neither can the flouds drowne it; if a man would give all the ſubſtance of his houſe for love, it would utterly be contemned.* 1 Cor. 13. 7. Gen. 29. 20. Cant. 8. 6. 7.

What if one ſhould come to a woman, and make this motion, be content that your child be torne to peices, and here is a thouſand pounds for you. Her anſwer would be ready, Not for a thouſand worlds: yea, ſhee would almoſt ſpit in his face, who ſhould preſſe ſuch a propoſition, what rend my child in peices? There is nothing can conquer love: ſo it would be with us; in reſpect to Gods commandements, the liberty of Goſpel ordinances: No promiſes, no threats, no meanes, fayre, or fowle would take us off from appearing in the defence of them, if our hearts were more enflamed with love.

Eighthly, Walke exactly, keepe your conſciences cleare. Notable is that direction of the Lord, *Deut.* 13, 8. *Ye ſhall keep all the commandements which I command you this day, that you may be ſtrong*: Suppoſe a man, who hath a wound, or

an impostu mated swelling on his body, should goe into the Campe, if any touch him, hee skritcheth, and he cries, come not neare me, you know the reason, and the application is familiar and easie to the point in hand, wounds in our consciences, will make us timerous and cowardly; but *The Righteous is as bold as a lyon: He that walkes uprightly, walkes boldly*: Take a man who hath no brokennesse, no boyles, no blanes, no bruises, handle him, shake him, crush him, crowde him, thrust him, cast him: notwithstanding he can better beare all this rugged usage, then another can a fillip with the finger. I beseech you mind the application of this, for the Lords sake take heed, make not inroads, and breaches upon your consciences, goe not against your light, for guilt will make you cowardly. *Adam* as soone as hee had sinned he runs and puts his head in a bush, what was the matter? hee heard a whistling wind, and hee runs away: What hast thou sinned, saith God? I, that is the matter. For if *Adam* had kept his heart sound, if hee had not sinned, hee would with boldnesse have encountred with any approaches, either of the creatures, or his Creator. Pro. 28. 1.

Ninthly, Improve your experiences. It would bee of singular use to us, to bestow many houres, both together, and asunder, in recounting the many great things which the Lord hath done for us, both in former times, & of later; we have nationall deliverances Citie deliverances, Family mercies & personal mercies to improve providence: Give me leave to call to mind two most seasonable now to be remembred, cōsidering the end of our assembling at this time: I am credibly informed that your selvs who are here to honour God for your health continued, peace maintained, lives lengthened, had that day when you were abroad, two notable experiences of Gods providence for your preservation; 1. There were muskets broken in the field, and yet neither the Musketiers, nor any neare them received the least harme, although the throng of people was very great.

Mighs

Might not ſome mens eyes, limbs, or lives have been loſt, by ſuch accidents; if the all-ordering hand of the Almighty had not prevented ſuch like dangers. The other paſſage of divine providence is more remarkeable.

2 Gods hand turned aſide graciouſly, and ſtrangely, a kindled match which was caſt towards a basket full of Gunpowder, which ſtood in the field for that dayes ſervice. From what malicious heart, and by what miſchievous hand this match was caſt, the Lord hee knoweth, whom we this day magnifie, as the God of our ſalvations.

Beloved, the remembrance of ſuch like providences, ſhould incourage our adventures for the Lord, whoſe hand hath diverted many unſeen, & unexpected dangers. But I had almoſt forgot to give in my proof, that the improvement of experiences, increaſeth courage. I pray you obſerve it in *Ioſ.* 10. 25. *And Ioſhua ſaid unto them feare not, nor bee diſmayed, be ſtrong and of good courage; for thus ſhall the Lord doe to all your enemies, againſt whom yee fight.*

Our God hath many times diſappointed the deſignes of our enemies: many of them who hated us, and endeavoured our undoing, and deſolation, have beene diſcovered and brought to ſhame, the Lord hath trampled upon them glorioufly. Theſe meditations enlarged by particular pregnant inſtances, I commend unto you, as meanes to increaſe your courage.

Laſtly, when ever you have occaſion to ſhew your courage, goe out ſelfe-denyingly in the ſtrength of your God, *Be ſtrong in the Lord, and in the power of his might, Epheſ.* 6. 10. *Through God we ſhall doe valiantly, Pſal.* 60 12. *David* was a man, as in other kinds, ſo in this imitable; when hee came againſt *Goliah* (who threatned to pluck him in peices, as a Faulkoner doth a bird) his words are very obſervable. *Thou commeſt to me with a ſword, and with a ſpeare,* 1 Sam. 17. 45. *and with a ſhield but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hoſts, the God of the Armies of Iſrael, whom thou haſt defied. Let theſe be the breathing of your ſoules. Some truſt in Chariots, and ſome in horſes, but wee will remember the name of*

the Lord our God. They are brought down and fallen, but we are risen and stand upright. Save Lord, let the King hear us when we call.

Thus be carefull to make addition of prayer, unto all the other meanes of Christian courage. Pray heartily, selfe-denyingly, and believingly. Advance God, and plead his promise; and expect assistance according to his promise. *Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen your heart, all yee that hope in the Lord.*

FINIS.

BRITISH MUSEUM

It is ordered by the Committee, of the House of Commons in Parliament concerning printing, that this Booke intituled, *Good Courage discovered, and incoura-red*, be printed.

John White.

26. *May*, 1642.

M

To

A

HIS MAJESTIES Declaration

To the Miniſters, Free-holders, Farmers, and ſubſtantiall Copy-holders of the County of YORK.

Aſſembled by His Majeſties ſpeciall Summons, at *Heworth Moore*, neer the City of *YORK*, on Friday the third of *June* 1642.



Printed at YORK, by *Robert Barker*,
And now re printed at *London*, for *Alice Norton*.
1642.

HIS MAJESTIES DECLARATION

To the Ministers, Free-holders, Farmers, and substantiall Copy-holders of the County of YORK.

WE would have you to be assured that Wee never intended the least neglect unto you in any former Summons of the Countrey, Our love, as well as Our protection, extending to all Our Subjects; But as you are a great Body, time and conveniency must be observed in your assembling.

That you may know the general reasons of Our being here, you must understand, That when We found it neither safe nor honorable to expose Our Person to the tumultuous and licentious proceedings of many (which to this day are unpunished) who did disorderly approach neere Our Court at

White-hall, Wee truſted this part of Our Dominions chiefly to reſide in; where, as moſt of the Gentry already have, ſo Wee aſſure Our ſelves the reſt of you will give Vs cleer teſtimony of your ſervice and obedience, which Wee will never uſe otherwiſe then for the defence of the true Orthodox Religion profeſſed and ſetled in Queen *Elizabeths* time, and confirmed by the authority of the Statutes of this Realm, the defence of the Laws and fundamental Conſtitutions of this Kingdom (as the juſteſt Meaſure and Rule for Our Prerogative, and your Liberties and Rights) and laſtly, for the preſervation of the peace of this Kingdom.

As for our own Zeal to the Proteſtant Profeſſion, Wee refer all the World to Our daily exerciſe of, and Our Declarations concerning it, & execution of the Laws againſt the Papiſts; ſo likewiſe We cannot but declare Our Self moſt heartily ſorry to find ſuch Separatiſts and Schiſmaticks, who preſume, againſt Law, to foment new Doctrines and Diſciplines to the diſturbance of Church and State.

For the Law, it being the common inheritance of Our people, Wee ſhall never enforce any Prerogative of Ours beyond it, but ſubmit Our Selfe,

Selfe to it, and give you, and all Our Subjects the fulleſt latitude of it, both for the liberty of your perſons, and the propriety of your eſtates. And for an inviolable confidence and aſſurance hereof, as We take God (the Searcher of all hearts) to witneſſe Our reall intention herein, ſo We ſhall no longer deſire you to ſtand for the defence of Our Perſon, Honour, and juſt Prerogatives, then We ſhall maintaine the Lawes of the Land, the liberty of your perſons, and the propriety of your Goods.

And for the cleere underſtanding of Our Reſolutions to maintaine Peace, We may have the confidence and happineſſe to referre (againſt all malignity whatſoever) to Our former ſixteene yeeres Reigne; (too long to diſſemble Our Nature) if in all this time We never cauſed the effuſion of one drop of blood, it muſt needs bee thought, that in Our riper judgement in Government, We ſhould never open ſuch Iſſues as might drown Vs and Our Poſterity in them: But wee are ſure to have no enemies, but in the defence of the true Proteſtant Profeſſion, the Right of the eſtabliſhed Lawes, and for the preſervation of the peace: and certainely all theſe muſt bee all yours, as well as Our enemies.

And to the end that this present Posture where-in We meet, should not affright you, with the distempers of the times, the Example of the two Houses having made Vs prepare for a Guard to Vs and Our Childrens Persons, We wish you to looke into the Composition and Constitution of it, and you will finde it so far from the face or feare of War, that it serves to secure you, as well as Vs, from it: For Our Choice is of the prime Gentry, and of one Regiment of Our Trained Bands, which cannot be thought to oppresse the Countrey (being their owne) nor warre with themselves. And we further assure you, We never intended to use Forreigners or disaffected in Religion: and that you may fully assure your selves of Our sole dependancy upon the love and service of Our own people, to live and die with them, We have Armed these Our Subjects, which had been most irrationall, if We had ever intended to have used Strangers. And further, you may perceive that We receive none, but such as stand cleere in Loyalty and Religion, for which reason We have caused the Oaths of Alleagence and Supremacy to be given them. Likewise, to prevent any distempers at home, We have, and shall put the Trained Bands of all this Our Kingdome under the Command of persons of honour, con-

confidence, and affection to their Country; ſtraitly charging, upon their Allegiance, no Officer to accept any command in them, nor Souldiers to obey any ſave ſuch as are authorized by Vs. And for the prevention of any innovated power over you, you ſhall have Vs here to govern you, and the Souldiery to protect you in peace, and to releiſe you againſt all oppreſſions, for that, as We have told you before, muſt ariſe from ſome great violation (which We hope God will prevent) and not from this preparation of our Subjects. Therefore let none of you bee affrighted with vaine feares; if ſuch a Warre ſhould follow, it followes the Authors home to their own doores: and ſuch (by the confidence of Our Perſon with you) We aſſure Our Selfe you are not.

Here We had left you to your fidelity and duty, had not ſome malicious inſolence in Our former meetings ſent forth moſt preſumptuous Summons, deceiving Our People, and preſuming upon Our Royall Authority; and theſe preſent themſelves as great Defenders of Religion, Peace, and Liberty; whereas they become infectious and contagious to the people, ſeducing them into vaine fancies and deluſions, as may appeare by their Warrants which wee could trace to ſome Pulpits, as We are credibly informed: And you

ſee it were juſt in Vs, to puniſh theſe as Authors of ſedition, but that it would bee too great a favour, for it would honour them with the Title of Martyrdome, for Gods cauſe, as they vainly pretend: But you may now ſee from whence this Spirit comes, that would make Vs to bee in the Act of deſtruction of Religion, Our Perſon a diſturber of the Peace, and ready to introduce Slavery. Theſe here are all the forreigne Forces We have, or ever ſhall intend to have, to act theſe great deſignes, notwithſtanding the vaine feares hitherto imagined. So that you ſee it his high time that theſe fancies were diſperſed and driven away, that We might be repaired in Honour and Intereſt, and you enjoy the bleſſing of Peace and Happineſſe; the advancement whereof ſhall bee Our ſtudy and comfort: and therefore wee ſhall (when you ſhall think it a convenient time) eaſe you in the number of the Trained Bands: And for your Billet-Money, it had bin long ſince paid, but that no part of the Subſidies (which we paſſed for that purpoſe) came to Our hands, and We ſhall not be wanting in any thing that lyeth in Vs for the full ſatisfaction thereof: And ſhall make Our Grace and Bounty to you anſwerable to your beſt fidelity and loyalty, as occaſion ſhall be offered to Vs. *FINIS.*

Author
eat a fa.
he Title
vainly
nce this
ee in the
on a di.
ce Sla.
ces We
these
feares
s high
driven
ur and
ce and
ll bee
ſhall
) eaſe
And
paid,
paſ.
We
h in
ſhall
able
ſhall

28

TWO PETITIONS OF THE COUNTY OF YORKE.

K.

The one Presented to the Kings most Excellent Maiesty, at Yorke the 3d. of June, 1642.

The other to the Lords and Commons in Parliament Assembled.

With the Additionals thereunto annexed.

Die Lunæ Iunc 6. 1642.

Ordered by the Lords assembled in Parliament, that these two Petitions, together with the additions, be forthwith Printed and Published.

John Browne, *Cler. Parliamentor.*

Printed for Ioseph Hunscott, and Iohn Wright. 1642.

TWO PETITIONS OF THE COUNTY OF YORKE.

The one Presented to the King's most Excellent Majesty, at Yorke the 3d. of July 1642.

The other to the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled.

With the Additionals thereunto annexed.

Die Lunæ 3. 1642.

Ordered by the Lords assembled in Parliament, that these two Petitions, together with the Additionals, be Printed and Published.

John Browne, Cler. Parliamentor.

Printed for Joseph Hunscott and John Wright. 1642.

To

THE KINGS most Excellent MAIESTY

The Humble Petition of the Gentry, Miniſters, Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of the County of Yorke,

SHEWETH,

THat this particular County (moſt affectionate to your Majeſties ſervice) hath welnigh for three yeares laſt paſt beene the ſtage whereon the tragicall miſeries (which neceſſarily accompany and aſſociate Warre and Armies) have beene repreſented and acted, whereby the generall wealth and plenty of this

County is exhausted and brought very low; which weight of miseries are sensibly become much more heavy, by reason of your Majesties distance in residence, and difference in Councels from your great Councell the Parliament, begetting great distempers and distractions throughout the Kingdome, and have especially amongst us produced factions and divisions; drawing to these parts great nũbers of discontented persons, that may too justly be feared, doe affect the publike ruine for their private advantage. All which evils are daily fomented & grown more formidable by your Majesties drawing together (as we conceive, not according to law) many Companies of the Trained Band and others, both horse and foot, of this County, and retaining multitudes of Commanders and Cavaleeres from other parts, and by the daily resort of the Recusants and persons disaffected in Religion to your Majesties Court at *York*; and by the great preparations of Armes and other warlike provisions, which begets in us feares of wars, to the great terror and amazement of us your Majesties peaceable subjects, and the great decay of all commerce and industrious courses for the wealth and prosperity of the Country, specially of clothing, which is the maine substitance of this County, and is since your Majesties residence with us, and the following distraction thereupon suddenly obstructed, insomuch that many thousand families who are of, and have their livelihood by the Trade of Cloathing, are at the point of utter

undoing; which inevitably will prove to be of dangerous consequence, and will be the inlet to our approaching and unavoydable ruine, unlesse your Majestie please graciously to give redresse, by removing the causes which produce these miserable effects: it being too true, that very many in these, and other parts of the Kingdome, doe wholy withdraw themselves from their former commerce and dealing, and others, both Merchants and Chapmen, doe now generally refuse to make payments for goods long since sould and delivered, alledging, that others refuse to pay them for any commoditie formerly sould, till the feares and distractions of the Land be settled, which if not suddenly prevented, will forthwith overturne all such wayes of advantage and comfort, as have formerly made this Kingdome (and this County in particular) prosperous and happy.

We doe therefore in all humility and duty, in the sence of our present deplorable condition, beseech your Majesty to pardon us, if we importune your Majesty more then others, since we have endured and are in hazard more then any; and that from these apprehensions we may offer to your Majesty our earnest Petitions for redresse, and prevention of these evills, daily threatning danger to your Majesty, and destruction to us, which we conceive is impossible any other way to be effected, then by your Majesties entertaining a right understanding betwixt your self & Parliament, and affording your gracious eare and consent to such Councells

and propoſitions, as ſhall be tendred by them to your Majeſty, for the honour and greatneſſe of your Majeſty and Poſterity, and the good of this Church and Kingdome; and by your Majeſties declining all other Counſells whatſoever, and uniting your confidence to your Parliament: And that your Majeſty would in no way thinke fit to put us upon that rocke of dividing the duty we owe to your Majeſty, your Parliament, and the whole Kingdome, (to which we are ſo deeply ingaged by our Proteſtation, which your Majeſty (to our knowledge) never diſſented from, nor declared againſt) and that whilſt your Majeſty expects our performance in one part thereof, we may not (being equally engaged) impeach at all or in the leaſt degree, goe leſſe then our duty in the other, which (we ſtand reſolved of) by no meanes either of feare or favour to be drawne to doe. And that your Majeſty would take into conſideration, that your Parliament being the ſupreame Iudicatorie of your Kingdome, the very eſſence thereof muſt of very neceſſity be deſtroyed, if their Counſells and determinations be ſubjected to alteration, or reverſall by the Counſells, or opinions of any private perſons, how learned or judicious ſoever, & ſeeing your Majeſty hath moſt graciouſly paſſed an Act that this Parliament ſhall not be diſſolved, nor adjourned, without conſent of your Majeſty, and both Houſes: Wee doe humbly beſeech your Majeſty, to take into your gracious and provident thoughts that nothing may be done tending thereunto and that the Lords and great Officers now

called

called hither by your Majesties Command, may speedily returne to the High Court of Parliament, whereby it may be evident to the world, that your Majesty intends not to decline the Law so inacted, and that since your Majesty hath graciously declared your confidence in the affections of this Countie, your Majesty would not thinke it fit an extraordinary Guard should be raised thereout, and the Cavaliers, and others of that quality still continued about your Majesty (as men most usefull, and as if kept for some designe) they not having (for ought we know) either interest in, or affections to the publike good, their language and behaviour speaking nothing but division, and war, and their advantage consisting in that which is most destructive to others.

And lastly, that since your Majesty hath called in this County to attend your Majesty this day, your Petitioners doe most humbly supplicate that none either Cavaliers, or others (who in truth have not present fortunes in this County) may be admitted into any meeting this day, concerning the publike businesse there to be treated of, or hereafter not any present vote or consultation when any further meeting may be, to prepare and consider of some fit answer to what your Majesty shall propound, wee humbly conceiving it neither just nor equall (but a thing to be protested against) that any whosoever should be thrust upon us, as men of this County, that are not either by their fortune or residence any part of us.

And

And now your Petitioners doe most heartily pray, that the God of Heaven, in whose hands are the hearts of Kings, would this day incline your Majesties heart, seriously to consider these present and imminent miseries that this your Kingdome lyes under, in the peace whereof (visibly under God) consists the preservation of the Protestant Religion the redemption of our Brethren in Ireland, and the establishing of that Kingdome to your Maiesty and posterity, from those desperate and unparaleld Rebels, that so your Maiesty might graciously grant these your Petitioners humble desires which (whatsoever will be said to the contrary) your Petitioners are well assured, would abundantly redound to the Glory of God, the honour and safety of your Maiesty, the good of your posterity, and the onely probable meanes under God, with peace and plenty, to make this your Kingdome happy, besides the happy acquisition of your Peoples hearts, the greatest treasure of Princes, all which will gloriously represent your Maiesties lively portraiture, of him who is the fountaine of Wisedome and piety, to whom we shall ever pray for your Maiesties long and prosperous Reigne.

To

To the right Honourable, the Lords and Commons in the High Court of *Parliament* assembled.

The Humble Petition of the Gentrie, Ministers, Free-holders, and other Inhabitants of the County of York, *assembled there at His Majesties Command, the third of* June, 1642.

WE being resolved humbly to petition His Majesty for the redresse of those grievances which wee now lye under, did desire to have met in the Castle-yard at *Yorke*, wee conceiving it the fittest place to consider of such publike affaires as concerned the County, which we were not onely denyed of, but charge was given to the Officer there, that wee should

not have admittance; and when we assembled upon the place appoynted by his Majesty, and did acquaint the County there met with the forme of a Petition, the last whereof they formerly approved of, and that upon the reading thereof, generally consented to, and desired the same should be presented to his Majesty, we were violently interrupted by the Earle of *Linsey*, who with a great Troop attending him, in an imperious way, snatched out of a Gentlemans hand of good quality, a Coppy of the fore-named Petition, which at the desire of the County he was reading to them, and some of his Lordships company laid hold of his Bridle and Cloake, hailing him in great fury, and sayd you are a company of trayterous Rogues and Villaines, and often lifted up his Cane, as if he would have struck him. And also a Knight of this County was affronted by the Lord *Savile*, upon his reading the draught of a Petition to himselfe, upon the place aforesayd, the day above; First, his Lordship told him it was a *Pamphlet*, which he denyed, thereupon the Lord *Savile* demanded it of him, which he refusing to deliver, his Lordship layd hands upon his Sword, and almost pluckt him from his Horse; upon which, the said Knight fearing some mischiefe would bee done him, delivered the same: And then the said Lord *Savile* told him, he laboured to sow seeds of Sedition, and if he would fight, there should be fighting enough, and many of the said Lord *Savile's* company held up their Canes at him, and one of them sayd; hold your prating, it were good to Cane you: Which provocations, had not the people beene peaceably enclyned, might have produced bloody effects. Notwithstanding all which, and divers other insufferable Iniuries, so confident were we of his

Maiesties

Maieſties former profeſſions, never to refuſe any *Petition* preſented by his people to him in an humble way, that we deſiſted not to wait our beſt opportunity, to preſent the ſaid *Petition* to his Maieſty: (A Coppy whereof we here humbly preſent unto your grave conſiderations, which his Maieſty notwithſtanding pleaſed not to accept of.

We therefore humbly deſire theſe Honourable Houſes well to weigh theſe particulars, and to take ſuch courſe therein as may tend to the preſervation of our Liberties, and the peace of the Kingdome. And that you would pleaſe to addreſſe your ſelves to His Maieſty on our behalfe, that through your wiſedomes our Deſires may finde better acceptation with his Maieſty.

And we ſhall heartily pray, &c.

Munday

Monday the 6. of June, 1642. Printed

THe Lords and Commons observing not only the *wisedome*, but the *affections* of the *County of Yorke* expressed in these *Petitions*, and likewise that they cannot bee discouraged from their constant *fidelity* to the *Lawes* and *Government* of this *Kingdome*, which have their *Life* and being from the *Parliament*, have thought it fit to *declare* their good acceptations of their affections, assuring them that they will *interest* themselves in this Their Demaunds, which tends to the *honour* and *safety* of his Majesty, the peace of his Kingdome, and may prove an effectuall meanes to keepe us from the desperate mischiefes those *Lords* that opposed this *Petition* would have brought this Kingdome into.

FINIS.

A

from

Hou

Like

I am

A

R

&

C

&

T

preig
wha
dera
mos
g of
Pe-
dif-
the
hich
r,
ac-
em
and
ing-
s to
hose
have

A Copie of a Letter ſent from the Committee at *Lincoln*, to the Houſe of Commons, directed to the Speaker of the ſaid Houſe, and ſubſcribed with the names of the ſaid Committee.

Die Sabbati 4. Junii. 1642.

Likewiſe an Order from both Houſes of Parliament, concerning the Ordering of the *Militia*, directed to the Deputy Lievtenants of the reſpective Countries throughout all *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*.

Ordered that this be Printed and Publiſhed.

Hen. Elſinge, Cler Parl. D. Com.

Alſo Exceeding Joyfull Newes from *Yorke*.

With the

RESOLVTION

Of the Proteſtant Gentry and Commonalty of

CHESHIRE,

Concerning their Petition lately preſented to the Kings Majeſty at *Yorke*.

London, Printed for *J. Horton*, 1642. *June* 6.

Die Sabbati 4. Junij. 1642.

IT is this day Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the Deputy-Lievtenants of the severall and respective Counties within the Kingdome of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, that are not Members of the House of Commons, be hereby required and enjoyned to be present at the dayes, and places which are, or shall hereafter be appointed by the Lord Lievtenants, or their Deputies, for the Training, Mustering, and Exercising of the Inhabitants of the said Counties, according to the authority given unto them by an Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament. And it is further Ordered, That all Deputy-Lievtenants, aswell those that are Members of the House of Commons, as others, shall give such dispatch, by preparing of Warrants, Commissions, or Letters, and subscribing of the same as the service shall require; And that such as shall refuse, or neglect so to doe, that their Names be certified unto us by their fellow-Deputies, or any one of them that shall or doe performe the said Service.

And it is further declared, that it is the intention of both Houses, for the better incouragement of so good a Worke, so much conducing to the safety of his Majesties person and Kingdomes that some of their Members at the times and places appointed, or to be appointed for the execution of the said Ordinance, shall be sent down to give their Personall attendance upon the said Service.

Ordered to be printed.

Hen. Elsinge Cler. Parl.

The

The Reſolution of the Proteſtant Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheſhire.*

SUch have beene the feares and diſtractions of the County of Cheſter, by reaſon of the innumerable and indeed unſufferable aſſemblies and tumultuous meetings of the Papiſts, and others that are Newtralls, or as we may terme them, lukewarme both in Loyalty and Religion, that the Gentry and Commonalty of the Proteſtant Party were conſtrayned to draw themſelves to a head, and ſet downe their Reſolution, proteſting to to performe theſe two particulars.

Firſt they reſolved to be Loyall to his Maieſty, according to their Petition

lately presented to his Maiesty at *York*, by the Gentry and Commonalty of of the said County.

Secondly, they resolved to be obedient to the Parliamen.

Withall desiring that all true hearted Protestants, that desire to expresse themselves Loyall Subjects to his Maiesty, and obedient Servants to the Parliament, would with unite consent take the same Resolution.

The maner and Forme followeth in as true and as exact a manner as could be gathered by one that was a spectator when the Oath was taken, and Resolution declared to the high Sheriffe of the said County.

First they resolved and sollemnely Protestest to declare themselves true and loyall Subiects to his Sacred Maiesty, and to his heires forever.

Next

Next to maintaine and to defend the Proteſtant profeſſion in all points whatſoever, agreeable to the Church of *England*, againſt all Sects and Schiſmes, againſt all Papiſts, Donatiſts, Arminians, and all other Hipocriticall Doctrines whatſoeves, alſo to maintaine the iuſt Prerogative of his Maieſties Regall Authority, againſt all oppoſers whatſoever.

Secondly, they Conſtantly and with a ioynt conſent reſolved to maintaine and defend the high Court of Parliament, and according to their bounden Dutie to acknowledge them (next to God, and his Maieſty) the cheife Authors of their preſent ſecurity, and the onely meanes of their happy continuance, and future preſervation, declaring their Councels to be Religious, their Commands Lawfull, and their Actions Loyall, withall promiſing and proteſting obedience to their Com-

mands, and to those appointed by them to have Command, and to be Governours of the *Militia*.

This is the Resolution of the Protestant Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheshire* and this ought to be the resolution of all the Protteſtants in the Kingdome, seeing that we have so many unknown Enemies, so many *Absoloms* which dayly rebell against his Maiesty, seeing we have so many disturbers, so many *Arons* lifting up the golden Calfe of Idolatry so many deceivers sowing teares amoug the Corne, so many *Goliah's* blaspheming the Lord of Hosts, plotting the destruction of Gods annointed, we had need to have some *Davids*, to quell their swelling and ore daring Pride, we have need of some true hearted Protestants, to defend the Protestant Religion, seeing we have so many Papists, so many wolves in Sheeps clothing, so many destroyers, so many private conspirators,

tors, that dayly conſpire the downfall of the Goſpell.

Wherefore let all thoſe that would be eſteemed either the zealous Servants of God, or the Loyall Subiects of their gratious Soveraigne and obedient Servants to the high Court of Parliament, let them I ſay take up the reſolution of the Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheſhire* and with them cry, long live King *Charles*, and God preſerve the Parliament.

The Copy of a Lerter ſent from the *Committee* at *Lincoln*, to the Houſe of Commons, directed to the Speaker of the ſaid Houſe, and ſubſcribed with the names of the ſaid Committee,

SIR,

SUch is our earneſt deſire, to manifeſt our obedience to the Commands of both Houſes, That we cannot omit any opportunity to adverriſe you of our firſt dayes proceeding, and ſucceſſe therein. The Lord *Francis Willoughby* appointed by the Ordinance of Parliament, to be Lord Lievtenant of this County, had by his Warrant, ſummoned the chiefe Conſtables to attend him yeſterday, the laſt of *May*, in this place, to give him an account concerning the Armes of the *Trained Bands* and Ammunition, within their ſeverall hundreds, and Wapentakes, which ſervice accordingly they performed with all readineſſe and alacrity, even beyond our expectations; there being the fulleſt apparance of them that we have obſerved upon any occaſion heretofore, ſo as about fourſcore in this great County, not above two or three of them were abſent; Neither did the Kings Proclamation (publiſhed

lished of purpose as wee conceive, throughout the County, and which some had officiously fixed upon the Gates of the Inne where we met;) nor this inclosed Letter from his Maiesty sent to the old, (but as we heare now established Deputy Lieutenants, under the Earle of *Lindsey*, who likewise hath a Commission under the Broad Seale, for the Lieutenancie of *Lincolnshire*, as we are informed, any whit deterre, or hinder them.

Wee have all readydelivered forth Warrants to those head Constables for Musters to be held (for the more conveniency) in severall places of this County; at each of which, God willing) wee all of us intend to be assistant; the rather because wee understand that our presence heere doth not a little revive the Spirits of all honest and well affected persons in this County,; Whose forward good examples will (we doubt not) be a meanes to draw the rest to a more ready conformity,. In which hopes we are further incouraged by this dayes tryall in the City, finding, besides the Trained Bands thereof, a like number of Volunteers well and compleatly Armed, who are ready to make tender of their Service, for the defence of his Maieties Person, the Parliament, and the Kingdome, according to their late Protestation. These are our first beginings in your Service, which we humbly submit unto you, and so remaine,

Your affectionate Friends and Servants,

Lincoln, 1 *Iunij*. 1642.

W. Armyne, Edw. Ayscough, Tho. Hatcher, Christo. Wray, Anth. Irby, Ioh. Brownlow.

Ordered by the house of Commons, that this be forthwith printed

BRITISH MUSEUM

R E

Of the

C

Conce

Wh
his

With
and

And
op
m

Lo

THE RESOLVTION

Of the Proteſtant Gentry and Commonalty of

CHESHIRE

Concerning their Petition lately preſented to the Kings Majeſty at *Yorke*.

Wherein is declared their Loyalty to his Sacred Majeſtie, and due obedience to the Honourable Houſes of Parliament.

With all their Proteſtation to ſpend their Lives and Eſtates to defend His Sacred Majeſty from all dangers, either Forteigne or Domeſticke.

And alſo to defend the Parliament againſt all oppoſers, declaring their great confidence, that their Councels and Determinations tend to the advancement of his Majeſties Honour and the preſervation of all his Loving Subjects

London, Printed for *J. Horton*, 1642. *June* 6.

The Reſolution of the Proteſtant Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheſhire*.

SUch have beene the feares and diſtractions of the County of Cheſter, by reaſon of the innumerable and indeed unſufferable aſſemblies and tumultuous meetings of the Papiſts, and others that are Newtralls, or as we may terme them, lukewarme both in Loyalty and Religion, that the Gentry and Commonalty of the Proteſtant Party were conſtrayned to draw themſelves to a head, and ſet downe their Reſolution, proteſting to to performe theſe two particulars.

Firſt they reſolved to be Loyall to his Maieſty, according to their Petition

lately presented to his Majesty at York, by the Gentry and Commonalty of of the said County.

Secondly, they resolved to be obedient to the Parliament.

Withall desiring that all true hearted Protestants, that desire to expresse themselves Loyall Subjects to his Majesty, and obedient Servants to the Parliament, would with unite consent take the same Resolution.

The maner and Forme followeth in as true and as exact a manner as could be gathered by one that was a spectator when the Oath was taken, and Resolution declared to the high Sheriffe of the said County.

First they resolved and sollemnely Protestest to declare themselves true and loyall Subiects to his Sacred Majesty, and to his heires forever.

Next

Next to maintaine and to defend the Protestant profession in all points whatsoever, agreeable to the Church of *England*, against all Sects and Schismes, against all Papists, Donatists, Arminians, and all other Hipocriticall Doctrines whatsoeves, allso to maintaine the iust Prerogative of his Maiesties Regall Authority, against all opposers whatsoever.

Secondly, they Constantly and with a ioynt consent resolved to maintaine and defend the high Court of Parliament, and according to their bounden Dutie to acknowledge them (next to God, and his Maiesty) the cheife Authors of their present security, and the onely meanes of their happy continuance, and future preservation, declaring their Councels to be Religious, their Commands Lawfull, and their Actions Loyall, withall promising and protesting obedience to their Com-

mands, and to those appointed by by them to have Command, and to be Governours of the *Militia*.

This is the Resolution of the Protestant Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheshire* and this ought to be the resolution of all the Protestants in the Kingdome, seeing that we have so many unknown Enemies, so many *Absoloms* which dayly rebell against his Majesty, seeing we have so many disturbers, so many *Arons* lifting up the golden Calfe of Idolatry so many deceivers sowing teares among the Corne, so many *Ochabs* blaspheming the Lord of Hosts, plotting the destruction of Gods annointed, we had need to have some *Davids*, to quell their swelling and ore daring Pride, we have need of some true hearted Protestants, to defend the Protestant Religion, seeing we have so many Papists, so many wolves in Sheeps clothing, so many destroyers, so many private conspira-

 tors,

tors, that dayly conſpire the downfall of the Goſpell.

Wherefore let all thoſe that would be eſteemed either the zealous Servants of God, or the Loyall Subiects of their gratious Soveraigne and obedient Servants to the high Court of Parliament, let them I ſay take up the reſolution of the Gentry and Commonalty of *Cheſhire* and with them cry, long live King *Charles*, and God preſerve the Parliament.

FINIS.

31

A DECLARATION OF THE LORDS AND COMMONS IN PARLIAMENT,

Concerning his Majesties Proclamation of May 27, 1642.

With the Statute of the 7. *Edw.* 1.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons, that this be forth-with Printed.

John Brown, *Cler. Parliament.*

London, Printed by *A. Norton* for *Edward Husbands*, and are to be sold next doore to the Kings Head in Fleet-street, *June* 8, 1642.

A
DECLARATION
OF
THE LORDS
AND
COMMONS
IN
PARLIAMENT.

A Declaration of the Lords and Commons in Parliament concerning his Majesties Proclamation, *May* 27. 1642

THe Lords and Commons having perused his Majesties Proclamation forbidding all his Majesties subjects belonging to the Trained-Bands or Militia of this Kingdome, to rise march, muster, or exercise by vertue of any order or ordinance of one or both Houses of Parliament without consent or warrant from his Majestie upon paine of punishment according to the Lawes;

Do thereupon declare, that neither the Statute 7. *Ed.* the first therein vouched, nor any other Law of this kingdome doth restrayne or make void the Ordinance agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament, for the ordering and disposing the Militia of the Kingdome in this time of extreame and imminent danger, nor expose his Majesties subjects to any punishment for obeying the same: Notwithstanding that his Majesty hath refused to give his consent to that ordinance, but ought to be obeyed by the fundamentall Lawes of this Kingdome.

The Declaration of 7. *Ed.* 1: quoted in his Majesties Proclamation runneth thus, The King to the Justices of his Bench sendeth greeting: Whereas of late before certaine persons deputed to treate upon sundry Debates had be-

tweene us and certaine great men of our Realme, amongst other things, it was accorded that in our next Parliament after provision shall be made by us, and the common assent of the Prelates, Earles and Barons, that in all Parliaments Treaties and other Assemblies which should be made in the Realme of *England* for ever, that every man shall come without all force and Armour, well and peaceable to the honour of Us, and the peace of Us and our Realme, and now in our next Parliament at *Westminster* after the said Treaties the Prelates, Earles, Barons, and the Comunalty of our Realme there assembled to take advise of this busines have said that to us belongeth, and our part is through our Royall Seigniory straightly to defend force of Armour, and all other force against Our peace at all times, when it shall please us, and to punish them which shall doe contrary according to our Lawes and usuages of our Realme. And hereuuto they are bound to ayde us as their Soveraigne Lord at all seasons when need shall bee. Wee Command you that you cause these things to be read afore you in the said Bench, and there to be inrolled. Given at *Westminster* the 30. day of *October*.

The occasion of this Declaration was for the Restraint of Armed men from comming to the Parliament to disturbe the peace of it, and is very improperly alledged for the maintenance of such Levies as are now raised against the parliament the title of the Statute being thus to all parliaments and Treatises, every man shall come without force and Armes so that the Question is not whither it belong to the King or no, to restraine such force, but if the King shall refuse to discharge that dutie and trust whither there is not a power, in the two Houses to provide for the safetie of the parliament, & peace of the Kingdom, which is

the

the end for which the Ordinance concerning the Militia was made, and being agreeable to the ſcope and purpoſe of the Law cannot in reaſon be adjudged to be contrary to it, for although the Law doe affirme it to bee in the King, yet it doth not exclude thoſe in whom the Law hath placed a power for that purpoſe, as in the Courts of Juſtice, that Sheriffs and other Officers and Miniſters of thoſe Courts, and as their power is derived from the King by his patents, yet cannot it, nor be reſtrained by his Majeſties Command, by his great Seale or otherwiſe, much leſſe can the power of parliament be concluded by his Majeſties Command, becauſe the Authority thereof is of a higher and more eminent nature then any of thoſe Courts.

It is acknowledged that the King is the fountain of Juſtice and protection, but the Acts of Juſtice and protection are not exerciſed in his owne perſon, nor depend upon his pleaſure, but by his Courts, and by his Miniſters who muſt doe their duty therein, though the King in his owne perſon ſhould forbid them, and therefore if judgements ſhould be given by them againſt the Kings will and perſonall Command, yet are they the Kings Judgements.

The high Court of Parliment is not onely a Court of Judicature enabled by the Laws to adjudge and determine the Rights and Liberties of the Kingdome, againſt ſuch Patents, and Grants of his Majeſty, as are prejudiciall thereunto, although ſtrengthened both by his perſonall commands, and by his proclamation under the great Seal, but it is likewiſe a Councell to provide for the neceſſity, to prevent the imminent dangers, and preſerve the publike peace and ſafety of the Kingdome, and to declare the Kings pleaſure in thoſe things as are requiſite thereunto, and what they do herein hath the ſtamp of Royall authority, although his

Ma-

Majesty seduced by evill Councell, doe in his owne person oppose or interrupt the same, for the Kings Supream power and Royall pleasure is exercised and declared in this high Court of Law and Councell after a more eminent and obligatory manner, then it can be any personall act or resolution of his own.

Seeing therefore the Lords and Commons which are his Majesties greatest and highest Councell have ordained that for the present and necessary defence of the Realme, the Trained Bands and *Militia* of this Kingdome, should be ordred according to that Ordinance, and that the Towne of *Hull* should be committed to the custody of Sir *John Hotham* to be preserved from the attempts of papists, and other malignant persons, who thereby might put the Kingdome into a combustion which is so far from being a force against the Kings peace, that it is necessary for the keeping and securing thereof, and for that end alone is intended, and all his Majesties loving Subjects, aswell by the Law, as by other Lawes are bound to be obedient thereunto, and what they doe therein, is according to that Law to bee interpreted to be done in aide of the King in discharge of that trust which he is tyed to performe; And it is so farre from being lyable to punishment, that if they should refuse to doe it, or bee perswaded by any Commission or Command of his Majestie to doe the contrary, they might justly bee punisht for the same according to the Lawes and usages of the Realm, for the King by his Soveraignty is not inabled to destroy his people, but to protect and defend them; And the high Court of Parliament, and all other his Majesties Officers & ministers ought to be subservent to that power and authority which Law hath placed in his Majesty to that purpose, though he himselfe in his owne person should not like the same.

Where-

Wherefore the Lords and Commons doe declare the ſaid Proclamation to be voide in Law, and of none effect, For that by the Conſtitution and policy of this Kingdome, the King by His Proclamation, cannot declare the Law contrary to the Judgement, and Reſolution of any of the inferiour Courts of Juſtice, much leſſe againſt the high Court of Parliament; for if it were admitted, That the King by his Proclamation may declare a Law, thereby His Proclamations will in effect become Lawes, which would turne to the ſubverting of the Law of the Land, and the Rights, and Liberties of the Subjects.

And the Lords and Commons doe require and Command all Conſtables, petty Conſtables, and all other his Majeſties Officers and Subjects whatſoever, to muſter, levie, raiſe, march and exerciſe, or to ſummon, or warne any upon Warrant from the Lievtenants, Deputie Lievtenants, Captaines, or other Officers of the Trained Bands, and all others according to the ſaid Ordinance of both Houſes, and ſhall not preſume to Muſter, levy, raiſe, march or exerciſe by vertue of any Commiſſion or other authority whatſoever, as they will Anſwer the Contrary at their perill. And in their ſo doing, they doe further declare, that they ſhall be protected by the power and authority of both Houſes of Parliament, and that whoſoever ſhall oppoſe, queſtion or hinder them in the execution of the ſaid Ordinance, ſhall be proceeded againſt as violaters of the Lawes, and diſturbers of the peace of the Kingdome.

FINIS.

Wherefore the Lords and Commons do declare, &c.

FINIS.

32

THE WELCH-MENS PRAVE RESOLUTION:

IN DEFENCE OF

Her KING, Her PRITISH Parliament, and Her Country, againſt te malignant party.

Subſcribed by *Shon, ap William, ap Richard, ap Thomas, ap Meredith, ap Evans, ap Loyd, ap Price, ap Hugh, ap Rowland, ap Powel, ap Shinkin, ap Shones.*

LONDON,
Printed for *J. Harriſon*, June 7. 1642.

THE MERCHANT'S PRAYER:

OR, A

PRIVATE

RESOLUTION:

IN DEFENCE OF

HIS KING, HIS PARTY,

And Hot Counsels against

the multitude now

Subscribed by Sir Thomas Abney, Knight, Sir
Knight, Sir Ralph Hawtrey, Knight,
and many other Merchants of Lon-
don.

THE WELCHMENS RESOLUTION.

SInce her toe understand, tat te enemy toe approach and trearen not only to cut her troat cowartly, put also to hinter te procetings of te Pritish Parliament, her tink it high time to look apout her. And tough her coms as fierce as a creat Lyon to her, and look as high as Pawls; yet if her Welch Plood pe once up, by Cods plutter a Nailes her will overlook her foe, like her Welch Mountains, and squeze her proud enemie in te name of Saint *Taffey*.

Werefore since it vas ever regorded, and kanown, tat her Countrymen in aul her perecrinations and ampulations, vas alwaies magnanimous and couragious, and would never kill her enemy, before her had calenged her, and given her notice tereof, and so by consekence her became always valiantly victorious, her toe terefore make kanown her Resolution to te hole Urld.

Tat wereas diverſe ſtrange, and underfull Plots have been couſpired againſt te State, her will venter every trop of ploud her hath in her pody to find out toſe plotters, and by Cod if her find her, her vill cut her in pieces like cauſe bobby, and make her a preakfaſt to te Crowes.

Tat her toe proteſt her love to her King from her hart, and vill kill all toſe, tat are enemies to his Majeſty, yet her is viſe enough to make no Proteſtation tereof, and be voted a Traytor. Her vas wit enough ile warrant her.

Tat tough her vas love her King, yet her could never apide te malignant party. Put py Saint *Taffey* her could never know, wat tis malignant party vas: her tink it is a Welch Engliſh prayſe, for her cou'd never underſtand it in her life. Put becauſe every pody ſpeak of te malignant party, her muſt ſpeak too for company ſake ſomething, terfore her wiſh, tat all factious Round-heads, and te malignant party were hanged both togeter on a Welch Gibbor, tat her King may be troubled no longer with tem; oterwiſe her vill take ſome ſpeedy courſe with tem both.

Her is reſolved to tickle to Iriſh Rogues, and if her continue in Repellion, till her run home and fet her Pill, and her Welch hooke, her vill make all her pones in her pody to quake, like a quotidian Ague, and if her toe not gape to her for mercy as wide as a Pillinſ ate Oyſter-wifes mouth, by Cot her vill ſquize te Rebellious Rogues to ſome purpoſe, unleſſe tey fly like *Finches*, and run away like

like a Young *Suckling* py Cod her will follow her with a huntret Horſe: and if her leave any good Actions behind tem (wich I am confident vill be very few) ten her vill ſend tem to te Red-Pull, and te Fortune, pecauſe tey want good Action. Tat her will fortifie her ſelfe againſt te long-feared Inſurrection in Monmouth, for tere are a multitude of Papiſts in tat Shire, and if her fetch her Pill, and her Welch Hooke, and her two edged pack-ſword, her vill carbonado te Rogues if tey repel: and tey ſhall never pe permitted by any kanown toleration to kill ſo many of her Countrymen by the halfe, as were killed lately in Saint *Shorges* Fields of Horſe and Kine, py the malignant party: For peing Horſe, I conceive tem to pe te malignant party; put if tey hat pin Aſſes, he ſhoult have ſworne ten tey had beene Round-heads.

Tat her is Reſolved to have te Book of Common Prayer in referent ant pious obſervation, and tough ſome turpulent Sceſmaticall and Amſterdamear-pated Coxcombes toe call it Pottage, py her conſent, toſe tat vill eat no Pottage, ſhall eate no meate, woſe ſtomacks are ſo contentious.

Tat her was in preparation a long time, and is now fully reſolved to rayſe an Army againſt her terrible enemy Little-eyes, one of the malignant party, who is a greater eye-ſore unto her, ten Cheapſide-Croſſe is to te Round-heads, who doth not only conſume her Cornes, and te Fruits,

but alſo devoureth her Cauſe-bobby, and roſted Sheeſe, wich makes her Welch plood riſe hot and violent againſt tem: her has terfore fortified her Garriſon againſt her Little-eyed Enemy: and her calenged her enemy once pefore into te open Field; put as ſoon as te Alarum ſounded, her enemy like a very cowart ran away: put now her has taken more deliperate conſultaſtions apout her, and has callet a learned Councell of War; and it was conclutet on, Tat her ſhall encompaſſe her enemy rount, and by Cod her will not ſeave Little-eyes alive, if her can overcome her by ſtrength, or catch her by Policy, wereof her has very much: and let her enemy run, her can run after her, ile warrant her.

Her is Reſolvet to make Warre alſo againſt her oter Enemy Robbin-Runhole, who eat up and root out all her Onions and Leekes, ant ſpoile her Mountaines.

Finally, her has mate an apſolute Reſolution to levy War againſt *Tom Pack-piter*, a little nimble Shentleman with a plack pig, a pox on her for a plout-tirſty Tyrant, one of the malignant party, and a creat enemy to te State of te Poty, her cannot ſleep for tis Rogue pincheth, and ſtingeth ſo terribly, her can neither walk or ſit peaceably; her puniſheth her pack ſo intollerably, ſo tat her cannot be at quiet, poth Night and Day, this *Tom Pack-piter* toth ſo torment her: her is terefore intentet to pring all te Ammunition

of

of Armes againſt her Enemy, put her know her to be a cowars, for her alwares domes behind her, and tare not come before her face; yet ſometimes te Rogue ſhowes her baſe condiſhon, for her can no ſooner turne her pack, but nimble *Tom* vill apuſe her before her face: her is terfore reſolved to curbe in her inſolencies, and if her can catch her, by Cod her vill preake her neck downe from te top of a Mountain.

Teſe are her Countrymens Reſolutions, which being very famous and commendable, her have tought recuſite and neceſſary to declare unto te hole Urld: and withall her has tought is as pertinent to make kanowne, wat her is Reſolved, wat not to be, and wat not to do, as to reſolve, wat to be and wat to doe.

Firſt, her is reſolved to pe no Deputy, for her love to keep her Necke on her ſhoulders petter then ſo.

Item, Tat her vill be no Piſhop, for feare her ſould be ſent to te Tower tirteen togeter, like a Pakers tozen.

Item, Her vill be no Judge, for her kanowes tat ten her ſhould hang all Prowniſts, and ſo conſequently be a Delinquent, put her has wit enough to keep out of te Tower, Loy ye tere now.

Item, Her vill pe no Papiſt, pecauſe her vould not be called te malignant party, or ſuppoſed to pe an Iriſh Repel, or imagined to be a contriver of

te destructive demolishon of te State, or an enemy to te Parliament.

Lastly, her vould pe no Round-head, pecause her vould love her King, and vould not pe (like tem) Enemies to God and te Urld, put lovers of te Flesh, and te Devill, who is newly turn'd Roundhead, with wom her toe leave all tese factious Pretten.

FINIS.

R

T

in

Se

1.

2.

3.

4.

5.

6.

V

A TRUE RELATION OF THE PROCEEDings of the Scots and Engliſh Forces *in the North of Ireland*:

Sent in a Letter to Mr. *Tobias Siedgwicke*, living in London; Relating theſe particulars: *viz.*

1. *Their meeting at* Drumboe *in the County of* Antrem.
2. *The manner of their March towards the* Nury, *with the taking of a Fort neere* Kilwarlin *Woods.*
3. *The taking of the Towne and Caſtle of the* Nury, *and the releaſing of divers Priſoners of note.*
4. *The great Spoile they tooke in thoſe parts, with great terrour to the Rebels, and their flight from thoſe parts.*
5. *Divers Skirmiſhes with the Rebels in Mr.* Cartons *Woods.*
6. *The deſires of the Earle of* Antrem *to be received into the Engliſh Army.*

With divers other things worthy your Obſervation.

London, Printed for *F. Coules*, and *T. Bates*. 1642.

THE COPIE OF A LETTER

Sent from a Gentleman in *Ireland*, to his friend, Mr. *Tobias Siedgwicke*, living in London, *June* 8. 1642.

SIR,

ACcording to my promiſe I ſhall labour briefely to informe you of what hath happened in theſe Northerne parts of *Ireland* ſince my comming over; wherein I ſhall indeavour, not willingly to vary from the truth in the leaſt circumſtance, that you may beleeve what I write without doubting, and may report it without bluſhing.

On Thurſday the 28. of *Aprill* 1600. of the Scottiſh Army, 500. of the Lord Viſcount *Conwayes* Regiment, 500. of Colonell *Chicheſters*, 400. of the Lord of the *Ardees* Forces, and 400. of the Lord *Clandeboyes*, 3. Troopes of Armed Horſe, the Lord *Conwayes*, Colonell *Chicheſters*, and the Lord *Cromwells*, and part of the Lord *Grandiſons*, together with ſome 4 or 5. Troopes of light Horſe, all theſe Forces met together, and encamped at a place called *Drum-Boe*, neere *Belfaſt*, in the County of *Antrem*; Sir *John Clatworty* promiſed to come with 400. men, but he could not get ſo many men to make his Regiment compleate, all theſe Troops made ſome 300. Horſe.

On Friday the 29. of Aprill, this Army marched onwards all together towards the *Nury*, and when they came a little beyond *Liſnegarvy*, they diſcryed a partie of the Rebels Horſe, which ſhewed them at the edge of the Woods of *Kilwarlin*, upon which our Horſe made directly towards them over the fields, the foot marched along the high way; when our Horſe came within twice Musket ſhot of them

them they made a ſtand, in the meane time the foote marching along the high-way, perceived a party of the Rebells in a Fort which they had made at the entrance of *Kilwarlin* woods, which it ſeemes they had made, thinking thereby to blocke up the way; this Fort plaid upon our Foote with their Muskets. Colonell *Chichesters* Regiment being then in the Front he drew out certaine companies, and made them to give fire by rankes upon the Fort, they remained this Skirmiſhing untill our Horſe with much difficultie in regard of the wayes which were blockt up with Trees came into the woods another way, and got betwixt the Fort and the wood, the Rebels ſeeing the Horſe come behind them fled, our horſe being divided into ſeverall parties went ſeverall wayes purſuing of them, one party of our Horſe ſome 40. met with ſome 400. of them, and fought with them, put them to flight, and killed ſome 30. of them, the reſt of our Horſe chaſed them in the woods as farre as they were able to follow them for Thickets and Bogs, ſome of them would atempt to give fire at the Horſe ſtanding behind Trees and Buſhes, but as ſoone as they but offered to make towards them, they durſt not ſtand, but runne away after the Horſe had chaſed them a pretty while, this way a company of the Scottiſh Souldiers came into them, Lieutenant *Dullen* who is Lieutenant to Colonell *Chichesters* Troopes ſpake to thoſe Musketeres to follow the Rogues which were running in the woods where the troopes could not follow them, the moſt of them would not goe, I will not ſay durſt not, they pretended they wanted powder; But afterwards before our faces they ſhot at leaſt 40. ſhots at Randum in the woods; at this Skirmiſh there were in all kild and taken priſoners ſome 80. of the Rebells, wee loſt but one man, who was one of Colonell *Hills* Light Horſe men, and one of the Lord *Cromwells* Troopes had his Horſe kild under him, and ſome two Light Horſe men were ſlightly wounded; this night the Army incamped in the middle of the woods of *Kilwarlin*, which is held to be the place of their ſtrongeſt hold, yet the Rebells had not ſo much Gallantry in them as to give us an Alarum.

The next day being Saturday the 30. of Aprill the Army marched onvard in their way to the *Nury*, through *Dromnore*, which is ſo conſumed with fire, and ruinated, that there was not a houſe left ſtanding except the Church. This night wee incamped at a place hisnpofeight miles of the *Nury* called *Logh Brickland* in the middle of this *Logh* there is an Iland in which were ſome of the Rebels, with

divers Engliſh and Scots which were priſoners with them there, and a great deale of proviſion, there was a houſe upon this Iland, upon which one of our field peeces playd, and we ſhot at them with Muſkets; ſometimes they would ſhoot againe, but hurt none of our men; there came a Bullet through Colonell *Chichesters* hare as he ſtood amongſt his Souldiers, but hurt him not: All that our Army could doe could not make them yeeld, for our ſhot could not come to hurt them in regard that they had digged a Cave under ground where they did remaine; ſo as that it was impoſſible to hurt them with ſhot, as to ſhoot downe the Iland, this night there was a ſtrict watch ſet round about the Iland leaſt the Rogues ſhould ſteale away by night, the next morning being Sunday the firſt of *May*, the Boate which belonged unto the *Lough* being ignorantly left a float by the Rebels by the ſide of the Iland, it became the onely meanes of their ruine, for ſix Hilanders undertooke to ſwim for the Boate to fetch it over, whilſt they were ſwimming, our Army playd ſo hard upon the Iland with Musket ſhot, that not a Rebell durſt peepe out of the Cave: Of theſe ſix Hilanders, two returned not being able to ſwimme over, two ſtriving beyond their ſtrength were drowned, and onely two got over, who ſwimming with their Swords in their hands cut the Boate looſe, and brought it over, which was manned with Muſketeres, which tooke the Iland, releaſt the priſoners, and cut off the Rebels.

After this was done, the Army marched on to the *Nury*, the Horſe rid faſt before, and when they came within ſight of the towne they purſued the Rogues flying out of the towne, and running as faſt as their nimble feet could carry them away; upon this a Troope of Light Horſe were ſent out, which were under the command of Captaine *Winſor*, and cut off about 100. of the Rogues as they fled, the reſt of the Troopes drew neare unto the towne, and making a ſtand on a little hill about a quarter of a mile from the towne, one Maſter *Reading* came riding out of the towne to them, who had beene priſoner with them ever ſince the beginning of this Rebellion, and hee brought us word that the Rogues were all fled out of the towne except ſome of the ancient towne dwellers, and that they willingly yeelded the towne, but that the Caſtle ſtood out ſtill, in which were divers priſoners of the Engliſh, among the reſt Sir *Edward Trevers*, Sir *Charles Poynes* and his ſonne came out to meet us who were taken priſoners at the firſt ſurpriſall of the *Nury*. Colonell *Chrichesters*

Troope

Troope drew nearer the towne and ſtood cloſe by the Church, within Muſket ſhot of the Caſtle untill the foote came up, which was for the ſpace of two houres, when the generall Major came, they ſent away the Troopes to quarter, halfe a mile out of the towne, and ſet a ſtrickt centrey at the townes end that none ſhould come in but thoſe whom he permitted; what was gotten the Horſe got no ſhare of, although they beſt deſerved it, the Lord *Magimeſes* Lady was now in the *Nury*.

The next day being Monday the Generall Major *Mount Roe*, and the Lord *Conway*, and Colonell *Chicheſter* reſolved to come to a parly with the Caſtle, not that they held it any difficultie to take it, but in regard of thoſe priſoners which they had within the Caſtle, leaſt if they had fallen upon it in the ſevereſt way, the Innocent had been deſtroyed with the Guilty. This made the Rogues to ſtand upon their tearmes, and to refuſe many gratious proffers of mercy, and kept them all this day in diſpence, refuſing to yeeld, the next day being Tueſday the third of *May*, Generall *Mount Roe* ſent word unto the Captaine of the Caſtle, that notwithſtanding the priſoners he had of ours with him, if he would not yeeld, ſince there was no remedy, he would blow up the Caſtle, the Captaine of the Caſtle returned him anſwer, that if he blew him up, we would be forced to borrow ſome of his powder; this peremptory anſwer made all to be prepared for to ſet upon the Caſtle, at laſt when the Captaine of the Caſtle ſaw that they were like to goe to it in good earneſt, he yeelded upon quarter for himſelfe and ſome more. After this Caſtle was ſurrendred, they found but halfe a Barrell of Powder, 60. Muskets, and of them not above a dozen fixt; they had two murtherers which they put out onely to make a ſhew, which were found without Chambers, and ſo foule and ruſty that none of them durſt have ſhot them off; ſuch little proofe is commonly in great bragges when they come to the triall, what other things of worth were found in the Caſtle were altogether concealed from the Engliſh, except ſome who had great friends.

On Munday the fift of *May* ten out of every Troope were ſent to *Dundalke* to the Engliſh Army, the next day Sir *Henry Titchborne* came along with them to the *Nury* with a guard of three Troopes of Horſe, and ſtayed ſome three houres at the *Nury* and returned.

The common Souldiers without direction from the Generall Major tooke ſome 18. of the *Iriſh* women of the towne, and ſtript them

naked, and threw them into the River, and drowned them, shooting some in the water; more had suffered so but that some of the common Souldiers were made examples on and punished.

On Thursday the 6. of *May*, the Lord *Conways* Troope, Colonell *Chichesters*, and the Lord *Cromwels* with part of the Lord *Grandisons*, went out towards *Armagh*, and by the way they saw above a thousand of the Rebels which stood in a Bogge, but durst not stirre out to inco unter with our Troopes, nor the Troopes could not come at them for the Bogge, although they faine would have charged them, therefore they returned backe to the *Nury*, thinking to fall upon them the next morning, and bring some foot with them, but they heard the next day, that they were fled, and that Sir *Philem O Neale* was among them. Some of the prisoners that made an escape from them, reported that *Armagh* is burnt, and that the Rogues are fled from thence towards *Chalimount*.

On Friday being the sixt of *May* those of the Rebells that were in the Castle which had not Quarter, and divers of the ill affected *Irish* in the towne were shot to death on the bridge, some three score or more; there was a great Iron Battering peece taken in the *Nury* which was left on an old Turret in the towne, throwne off the Carriages, which I forgot to name before.

On Saturday, the seventh of *May*, they provided to March back again, leaving behinde in Garrison at the *Nury* about 300. men well armed, under the command of Lieutenant Colonell *Sinkcleare*, promising to send him some 500. more from *Carrickfergus*, with all the speede possibly could be made, being some of the rest of Livetenant Collonell *Sinckcleares* Regiment, which came over since the Army went abroad; Generall Major *Mount Roe* left private direction (as I heard) with Livetenant Collonell *Sinkcleare* to banish all the *Irish* out of the towne, as soone as he was gone.

The Army marched home through *Maginneses*, and Mr. *Cartons* Country, and marched in three Divisions, burning all the houses and corne before them, and brought away the spoyle of the countrey before them, and cattle in great abundance, there was much goods left behinde, and provision which they could neither destroy nor carry away, being hid under-ground in the backside of every house, the devision that Collonell *Chichester* commanded, burnt Mr. *Cartons*, and *Ever Maginneses* owne dwelling houses. Sunday at night was such stormy wether, that some thirtie of the souldiers and others

which

which followed the campe perished with meere cold; and no wonder, for it kild some fifteene horses which were found dead the next morning: Colonell *Chichesters* troope marching a pretty space before the Army, tooke divers prisoners, and killed divers of the Rebells upon their March.

On Tuesday the 10. of May, the Army met together and incamped in the middle of Mr. *Cartons* woods, when they came altogether, there were at least 800. baggage horses (as they call them) loaden with the spoile of the Country, and I thinke I speake within compasse if I say 3000. Cowes; but by the way as they came this day through the thickees of Mr. *Cartons* Woods, the Lord *Conwayes* troope, Collonell *Hills*, and Captaine *Matthewes*, and some other troopes of Light-horse; the Rogues shot at them from behinde trees, and killed the Lievetenant to the Lord *Conwayes* troope, Lievetenant *Fishers* Led-horse, and him that led him, and got in betwixt the troopes and the Baggage horses, and cut off some of the men that went along with these horses, and had cut off more, but that Captaine *Trevors* rid backe againe with some of his troope, and relieved them.

On Wednesday, the Army marched through the rest of Mr. *Cartons* woods with all the aforesaid loadon horses and cowes, marching all together, but spreading the foot abroad in the woods, to burn the Cabbins which were built there, and to cleare the woods before them; They found no opposition this day, at night they encamped at Drumboe.

The next day when the Cowes were to be divided, many of them were stollen away into the Ardees, and Clandeboyes the last night, and the goods so sneakt away by the Scots, that the *English* troopes got just nothing, and the English Foote very little, which gave them too just a cause to mutany, in so much as I thinke it will be hard to get them out to march with the Scots againe, who will have both the credit and profit of whatsoever is done or had.

In the absence of the Army, there were six score Musketeres lef to Garrison at *Malone*, which was set upon by the Irish, and the most of it burnt; these valiant Scots set to keep the towne, when it was set upon, fled, and did not so much as face the Rebells, some 800. of the Scots which lay in the Trench some sixe mile of *Carrickfergus*, in the absence of the aforesaid Army, went out to plunder, and being set upon by some horse, and foote of the Rebells, not

much

much above their number, I will not say fled from them, but retreated so fast, as that they were forced to blow up a barrell of powder they had with them, and blew up some eight of their men with it, and as I heare credibly, lost above a hundred Armes, they carry the matter very privately here, but this is truth. The Earle of Antrem is now at Glanarme, a place twelve miles off *Carrickfergus*, and would faine be received into this towne: what Generall *Mount Roe*, and the Lord *Conway* will doe in it, I know not; Generall *Lasly* will be over here within this weeke, as he hath sent word unto Generall Major *Mount Roe*. I have no more to write, but desire to remaine,

Your Humble servant to

Carrick-fergus this 30. of *May*, 1642.

Command,

Roger Pike.

FINIS.

R E
O F
occ
p

In all

By

Print
sold

Digitized by Google

SIXTEENE PROPOSITIONS in Parliament.

35

England Parliament

Touching the manner and forme for Church Government, by Bishops and the Clergie of this Kingdome.

Whereunto is added.

The opinion of the English Doctors and Divines at the Synod at *Dort*, Concerning Episcopacy and Lay-Elders.

Also the Names of 14. Divines more which are Added to the Synod by the House of PARLIAMENT.

With an Order by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, touching the Government of the Church.

Hen. Elsing. Cler. Parl. D. Com.

London, Printed for *I. T.* 1642.

SIXTEEN PROPOSITIONS

in Parliament,

Touching the manner and form for Church Government,

by Bishops and the Clergie of this Kingdome.

With some added

The opinion of the English Divines assembled at Dort,

Concerning Ecclesiasticall and Lay-Elders.

Also the Names of 14. Divines more which are Added to the Synod by the House of PARLIAMENT.

Printed by Order of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, touching the Government of the Church.

Hen. Elsing, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

London, Printed for I. T. 1644.

THE ORDER

For Church-Government

Read in the House of COMMONS. 1642.

Imprimis

EVery severall Shire of England and Wales, to be a severall Circuite or Dioceſſe, for the Eccleſiaſticke Iuriſdiction, excepting Yorke-ſhire which is to be divided into three.

II.

A Conſtant Presbyterie of Twelve choyſe Divines to be ſelected in every Shire or Dioceſſe.

III.

A Conſtant Preſident to bee eſtabliſhed as a Bi-ſhop over this Presbyterie.

IV.

This Biſhop in each Dioceſſe to ordaine, ſuſpend, deprive, degrade, excommunicate by : and with the conſent and aſſiſtance of ſeven Divines of his Pres-byterie then preſent and not otherwiſe.

V.

The times of Ordination throughout the land to

be foure times every yeare, viz. the first of May, the first of August, the first of November, and the first of February.

VI.

Every Bishop constantly to reside within his Diocesse, in some one prime, or chiefe City or Towne within his Diocesse, as in particular.

VII.

Every Bishop to have one speciall particular Congregation, to be chosen out of the most convenient for distance of place, from his chiefe residence, and the Richest in value that may bee had: where he shall duely preach unlesse he be lawfully hindred, and then shall take care that his Cure be well supplyed by another.

VIII.

No Bishop shall remove or be translated from the Bishopricke which he shall first undertake.

IX.

Upon every death, or other avoidance of a Bishop, the King to grant a *Conge d'elire* to the whole Clergie of that Diocesse, and they to present three of the Presbyters aforesaid, and the King to choose and nominate whom he please of them.

X.

The first Presbyters of every shire to bee named by the Parliament, and afterwards upon the death or other avoidance of any Presbyter, the remaining Presbyters to choose another out of the Parish Ministers

Ministers of that shire, and this to bee done within one month next after such death or avoidance.

XI.

No Bishop or Clergie-man to exercise or have any *Temporall Office*, or *secular employment*, but onely, for the present, to hold and keepe the probate of wills, untill the *Parliament* shall otherwise resolve.

XII.

The Bishop once a yeare (at Midsummer) to summon a *Diocesan Synod*, there to heare, and by generall vote, to determine all such matter of scandall in Life and Doctrine among the Clergie-men, as shall be presented unto them.

XIII.

Every three yeares, a *Nationall Synod to be*, which for persons shall consist of all the Bishops in the Land, and of two *Presbiters* to be chosen by the rest out of each *Presbitery*, and of two *Clarkes* to be chosen out of everie Dioceese, by the *Clergie* thereof.

XIV.

This *Nationall Synod* to make and ordaine *Canons* of the *Government* of the *Church*, but they not to bind untill they be confirmed by *Parliament*.

XV.

Every Bishop to have over and above the Benefice aforesaid, a certaine constant Rent allowed

and allotted proportionall to the Dioceſſe wherein he is to Officiate, that is to ſay, every *Presbyter* to have a conſtant yearely profit above his Benefice.

XVI.

As for the Revenue of the Biſhops, Deanes, and Chapters, &c. a ſtrict Survey to be taken of all their rents and profits, and the ſame to be repreſented at the beginning of our next Convention, and in the meane time no Leaſe to be renewed, nor Timber to be felled.

The opinion of the Engliſh Doctors and Divines at the Synod of Dort, concerning Epiſcopacy and Lay-Elders.

WE thought not fit to content our ſelves with warrantable ſilence, but conſulting together what was fit to be done in delivering our opinions. We ioyntly conclude that howſever our Church Diſcipline had not been Synodically taxed, nor theirs avowed, yet it was convenient for us, (who were aſſured in our conſiences that their Presbyteriall Parity, and Laicall Presbytery was repugnant to the Diſcipline eſtabliſhed by the Apoſtles, and retained in out Church to declare our Iudgment.

We therefore profeſſed and declared our vtter diſſent in that point, and further ſhewed that by our Saviour a Parity of Miniſters was never Inſtituted, That Chriſt ordained Twelve Apoſtles, and ſeventy Diſciples; That the Authority of thoſe twelve was above

above the other; That the Church preserved this Order left by our Saviour. And therefore when the extraordinary Authority of the Apostles ceased, yet their ordinary Authority continued in Bishops, who succeeded them who were by the Apostles themselves left in the government of the Church to ordaine Ministers, and to see that they who were so ordained should preach no other Doctrin; That in an inferior degree the Ministers who were governed by Bishops succeeded the 70. Disciples, That this Order hath been maintained in the Church, from the time of the Apostls. And herein we appealed to the Iudgment of Antiquity, or of any learned man now living, if any could speak to the contrary: To this our exception and allegations, not one word was answered by any of the Synodiques either strangers or Provincialls. Moreover, in our Private conversing with the most eminent of the Ministery there, we found divers times (upon occasion of our declaring unto them the Order and manner of our Church Government) that they were more ready to deplore then defend their own estate, and wished rather, then hoped to be made like the flourishing Church of England.

Ita Testamur.

Georgius Caletus. *John Davenant.*
Gualter Balcanquall. *Samuell Ward.*
Thomas Gouge.

The

The Lords added 14. Divines to the Bill ſent to them about the Aſſembly of Divines which were there.

Doctor *Hamond* of *Penhurſt* in *Kent.*
Maſter *Lanes* of Saint *Michaels Queene London.*
Doctor *Marſh* of Saint *Dunſtones* in *Fleetſtreet.*
Maſter *Earle* of *Wiltſhire.*
Maſter *Gibbins* of *Waltham.*
Maſter *Prophet.*
Doctor *Weſtfield* Biſhop of *Briſtoll.*
Maſter *Peirce* of *Northampton.*
Maſter *Hodges* of *Kinſington.*
Maſter *Carter* of *Denton* in *Buckingham ſhire.*
Maſter *Liſter*, Vicar of *Sharly.*
Doctor *Jonas* Prebend of *Windſor.*
Doctor *Story.*

MUSEUM BRITANNICUM

An Order by the Lords and Commons in Parliament touching the Government and Liturgie of the Church.

THe Lords and Commons doe declare, they intend a due and neceſſary reformation of the Government and Liturgie of the Church, and to take away nothing in the one or the other, but what ſhall be evill, and ſubject to juſt offence, or at leaſt unneceſſary and burthenſome, and for the better effecting hereof, ſpeedily to have conſultation with godly and learned Divines, and becauſe this will never of it ſelfe attaine the end ſought therein, they will therefore uſe their utmoſt endeavours to eſtabliſh Learned and Preaching Miniſters, with a good and ſufficient maintenance throughout the whole Kingdome, wherein many darke corners are miſerably deſtitute of the meanes of ſalvation, and many poore Miniſters want neceſſary proviſion.

Hen. Elſyng. Cler. Par. D. C.

FINIS.